

---

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

<https://books.google.com>





UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN  
GENERAL LIBRARY



GALEN C. HARTMAN  
LIBRARY FUND









**THE  
WORKS OF  
JOHN  
WESLEY**



**VOLUME XIII**

**Letters**

**ZONDERVAN PUBLISHING HOUSE  
Grand Rapids      ~      Michigan**

BX

8217

.W513

1958

v.13

This edition of the complete and unabridged  
**THE WORKS OF JOHN WESLEY** is reproduced  
by the photo offset process from the authorized  
edition published by the Wesleyan Conference  
Office in London, England, in 1872.

Lithographed in the United States of America

GL  
 Hartman  
 Sotheman  
 8-13-59 CONTENTS  
 T42-146930  
 added vol —

LETTERS TO VARIOUS PERSONS:

	Page.
<i>Eighteen Letters to Robert Carr Brackenbury, Esq., of Raithby, Lincolnshire</i> . . . . .	1
<i>Twenty Letters to Mr. Zechariah Yewdall</i> . . . . .	10
<i>Sixteen Letters to Miss Bishop</i> . . . . .	17
<i>Four Letters to Mr. John Baxendale, of Wigan</i> . . . . .	39
To — . . . . .	41
<i>Three Letters to Miss Frances Godfrey, of Gainsborough</i>	42
<i>Seven Letters to the Rev. Walter Sellon</i> . . . . .	43
<i>Four Letters to Miss D. Perronet</i> . . . . .	46
<i>Four Letters to Miss J. C. M.</i> . . . . .	48
<i>Twenty-two Letters to Miss Ritchie, afterwards Mrs. Mortimer</i> . . . . .	51
<i>To Mr. Robert Marsden, Sheffield</i> . . . . .	66
<i>To Mr. C. Glascott, Jesus College, Oxon</i> . . . . .	67
<i>To Mr. (afterwards Dr.) John Whitehead</i> . . . . .	67
<i>To Miss C —, Armagh</i> . . . . .	68
<i>To Mrs. Knapp, Worcester</i> . . . . .	69
<i>Seven Letters to the Rev. Freeborn Garrettson, of the Methodist Episcopal Church, in America</i> . . . . .	69
<i>To the Rev. Francis Asbury</i> . . . . .	74
<i>Fifteen Letters to Miss Hester Ann Roe, afterwards Mrs. Rogers</i> . . . . .	75
<i>Ten Letters to Miss Patty Chapman</i> . . . . .	87
<i>Two Letters to Mr. William Simpson</i> . . . . .	91
<i>Two Letters to Mr. Robert Hopkins</i> . . . . .	91
To E. B. . . . .	92
To Mr. Alexander . . . . .	93
<i>Eight Letters to Miss Cooke, afterwards Mrs. Clarke</i> . . . . .	93

	Page.
<i>Eleven Letters to Mr. Adam Clarke, afterwards Dr.</i>	
<i>Adam Clarke</i> . . . . .	100
<i>Thirteen Letters to Miss Jane Bisson, afterwards Mrs.</i>	
<i>Cock, of St. Helier's, Jersey</i> . . . . .	106
<i>To Mr. William Percival, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne</i> . . . .	113
<i>Six Letters to Mr. George Holder</i> . . . . .	113
<i>Three Letters to Miss Harriet Lewis, of Dudley</i> . . . . .	115
<i>To Miss Rachel Jones, of Barton-le-Willows, near York</i> .	117
<i>Two Letters to Mrs. Ingram, of Limerick.</i> . . . . .	117
<i>Three Letters to Miss Rebecca Ingram</i> . . . . .	118
<i>To Mr. Charles Atmore</i> . . . . .	119
<i>To Mr. James M'Donald</i> . . . . .	119
<i>To Mr. Edward Lewly, Birmingham</i> . . . . .	120
<i>To Mr. Thomas Broadbent</i> . . . . .	120
<i>Three Letters to Miss Elizabeth Baker, afterwards Mrs.</i>	
<i>Jordan, of Monmouth</i> . . . . .	121
<i>To Mr. George Sykes</i> . . . . .	123
<i>To Mr. Benjamin Rhodes, Redruth</i> . . . . .	123
<i>To Mr. —</i> . . . . .	123
<i>Five Letters to Mr. Samuel Bradburn</i> . . . . .	124
<i>To Miss Sophia Cook, afterwards Mrs. Bradburn</i> . . . . .	126
<i>Eight Letters to Miss Loxdale</i> . . . . .	126
<i>To Mr. C—</i> . . . . .	132
<i>Two Letters to the Rev. Mr. L—</i> . . . . .	133
<i>Two Letters to Mr. Theophilus Lessey</i> . . . . .	136
<i>To Mr. John Stretton, in Harbour-Grace, Newfoundland</i>	137
<i>To Mr. George Blackall, of Brentford</i> . . . . .	138
<i>To Mr. John Bausell</i> . . . . .	138
<i>To Mr. Victory Purdy, of Bristol</i> . . . . .	139
<i>To Mr. —</i> . . . . .	139
<i>To Mr. —</i> . . . . .	140
<i>To Bishop Lowth</i> . . . . .	142
<i>To the Bishop of —</i> . . . . .	144
<i>To the Bishop of —</i> . . . . .	144
<i>To the Bishop of —</i> . . . . .	145
<i>To Sir Harry Trelawney</i> . . . . .	146
<i>To Mr. —</i> . . . . .	147

	Page.
<i>To Mr. ———</i> . . . . .	147
<i>To Lady ———</i> . . . . .	149
<i>To Lord ———</i> . . . . .	150
<i>To a Member of Parliament.</i> . . . . .	151
<i>To the Rev. E. C., of Philadelphia.</i> . . . . .	152
<i>To a Friend.</i> . . . . .	158
<i>To Mr. John Booth</i> . . . . .	154
<i>To Mr. York, of Stourport</i> . . . . .	154

### SUPPLEMENTARY LETTERS.

<i>To Dr. Koker, of Rotterdam</i> . . . . .	155
<i>To Mr. Viney, of Ysselstein.</i> . . . . .	156
<i>To Mr. Isaac Le Long, at Amsterdam</i> . . . . .	156
<i>To Mr. Nathanael Price, of Cardiff</i> . . . . .	156
<i>Three Letters to Mr. Howell Harris, of Trevecka</i> . . . . .	158
<i>To Mr. John Nelson</i> . . . . .	160
<i>Two Letters to Mr. John Haime</i> . . . . .	161
<i>To the Rev. James Erskine</i> . . . . .	162
<i>To Mr. Thomas Bigg, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne.</i> . . . . .	162
<i>To Mr. Thomas Rankin</i> . . . . .	163
<i>To Mr. John Valton</i> . . . . .	164
<i>Two Letters to Miss Bolton, of Witney</i> . . . . .	164
<i>Two Letters to Miss Newman, Cheltenham</i> . . . . .	165
<i>Three Letters to Mr. Walter Churchey</i> . . . . .	166
<i>To Mr. Jasper Winscom</i> . . . . .	168

---

I.— <i>Modern Christianity, exemplified at Wednesbury, and other adjacent Places in Staffordshire</i> . . . . .	169
II.— <i>A Letter to the Rev. Mr. Walker</i> . . . . .	193
III.— <i>Second Letter to the Rev. Mr. Walker</i> . . . . .	197
IV.— <i>Third Letter to the Rev. Mr. Walker</i> . . . . .	201
V.— <i>Fourth Letter to the Rev. Mr. Walker</i> . . . . .	206
VI.— <i>A Letter to the Rev. Thomas Adams</i> . . . . .	207

	Page.
VII.— <i>A Letter to the Rev. Mr. Clarke . . . . .</i>	210
VIII.— <i>Second Letter to the Rev. Mr. Clarke . . . . .</i>	212
IX.— <i>A Letter to a Friend . . . . .</i>	216
X.— <i>Letter to Mr. N. . . . .</i>	218
XI.— <i>Reasons against a Separation from the Church of England . . . . .</i>	225
XII.— <i>A Letter to a Friend . . . . .</i>	232
XIII.— <i>A Letter to the Rev. Mr. Venn. . . . .</i>	238
XIV.— <i>Address to the Travelling Preachers . . . . .</i>	242
XV.— <i>Some Thoughts upon an Important Question. . . . .</i>	244
XVI.— <i>On Hearing Ministers who oppose the Truth . . . . .</i>	245
XVII.— <i>Of attending the Church . . . . .</i>	246
XVIII.— <i>Thoughts upon some late Occurrences . . . . .</i>	248
XIX.— <i>Letter to the Methodist Conference . . . . .</i>	250
XX.— <i>Letter to Dr. Coke, Mr. Asbury, and our Brethren in North America. . . . .</i>	251
XXI.— <i>On the Church: In a Letter to the Rev. — . . . . .</i>	253
XXII.— <i>Of Separation from the Church . . . . .</i>	255
XXIII.— <i>Thoughts upon Methodism. . . . .</i>	258
XXIV.— <i>An Answer to an Important Question. . . . .</i>	261
XXV.— <i>Thoughts on Separation from the Church. . . . .</i>	263
XXVI.— <i>Thoughts upon a late Phenomenon . . . . .</i>	264
XXVII.— <i>To certain Persons in Dublin . . . . .</i>	267
XXVIII.— <i>To the Printer of the Dublin Chronicle. . . . .</i>	268
XXIX.— <i>Farther Thoughts on Separation from the Church. . . . .</i>	272
XXX.— <i>The Case of Birstal House . . . . .</i>	274
XXXI.— <i>A Letter to the Methodist Preachers. (Cir- cular.) . . . . .</i>	278
XXXII.— <i>The Case of Dewsbury House . . . . .</i>	279
XXXIII.— <i>Four Letters to Mr. John Atlay . . . . .</i>	280

	Page.
XXXIV.— <i>A Word to whom it may concern</i> . . . . .	282
XXXV.— <i>A short Account of the School in Kingswood, near Bristol</i> . . . . .	283
XXXVI.— <i>A plain Account of Kingswood School</i> . . . . .	289
XXXVII.— <i>Remarks on the State of Kingswood School</i> .	301
XXXVIII.— <i>A short History of the People called Methodists</i> . . . . .	303
XXXIX.— <i>Letter to the Monthly Reviewers</i> . . . . .	382
XL.— <i>Second Letter to the Monthly Reviewers</i> . . . . .	384
XLI.— <i>Letter to a Friend. Concerning a Passage in a Monthly Review</i> . . . . .	386
XLII.— <i>A Letter to Mr. T. H., alias Philodemas, alias Somebody, alias Stephen Church, alias R. W.</i> . . . . .	387
XLIII.— <i>A Letter to Mr. G. R., alias R. A., alias M. H., alias R. W.</i> . . . . .	392
XLIV.— <i>A Letter to the Editor of the "London Moga- zine"</i> . . . . .	394
XLV.— <i>A Letter to the Editor of Lloyd's "Evening Post"</i>	400
XLVI.— <i>Remarks on Mr. H.'s Account of the Gentoo Religion in Hindostan</i> . . . . .	403
XLVII.— <i>Some Remarks on Article X. of Mr. Maty's New Review, for December, 1784</i> . . . . .	408
XLVIII.— <i>Thoughts on a late Publication</i> . . . . .	411
XLIX.— <i>Thoughts upon Baron Montesquieu's "Spirit of Laws"</i> . . . . .	418
L.— <i>Letter to the Rev. Mr. Furlly</i> . . . . .	416
LI.— <i>Thoughts on the Character and Writings of Mr. Prior</i> . . . . .	418
LII.— <i>Thoughts on the Writings of Baron Swedenborg</i> . .	425
LIII.— <i>Remarks on the Count De Buffon's "Natural History"</i> . . . . .	448
LIV.— <i>Remarks upon Mr. Locke's "Essay on Human Understanding"</i> . . . . .	455



	Page.
LIV.— <i>Remarks on Mr. Bryant's "Analysis of Ancient Mythology"</i> . . . . .	464
LVI.— <i>Thoughts upon Taste</i> . . . . .	465
LVII.— <i>Thoughts on the Power of Music</i> . . . . .	470
LVIII.— <i>A Thought on the Manner of Educating Children</i> . . . . .	474
LIX.— <i>Thoughts on Genius</i> . . . . .	477
LX.— <i>Thoughts on Memory</i> . . . . .	480
LXI.— <i>Thoughts on Suicide</i> . . . . .	481
LXII.— <i>Of the gradual Improvement of Natural Philosophy</i> . . . . .	482
LXIII.— <i>Remarks on the Limits of Human Knowledge</i> . .	488
LXIV.— <i>Conversation with the Bishop of Bristol</i> . . . . .	499
LXV.— <i>An Account of the Disturbances in my Father's House</i> . . . . .	501
LXVI.— <i>Calvinistic Controversy</i> . . . . .	507
LXVII.— <i>Queries respecting the Methodists</i> . . . . .	509
LXVIII.— <i>Notices concerning deceased Preachers</i> . . . . .	511
LXIX.— <i>Directions to the Stewards of the Methodist Society in London</i> . . . . .	515
LXX.— <i>Remarkable Providence</i> . . . . .	516
LXXI.— <i>Directions concerning Pronunciation and Gesture</i> . . . . .	518

# LETTERS

FROM

THE REVEREND JOHN WESLEY,

TO

VARIOUS PERSONS.

---

DCLXII.—*To Robert Carr Brackenbury, Esq., of Raithby, Lincolnshire.*

DEAR SIR,

BRISTOL, *September 27, 1779.*

I HOPE your stay at — will be of use to many. But do not hurt yourself in order to help others. Mr. S— is an upright, valuable man. His wife is a jewel indeed. I wish we had many like her. Your being at — during this critical time is a singular providence. Both parties have a regard for you; and will hear you when they will not hear each other. I am glad you think of spending the winter in town, and doubt not but it will be for the glory of God. Go to my house: What is mine is yours: You are my brother, my friend: Let neither life nor death divide us! Your visit to N— will, I am persuaded, be of considerable use; the more because you love and recommend discipline. But I must beg of you to spend a night or two at Y— and at L—. The sooner you come the more welcome you will be. Wrap yourself up warm, particularly your head and breast.

I am

Your very affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *June 23, 1780.*

I AM glad that it has pleased God to restore your health, and that you have been employing it to the best of purposes. It is worth living for this, (and scarcely for any thing else,) to testify the Gospel of the grace of God. You will find many in these parts who have ears and hearts to

receive even the deep things of God. I believe a journey to Ireland will be of use to your soul and body. Meet me at —, and we can settle our journeys.

I am, dear Sir,

Your very affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXIV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

BRISTOL, *September 18, 1780.*

THE Lord knoweth the way wherein you go; and when you have been tried, you shall come forth as gold. It is true you have now full exercise for all your faith and patience; but by and by you will find good brought out of evil, and will bless God for the severe but wholesome medicine. I had all along a persuasion that God would deliver you, although I could not see which way it would be done; as I knew it was your desire not to do your own will, but the will of Him whose you are and whom you serve. May He still guide you in the way you should go, and enable you to give Him your whole heart! You must not set the great blessing afar off, because you find much war within. Perhaps this will not abate, but rather increase, till the moment your heart is set at liberty. The war will not cease before you attain, but by your attaining, the promise. And if you look for it by naked faith, why may you not receive it now? The cheerfulness of faith you should aim at in and above all things. Wishing you a continual supply of righteousness, peace, and joy,

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LEEDS, *August 12, 1781.*

I SHALL not soon forget the agreeable conversation I had with dear Mrs. Brackenbury\* at Raithby. The sweetness of her temper, and the open, artless account she gave of her experience, increased my love for her. I trust you shall not die, but live to strengthen each other's hands in God, and provoke one another to love and to good works. Who is so great a God as our God? To His care I commit

Mrs. Brackenbury and you. Peace be with your spirits! I commend myself to your prayers; and am,

Dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXVI.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

BRISTOL, *March 9, 1782.*

WHAT a comfort it is that we know the Lord reigneth; and that he disposes all things in heaven and earth in the very manner which he sees will be most for his own glory, and for the good of those that love him! I am firmly persuaded the present dispensation, severe as it may appear, will be found in the event a means of greater blessings than any you have yet received. Even already you find the consolations of the Holy One are not small with you. And He enables you to make the right use of this providence, by devoting yourself more entirely to his service. On April 4, I expect to be in Manchester, in order to visit the societies in Lancashire, Cheshire, Yorkshire; and thence, if God permit, to Scotland. Perhaps it would be of use if you took part of the journey with me. Let me know your thoughts. It is exceeding clear to me, first, that a dispensation of the Gospel is committed to you; and, secondly, that you are peculiarly called to publish it in connexion with us. It has pleased God to give so many and so strong evidences of this, that I see not how any reasonable person can doubt it. Therefore, what I have often said before I say again, and give it under my hand, that you are welcome to preach in any of our preaching-houses, in Great Britain or Ireland, whenever it is convenient for you. I commend you for preaching less frequently where you find less liberty of spirit, (because no necessity is laid upon *you* with regard to this or that particular place,) and for spending most time in those places where you find most probability of doing good. We have need to work while it is day.

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and servant.

DCLXVII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

*January 4, 1783.*

I REJOICE to hear that you have had a safe passage, and that you have preached both in Guernsey and Jersey.

We must not expect many conveniences at first : Hitherto it is the day of small things. I should imagine the sooner you begin to preach in French the better : Surely you need not be careful about accuracy. Trust God, and speak as well as you can. While those poor sheep were scattered abroad without a shepherd, and without any proper connexion with each other, it is no wonder they were cold and dead. It is good that every one should know our whole plan. We do not want any man to go on blindfold. Peace be with your spirit ! I wish you many happy years ; and am,

Dear Sir,

Your very affectionate friend and servant.

DCLXVIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

*January 10, 1783.*

As I expect to remain in London till the beginning of March, I hope to have the pleasure of spending a little time with you before I set out on my spring and summer journeys, which I shall probably continue as long as I live. And who would wish to live for any meaner purpose than to serve God in our generation? I know my health and strength are continued for this very thing. And if ever I should listen to that siren song, "Spare thyself," I believe my Master would spare me no longer, but soon take me away. It pleases Him to deal with you in a different way. He frequently calls you not so much to act as to suffer. And you may well say,—

"O take thy way ! Thy way is best :  
Grant or deny me ease.  
This is but tuning of my breast  
To make the music please."

I am glad you are still determined to do what you can, and to do it without delay. But all are not of this mind. I have just received a letter from Mr. —, formerly one of our Travelling Preachers, informing me, whereas it has pleased God to take away his dear partner, he is resolved again to give up himself to the work,—after he has settled his worldly business, which he thinks will take but sixteen or seventeen months ! Would one think he had ever read the Epistle of St. James ? or that he had heard those words, "What is your life ? It is even a vapour, which appeareth

and vanisheth away." Commending you to Him who is able to save you to the uttermost,

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXIX.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *February 13, 1784.*

IT is undoubtedly our duty to use the most probable means we can for either preserving or restoring our health. But, after all, God does continually assert his own right of saving both souls and bodies. He blesses the medicines, and they take place; he withdraws his influence, and they avail nothing. You will not easily be forgotten by any of this family. I trust we are all one body united by one Spirit. I doubt not but we have also a few fellow-members in your little islands. May He whom we serve in the Gospel of his Son increase them an hundred fold! We hear of some increase of the work of God almost in every part of England; but above all, in Cornwall, in Lancashire, Cheshire, and various parts of Yorkshire. It pleases God to bless Mr. Valton wherever he turns his face; but his body sinks under him, and he is still hovering between life and death. Would it not be advisable, if you still continue feeble, to return to England as soon as possible; especially if you have reason to believe the air of Jersey does not agree with your constitution? I commend you to Him who is able to heal both your soul and body: and am,

Dear Sir,

Your very affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXX.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *February 15, 1785.*

YOUR having the opportunity of giving them a few discourses in Dover, and then travelling with so pious and friendly a person as Mr. Ireland, I could not but look upon as clear instances of a gracious Providence. I cannot doubt but the mild air which you now breathe will greatly tend to the re-establishment of your health: And so will the suspension of your public labours till you are better able to bear them. With regard to perfecting yourself in the

French language, it is certain this may be done more speedily and effectually in a family where only French is spoken. And undoubtedly you may learn the purity of the language far better in Languedoc, than in Normandy. It is clear that you are not called at present to any public labours. But should not you be so much the more diligent in private? to redeem the time? to buy up every opportunity? Should not you be instant "in season and out of season;" that is, to make the opportunities which you cannot find? Surely the all-wise and all-merciful Saviour did not send you into France for nothing! O no! you are at least to pluck one brand (perhaps several) out of the burning. May the Lord whom you serve in all things direct your paths! So prays,

Dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXI.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

BRISTOL, *September 24, 1785.*

IT is well that the Lord sitteth above the water-floods, and remaineth a King for ever. It is no wonder that Satan should fight for his own kingdom, when such inroads are made upon it. But

Beyond his chain he cannot go;  
Our Jesus shall stir up his power,  
And soon avenge us of our foe.

After we have observed a day of fasting and prayer, I have known the most violent commotions quelled at once. But doubtless all probable means are to be used: One in particular it might be worth while to attempt; namely, to soften the spirit of that angry Magistrate. God has the hearts of all men in his hand; and if the heart of that warrior was once turned, then those who have hitherto been encouraged by him would vanish away like smoke. It is not improbable but your answer to that scandalous libel may be one means of abating his prejudice.

I am, dear Sir,

Your very affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

November 24, 1785.

GOD will hearken to the prayer that goeth not out of feigned lips; especially when fasting is joined therewith. And provided our brethren continue instant in prayer, the beasts of the people will not again lift up their head. The work of God still increases in Ireland, and in several parts of this kingdom. I commend you and all our brethren to Him who is able to preserve you from all evil, and build you up in love; and am,

Dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, October 20, 1787.

MR. — is undoubtedly a good young man; and has a tolerably good understanding. But he thinks it better than it is; and in consequence is apt to put himself in your or my place. For these fifty years, if any one said, "If you do not put such an one out of society, I will go out of it;" I have said, "Pray go: I, not you, are to judge who shall stay." I therefore greatly approve of your purpose, to give Mr. W— a full hearing in the presence of all the Preachers. I have often repented of judging too severely; but very seldom of being too merciful.

As the point is undoubtedly of very great importance, it deserved serious consideration; and I am glad you took the pains to consider it, and discussed it so admirably well according to Scripture and sound reason.

I enclose a few lines for Mrs. —, for whom I feel an affectionate concern.

The God whom you serve will shortly deliver you from the heaviness you feel.

I ever am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXIV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON December 17, 1787.

CONSIDERING that the god of this world will not fail to fight when his kingdom is in danger, I do not wonder that persecution should come to Jersey and Guernsey. I agree



with you, that the best method to be used in this exigence is fasting and prayer. It is plain your labours in those places have not been in vain. And I am in hopes Guernsey will overtake Jersey.

Wishing you all every possible blessing,

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *February 27, 1788.*

I CANNOT exactly agree with your judgment. While there was no Preacher in the islands but you, and while the work of God was but just beginning, you was undoubtedly called to spend most of your time there, and then you did right in not being disobedient to the heavenly calling. But the case is very different now. They have now able Preachers in French and English: And as they do not do the work deceitfully, it prospers in their hands. Has not the Lord more work for you to do in England? In June, (if God permit,) I purpose to spend an evening with you at Raithby. Peace be with all your spirits!

I am, dear Sir,

Your very affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXVI.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *November 7, 1788.*

I SNATCH a few minutes from visiting the classes, to answer your acceptable letter. I exceedingly approve of your spending the winter at Bath. I believe God will make you of use to many there, who are more ripe for your instructions than ever they were before. And I am persuaded you will yourself profit as much, if not more, by the conversation of a few in Bristol, Mr. Valton and Miss Johnson in particular, as by that of any persons in Great Britain. Aim at the cheerfulness of faith.

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXVII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *February 24, 1790.*

Is the B— the same gentleman who subscribed to the chapel, and let us have a lease for building? If so, how

came his mind to be so changed? But his heart is still in God's hand. And therefore you take the very best way possible to allay the present storm by seeking Him that turneth the hearts of men as the waters. Without His help human means will not avail. It has pleased God to give me more strength than I had in the autumn; but my eyes continue weak. It is enough, that we are in His hands.

I am, dear Sir,

Your very affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXVIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

BRISTOL, *September 15, 1790.*

YOUR letter gave me great satisfaction. I wanted to hear where and how you were; and am glad to find you are better in bodily health, and not weary and faint in your mind. My body seems nearly to have done its work, and to be almost worn out. Last month my strength was nearly gone, and I could have sat almost still from morning to night. But, blessed be God, I crept about a little, and made shift to preach once a day. On Monday I ventured a little farther; and after I had preached three times, (once in the open air,) I found my strength so restored that I could have preached again without inconvenience. I am glad brother D— has more light with regard to full sanctification. This doctrine is the grand depositum which God has lodged with the people called Methodists; and for the sake of propagating this chiefly he appeared to have raised us up. I congratulate you upon sitting loose to all below; steadfast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made you free. Moderate riding on horseback, chiefly in the south of England, would improve your health. If you choose to accompany me, in any of my little journeys on this side Christmas, whenever you was tired you might go into my carriage. I am not so ready a writer as I was once; but I bless God I can scrawl a little,—enough to assure you that

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXIX.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *December 7, 1790.*

It gave me pleasure to see your letter dated Portsmouth, and to hear that your health is better. I hope you will be able to spend a little time with us here. And if you choose to lodge in my house, I have a room at your service; and we have a family which I can recommend to all England, as adorning the doctrine of God our Saviour.

I am, dear Sir,

Your very affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXX.—*To Mr. Zechariah Yewdall.*

DEAR ZACHARY,

LONDON, *October 9, 1779.*

WHEREVER you are, be ready to acknowledge what God has done for your soul; and earnestly exhort all the believers to expect full salvation. You would do well to read every morning a chapter in the New Testament, with the Notes, and to spend the greatest part of the morning in reading, meditation, and prayer. In the afternoon, you might visit the society from house to house, in the manner laid down in the Minutes of the Conference. The more labour, the more blessing!

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

BRISTOL, *July 24, 1780.*

NEXT year you will be in the Glamorganshire Circuit, and with a fellow-labourer who has the work of God at heart.

If Billy Moore mentions it in time, your temporal wants will easily be supplied. Trials are only blessings in disguise. Whenever anything bears hard upon your mind, you should write freely to

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *December 3, 1780.*

YOU mistake one thing. It is I, not the Conference, (according to the twelfth Rule,) that station the Preachers;

but I do it at the time of the Conference, that I may have the advice of my brethren. But I have no thought of removing you from the Glamorganshire Circuit: You are just in your right place. But you say, "Many of the people are asleep." They are; and you are sent to awake them out of sleep. "But they are dead." True; and you are sent to raise the dead. Good will be done at Monmouth and Neath in particular. When no good can be done, I would leave the old and try new places. But you have need to be all alive yourselves, if you would impart life to others. And this cannot be without much self-denial. Both of you should recommend the Magazine in earnest.

I am, dear Zachary,

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 10, 1781.*

BROTHER JOHNS has been with me this morning. I believe you will have peace long before he gets his estate. You have now a fair prospect. It really seems as if God had inclined the hearts of the Magistrates to do you justice. I know no Attorney to be depended on like Mr. Bold, of Brecon. The Conference will consider the expense.

Continue instant in prayer, and God will give you quietness.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXIV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ZACHARY, WHITEHAVEN, *May 26, 1781.*

You should always write to me without reserve. I observe nothing much amiss in your behaviour. Truth and love you may hold fast; and courtesy will increase insensibly. Godfathers promise only, that they "will see the child be taught, as soon as he is able to learn, what he ought to do in order to his son's health." And this, it is certain, they may perform. You did not read that little tract with sufficient care; otherwise, you could not but have seen this.

I commend you for being exceeding wary with respect to marriage. St. Paul's direction is full and clear: "If thou mayest be free, use it rather." "Art thou loosed from a wife? Seek not a wife." Two of our small tracts you should

read with much prayer,—“Thoughts on a Single Life,” and “A Word to whom it may concern.” You need not be backward to write, when you have opportunity. There is no fear of my thinking your letters troublesome.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

OTLEY, *May 1, 1782.*

I SEE no reason yet, why you may not spend the next year in Cork and Bandon. If nothing unforeseen prevent, I shall be at Dublin the beginning of July.

If you desire to promote the work of God, you should preach abroad as often as possible. Nothing destroys the devil's kingdom like this. You may have the History of the Church: Money is nothing between you and me. Be all in earnest!

I am, dear Zachary,

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

SEVENOAKS, *October 21, 1782.*

UNDOUBTEDLY you are to act as Assistant; and if you carefully read the great Minutes of the Conference, and keep close to them in every point, assuredly you will see the fruit of your labour. But whom can you get to help you? I know none, unless you can persuade brother Rutherford to spare you Andrew Blair, and to take a poor invalid, John Mealy, (who is now at Dublin,) in his stead. You know, we have no Preachers to spare; every one is employed: And we can neither make Preachers, nor purchase them. God alone can thrust them out into his harvest. All you can do till help comes is, to divide yourself between Cork and Bandon.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCLXXXVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *November 12, 1782.*

BEFORE this time, I suppose you have my last. I have wrote to T. Rutherford to send Andrew Blair. The Leaders, I find, were unwilling to part with him; but I think he will

be guided by me rather than by them. Till I have done meeting the classes, I shall have little leisure to write either prose or verse; being fully taken up from morning to night. After this, I may get a little time. O let us work while the day is! The night cometh, wherein no man can work.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXVIII.—*To the Same.*

ON THE DEATH OF MR. BOARDMAN.

WITH zeal for God, with love of souls inspired,  
Nor awed by dangers, nor by labours tired,  
BOARDMAN in distant worlds proclaims the word  
To multitudes, and turns them to his Lord.  
But soon the bloody waste of war he mourns,  
And, loyal, from rebellion's seat returns;  
Nor yet at home,—on eagles' pinions flies,  
And in a moment soars to paradise!

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *November 21, 1782.*

I BELIEVE you need not be ashamed to inscribe the lines above on R. Boardman's tombstone. I doubt you do not find any account of himself among his papers.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCLXXXIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *December 7, 1782.*

I do not see that you can fix upon a more proper person, than either George Howe or Laren Wright. You should endorse it on the back of the deed; only taking care to have fresh stamps.

Those who will not meet in class cannot stay with us. Read the "Thoughts upon a Single Life," and weigh them well. You will then feel the wisdom of St. Paul's advice, (especially to a Preacher, and to a Methodist Preacher above all,) "If thou mayest be free, use it rather."

I hope Andrew Blair is now with you. Brother Swindells is dead; and John Trembath is alive again.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCXC.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *December 31, 1782.*

You fear when no fear is. I have appointed Mr. Blair to labour with you at Cork and Bandon; and shall not alter that appointment, without stronger reasons than I am likely to see. If I live, I shall probably see Ireland in summer: If I do not, I expect Dr. Coke will.

Robert Blake may go just where he will: I have nothing to do with him. Three times he left his Circuit without the consent of his Assistant. He has stupidly and saucily affronted almost all the Leaders. His high spirit, I fear, will destroy him. Till he is deeply humbled, I disclaim all fellowship with him.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCXCI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 9, 1783.*

I AM glad you have given another trial to Innishannon. And why not to Hinscla? I am a good deal of your mind. I hope those are only drops before a shower of grace. Over and above the general reasons contained in that tract, a Preacher, and above all others a Methodist Preacher, has particular reasons for valuing a single life.

I am glad B. Blair and you converse freely together: It will preserve you from many snares. There can be no properer person for a Trustee than Andrew Laffan. I have hope, that Robert Blake will be more useful than ever.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCXCII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 25, 1785.*

I AM glad to hear, that the work of God goes on at Sheerness, and that there is such a noble spirit among the people with regard to building. But as we are yet early in the year, I do not advise you to begin till two hundred pounds are subscribed. Try first what you can do in Kent, and at Norwich, after keeping a day of fasting and prayer.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCXCIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ZACHARY, Near DUBLIN, June 22, 1785.

LET him not be afraid: I will take care that not one word of that affair shall be mentioned at the Conference. Let him come up thither in the name of God, and it will be a blessing to him.

Let B. Foster likewise come, that he may have the advice of Dr. Whitehead. I shall have no objection, unless some particular objection arise, to your going to Sunderland. I think you will do well to bring brother Adamson with you to the Conference. You will both be acceptable to,

Dear Zachary,  
Your affectionate brother.

DCXCIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, November 11, 1785.

I HOPE sister Yewdall and you will be a blessing to each other. I think it a pity to remove you from Kent. Otherwise, Oxford Circuit is nearer to London than Canterbury Circuit; for High-Wycomb is nearer to it than Chatham. I cannot visit all the places I want to visit in Kent in one journey. I purpose (God willing) to begin my first journey on the 28th instant. Shall I visit Margate or Sheerness first?

I am, dear Zachary,  
Your affectionate brother.

DCXCV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, December 20, 1786.

YOU do well to tell me where you are, and what you are doing. Do not you know, that several envy you, because, they say, you are one of my favourites? I am glad to hear that you find some fruit again even at poor Musselburgh. I expect more from the new than the old hearers, most of whom are as salt that has lost its savour. Possibly, some good may be done at Dalkeith too; but you will have need of patience. I do not despair even of Preston-Pans, if you can procure a tolerable place.

It is a great point gained, if Mr. Collis is diligent in attending his lectures. If he has likewise resolution to



refrain from gay company, there is reason to hope that he will be a valuable man.

You cannot have a better adviser than Mr. Pawson. Take care to husband your time. Peace be with you and yours!

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCXCVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LISBELAN, *May 30, 1787.*

I AM glad to hear that you have a society at Dalkeith. But I am not pleased that the Edinburgh Preacher has not preached there once a week: I desire he would constantly do it for the time to come, without asking leave of the Leaders. Those have no business to direct the Preachers. It is no part of their office. I am glad to hear so good an account of Mr. Collis, and hope he will be a comfort to his mother. I will consider what you say concerning your being at Glasgow.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCXCVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *November 1, 1787.*

You send me good news indeed. So even poor Dalkeith will at last receive the Gospel! I have no hope of our doing any good at Preston-Pans for the present. Wherever a door is open, there press forward. I do not despair of having some fruit at Musselburgh. If my health is continued, I hope to pay you a visit in Scotland next summer. You may have some books to give away. Peace be with all your spirits!

I am

Your affectionate brother.

S. Bradburn is alive and well.

DCXCVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *December 27, 1787.*

You are in the right. You can have nothing at all to do with the chapel upon those terms. Nay, a dove-cote above it would be an insufferable nuisance, as it would fill the whole place with fleas. "What is to be done then?"

Why, continue instant in prayer, and God will show what you are to do. But he that believeth doth not make haste. I cannot advise you to set about building a house, unless you could find one or two responsible men, who would engage themselves to finish the building in such a manner, for an hundred and fifty pounds. Otherwise, I think you would be more bold than wise.

I am, with kind love to Mrs. Yewdall,  
Your affectionate brother.

DCXCIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, ATHLONE, April 18, 1789.

I AM glad to hear that there is so fine a prospect at Dalkeith. So is generally the way of our Lord, to try us first, and then to comfort. It is pity but James Ridley had thoroughly settled his affairs before he attempted to travel. If that had been done, there is no doubt but he would have been useful wheresoever he went. I wish, however, brother Dall may make a good conclusion with regard to the chapel at Dumfries. Peace be with you and yours!

I am, dear Zachary,  
Your affectionate brother.

DCC.—*To Miss Bishop.*

DEAR MISS BISHOP, 1767.

WE have had a society in Bath for about thirty years, sometimes larger and sometimes smaller. It was very small this autumn, consisting only of eleven or twelve persons, of whom Michael Hemmings was Leader. I spoke to these one by one, added nine or ten more, divided them into two classes, and appointed half of them to meet with Joseph Harris. But if you are willing to cast in your lot with us, I had rather that the single women in both classes, who desire it, should meet with you, and any others who are not afraid of the reproach of Christ. In that little tract, "A Plain Account of the People called Methodists," you see our whole plan. We have but one point in view; to be altogether Christians, scriptural, rational Christians. For which we well know, not only the world, but the almost Christians, will never forgive us. From these, therefore, if you join

heart and hand with us, you are to expect neither justice nor mercy. If you are determined, let me know. But consider what you do. Can you give up all for Christ? the hope of improving your fortune, a fair reputation, and agreeable friends? Can He make you amends for all these? Is He alone a sufficient portion? I think you will find Him so. And if you were as entirely devoted to God as Jenny Cooper was, you would never have cause to repent of your choice, either in time or in eternity. The more freely you write, the more agreeable it will be to

Your affectionate brother.

DCCI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

*November 22, 1769.*

It is exceedingly strange. I should really wonder (if I could wonder at any weakness of human nature) that so good a woman as —, and one who particularly piques herself on her catholic spirit, should be guilty of such narrowness of spirit. Let us not vary in thought or word from the Methodist principle, "Whosoever doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother."

We have other instances of persons who now enjoy the peace of God, and yet do not know the time when they received it. And God is sovereign: He may make what exceptions he pleases to his general rule. So this objection is easily set aside; and so is that of your age. The Spirit of the Lord can give understanding, either in a longer or in a shorter time. And I doubt not but he will give you favour in the eyes of your sisters. You have only to go on in simplicity, doing the will of God from the heart, and trusting in the anointing of the Holy One, to teach you of all things.

I am glad you are acquainted with Miss Owens. Encourage each other to be altogether Christians. Defy fashion and custom, and labour only to

Steer your useful lives below  
By reason and by grace.

Let not the gentlewoman entrench upon the Christian; but be a simple follower of the Lamb.

At present you are exactly in your place, and I trust no

temptation, inward or outward, shall ever induce you to depart from the work to which God has called you. You must expect to be pushed to both extremes by turns; and you need all the power of God to save you from it. And he will save you to the uttermost, provided you still retain the sense of your poverty and helplessness. It is a good prayer,—

“Show me, as my soul can bear,  
The depth of inbred sin.”

And just so he will deal with you; for he remembers that you are but dust. But you should not wait to be thus and thus convinced, in order to be renewed in love. No; pray now for all the mind which was in Christ; and you shall have more and more conviction, as it pleases him. Mr. Spencer and Glynn are of excellent spirits, notwithstanding their opinion. I hardly know their fellows. Love is all we want: Let this fill our hearts, and it is enough. Peace be with your spirit!

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

November 5, 1770.

I AM glad you had such success in your labour of love: In all things you shall reap if you faint not. And the promise is, “They shall run and not be weary; they shall walk and not faint.” How does the little society prosper? Are you all united in love? And are you all aware of that bane of love,—tale-bearing and evil-speaking? Do you retain that little spark of faith? Are you going forward, and have you as strong a desire as ever “to increase with all the increase of God?”

See the Lord, thy Keeper, stand  
Omnipotently near!  
Lo, He holds thee by thy hand,  
And banishes thy fear!

O trust him, love him, and praise him!

I know not that you have anything to do with fear. Your continual prayer should be for faith and love. I admired a holy man in France, who, considering the state of one who was full of doubts and fears, forbade him to think of his sins

at all, and ordered him to think only of the love of God in Christ. The fruit was, all his fears vanished away, and he lived and died in the triumph of faith.

Faith is sight; that is, spiritual sight: And it is light, and not darkness; so that the famous Popish phrase, "The darkness of faith," is a contradiction in terms. O beware of all who talk in that unscriptural manner, or they will perplex, if not destroy, you! I cannot find in my Bible any such sin as legality. Truly, we have been often afraid where no fear was. I am not half legal enough, not enough under the law of love. Sometimes there is painful conviction of sin, preparatory to full sanctification; sometimes a conviction that has far more pleasure than pain, being mixed with joyful expectation. Always there should be a gradual growth in grace; which need never be intermitted from the time we are justified. Do not wait therefore for pain or anything else, but simply for all-conquering faith. The more freely you write, the more satisfaction you will give to

Your affectionate brother.

DCCIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

February 16, 1771.

You look inward too much, and upward too little.

Christ is ready to impart  
Life to all, for life who sigh;  
In thy mouth and in thy heart  
The word is ever nigh.

Encourage yourself to trust in Him; that is your point; then he will do all things well. Legality, with most who use that term, really means tenderness of conscience. There is no propriety in the word, if one would take it for seeking justification by works. Considering, therefore, how hard it is to fix the meaning of that odd term, and how dreadfully it has been abused, I think it highly advisable for all the Methodists to lay it quite aside.

If Mr. S. could find any other doctrine which he thought was peculiarly mine, he would be as angry at it as he is at Christian perfection. But it is all well: We are to go forward, whoever goes back or turns aside. I hope your class goes on well, and that you are not weary of well doing. The Lord is at hand. In praying with the children, you have only to ask for those things which you are sensible they want, and that

in the most plain, artless, and simple language which you can devise.

Perhaps we may see a new accomplishment of Solomon's words: "He that reproveth a man shall afterward find more favour than he who flattereth with his tongue." But be that as it may, I have done my duty, I could no otherwise have delivered my own soul: And no offence at all would have been given thereby, had not pride stifled both religion and generosity. But my letter is now out of date: It is mentioned no more: There is a more plausible occasion found; namely, those eight terrible propositions which conclude the Minutes of our Conference.\* At the instance of some who were sadly frightened thereby, I have revised them over and over; I have considered them in every point of view; and truly, the more I consider them, the more I like them; the more fully I am convinced, not only that they are true, agreeable both to Scripture and to sound experience, but that they contain truths of the deepest importance, and such as ought to be continually inculcated by those who would be pure from the blood of all men.

The imagination which Mr. — borrowed from another good man, "that he is not a believer who has any sin remaining in him," is not only an error, but a very dangerous one, of which I have seen fatal effects. Herein we divided from the Germans near thirty years ago; and the falseness and absurdity of it is shown in my Second Journal, and in my sermon on that subject. Your experience reminds me of these lines:—

So many tender joys and woes  
Have o'er my quiv'ring soul had power;  
Plain life with height'ning passions rose,  
The boast or burden of an hour.

They who feel less, certainly suffer less; but the more we suffer, the more we may improve; the more obedience, the more holiness, we may learn by the things we suffer. So that, upon the whole, I do not know if the insensible ones have the advantage over us.

If you wrote more than once in three months, it would not be amiss. Few are more tenderly concerned for you than  
Your affectionate brother.

\* The Minutes of the year 1770, which gave occasion to Mr. Fletcher to write his Checks to Antinomianism.—Ed.

DCCIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

*September 1, 1771.*

CONCESSIONS made in the chapel at Bath would not quench the flame kindled over the three kingdoms. Mr. Fletcher's Letters may do this in some measure; but the antidote cannot spread so fast as the poison. However, the Lord reigneth; and consequently all these things shall work together for the increase of his kingdom. Certainly simple faith is the very thing you want; that faith which lives upon Christ from moment to moment. I believe that sermon, "The Scripture Way of Salvation," might at this time be very useful to you. It is a great thing to seize and improve the very now. What a blessing you may receive at this instant! Behold the Lamb of God!

What, if even before this letter comes to your hands, the Lord should come to your heart! Is He not nigh? Is He not now knocking at the door? What do you say? "Come in, my Lord, come in." Are you not ready? Are you not a mere sinner, and stripped of all? Therefore all is ready for you. Fear not; only believe, and enter into rest. How gracious is it in the kind Physician to humble you and prove you, and show you what is in your heart! Now let Christ and love alone be there.

That your every hour is crowded with employment, I account no common blessing. The more employment the better, since you are not doing your own will, but the will of Him that sent you. I cannot see that it is by any means his will for you to quit your present situation.

Such a degree of sickness or pain as does not affect the understanding, I have often found to be a great help. It is an admirable help against levity, as well as against foolish desires; and nothing more directly tends to teach us that great lesson, to write upon our heart, "Not as I will, but as thou wilt."

Mr. Baxter well observes, "that whoever attempt to teach children will find need of all the understanding God has given them." But indeed natural understanding will go but a little way. It is a peculiar gift of God. I believe He has given you a measure of it already, and you may ask and expect an increase of it. Our dear sisters at

Publow enjoy it in as high a degree as any young women I know.

It certainly must be an inordinate affection which creates so many jealousies and misunderstandings. I should think it to be absolutely needful, the very next time you observe anything of that kind, to come to a full explanation with the parties concerned; to tell them calmly and roundly, "I must and I will choose for myself whom I will converse with, and when and how; and if any one of you take upon you to be offended at me on this account, you will make it necessary for me to be more shy and reserved to you than ever I was before." If you steadily take up this cross, if you speak thus once or twice in the class, in a cool but peremptory manner, I am much inclined to think it will save both you and others a good deal of uneasiness.

When you see those ladies, (with whom I have no acquaintance,) you would do well to speak exceeding plain. I am afraid they are still entire strangers to the religion of the heart.

We must build with one hand, while we fight with the other. And this is the great work, not only to bring souls to believe in Christ, but to build them up in our most holy faith. How grievously are they mistaken who imagine, that, as soon as the children are born, they need take no more care of them! We do not find it so. The chief care then begins. And if we see this in a true light, we may well cry out, even the wisest men on earth, "Who is sufficient for these things?" In a thousand circumstances, general rules avail little, and our natural light is quickly at an end. So that we have nothing to depend upon but the anointing of the Holy One: And this will indeed teach us concerning all things. The same you need with regard to your little ones, that you may train them up in the way wherein they should go. And herein you have continual need of patience; for you will frequently see little fruit of all your labour. But leave that with Him. The success is His. The work only is yours. Your point is this,—work your work betimes; and in His time He will give you a full reward.

I am

Yours affectionately.



DCCV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

June 12, 1773.

“TRUE simplicity,” Fenelon says, “is that grace whereby the soul is delivered from all unprofitable reflections upon itself.” I add, “and upon all other persons and things.” This is an unspeakable blessing. And it is the mere gift of God, not naturally annexed either to greatness or littleness of understanding. A single eye is a great help to this. Seek one thing, and you will be far less troubled with unprofitable reasonings.

It has, in all ages, been allowed, that the communion of saints extends to those in paradise, as well as those upon earth; as they are all one body united under one Head. And

Can death's interposing tide  
Spirits one in Christ divide?

But it is difficult to say, either what kind or what degree of union may be between them. It is not improbable their fellowship with us is far more sensible than ours with them. Suppose any of them are present, they are hid from our eyes, but we are not hid from their sight. They, no doubt, clearly discern all our words and actions, if not all our thoughts too. For it is hard to think these walls of flesh and blood can intercept the view of an angelic being. But we have, in general, only a faint and indistinct perception of their presence, unless in some peculiar instances, where it may answer some gracious ends of divine Providence. Then it may please God to permit that they should be perceptible, either by some of our outward senses, or by an internal sense, for which human language has not any name. But I suppose this is not a common blessing. I have known but few instances of it. To keep up constant and close communion with God is the most likely means to obtain this also.

Whatever designs a man has, whatever he is proposing to do, either for himself or his friends, when his spirit goes hence all is at an end. And it is in this sense only that “all our thoughts perish.” Otherwise, all our thoughts and designs, though not carried into execution, are noted in His book who accepts us according to our willing mind, and rewards intentions as well as actions. By aiming at Him

in all things, by studying to please Him in all your thoughts, words, and actions, you are continually sowing to the Spirit, and of the Spirit you will reap life everlasting.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

September 19, 1773.

It is certainly most profitable for us to have a variety of seasons. We could not bear either to be constantly in storms, or constantly in a calm; but we are not certain, we cannot judge what proportion of one or the other is best for us. So it is well we are not left to our own wisdom, that we do not choose for ourselves. We should make strange work: But we know He that chooses for us orders all things well.

There are excellent things in most of the Mystic writers. As almost all of them lived in the Romish Church, they were lights whom the gracious providence of God raised up to shine in a dark place. But they did not give a clear, a steady, or a uniform light. That wise and good man, Professor Franck, used to say of them, "They do not describe our common Christianity, but every one has a religion of his own." It is very true: So that if you study the Mystic writers, you will find as many religions as books; and for this plain reason, each of them makes his own experience the standard of religion.

Madam Guion was a good woman, and is a fine writer, but very far from judicious. Her writings will lead any one who is fond of them, into unscriptural Quietism. They strike at the root, and tend to make us rest contented without either faith or works.

It is certain the Scripture by "prayer" almost always means vocal prayer. And whosoever intermits this for any time, will neither pray with the voice nor the heart. It is therefore our wisdom to force ourselves to prayer; to pray whether we can pray or not. And many times while we are so doing, the fire will fall from heaven, and we shall know our labour was not in vain.

There is, upon the whole, nothing new under the sun; but the spirit which you speak of, as manifesting itself among your young people, is utterly a new thing among the

Methodists ; I have known nothing like it in the three kingdoms. And yet I do not know that they have either less sense or less grace than others of their age or sex. But this is one proof among a thousand, that if God leave us for a moment to ourselves, there is no folly into which our subtle adversary may not drive the wisest of the human race. Yet I do not see that you are at liberty to give up your charge on this account. It seems you should simply lay the whole affair before Messrs. Pawson and Allen. They are candid and impartial judges, prejudiced neither on one side nor the other ; and I believe they will be able to judge, on any emergency, what steps are the most proper to be taken.

One reason, it may be, why this was permitted, was to confound the pride of your understanding. You had been accounted a woman of sense, and commended for it. And our nature readily receives such commendation. But see how little your sense avails ! You can do no more herein, than if you were almost an idiot. "The help that is done upon earth, He doeth it himself," whether with or without instruments. Let your whole soul be stayed upon Him, for time and eternity.

When I observe anything amiss in your temper or behaviour, I shall hardly fail to tell you of it ; for I am persuaded you would not only suffer it, but profit by advice or reproof. I have been sometimes afraid you did not deal plainly enough with the young women under your care. There needs much courage and faithfulness, that you may do all that in you lies to present them faultless before the throne.

I do not know whether there is any outward employ which would be so proper for you, as that you are now engaged in. You have scope to use all the talents which God has given you, and that is the most excellent way. You have likewise a most admirable exercise for your patience, either in the dulness or frowardness of your little ones. And some of these will learn from you, what is of the greatest importance, to know themselves and to know God. You must not, therefore, relinquish this station lightly ; not without full and clear proof, that God calls you so to do. Meantime, bear your cross, and it will bear you. Seek an inward, not an outward, change. What you want is only inward liberty, the glorious liberty of the children of God. And how soon

may you enjoy this! Who knows what a day, an hour, a moment, may bring forth? How soon may you hear the voice that speaks Jehovah near! Why should it not be to-day?

I am

Yours affectionately.

DCCVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

June 17, 1774.

It is something strange, that I should never hear of your sickness, till I hear of your recovery. Both the one and the other were designed for blessings, and I doubt not but they have proved so to you. Since I saw you first, I have not observed much occasion for reproving. But we have all need of advice and exhortation, else we should soon be weary and faint in our minds. It is to be expected, that above one-half of those who not only profess great things, but actually enjoy the great salvation, will, nevertheless, be sooner or later moved from their steadfastness. Some of them will indeed recover what they had lost; others will die in their sins. The observing this should incite us to double our diligence, lest we should fall after their example.

The difference between heaviness and darkness of soul, (the wilderness state,) should never be forgotten. Darkness (unless in the case of bodily disorder) seldom comes upon us but by our own fault. It is not so with respect to heaviness, which may be occasioned by a thousand circumstances, such as frequently neither our wisdom can foresee, nor our power prevent. It seems your trial was of the latter kind; perhaps too it was partly owing to the body. But of whatsoever kind it was, you may profit thereby: It need not leave you as it found you. Remember the wise saying of Mr. Dodd, "It is a great loss to lose an affliction." If you are no better for it, you lose it. But you may gain thereby both humility, seriousness, and resignation.

We so become all things to all, as not to hurt our own souls, when we first secure a single eye, a steady design, to please all for their good to edification; and then take care that our discourse be always good to the use of edifying, and such as may minister grace to the hearers. But in order to this, we have need of power from on high, and of the wisdom that sitteth by the throne. This alone can give us to order

our conversation aright, so as to profit both others and ourselves. Before you can do this effectually, you must conquer your natural reserve, and exercise it only to those of whom you know nothing at all, or of whom you know nothing good. Perhaps there is one occasion more on which it will be highly expedient, if not necessary; namely, when good persons (at least in some measure so) sink beneath their character, trifle away time, or indulge themselves in a conversation which has no tendency to improve either the speaker or the hearer.

I think it will not be best for you to go out less than you ever did. Suppose you have more faith and more love, (as I would fain think you have,) you certainly ought to go out more. Otherwise, your faith will insensibly die away. It is by works only, that it can be made perfect. And the more the love of solitude is indulged, the more it will increase. This is a temptation common to men. In every age and country Satan has whispered to those who began to taste the powers of the world to come, "To the desert!" "To the wilderness!" Most of our little flock at Oxford were tried with this; my brother and I in particular. Nay, but I say, "To the Bible! To the Bible!" And there you will learn, "as you have time, to do good unto all men;" to warn every man, to exhort every man as you have opportunity. Although the greatest part of your care and labour should be laid out on those that are of the household of faith, certainly you may do good to others, without anyways endangering your own salvation. What at present you much want is simplicity, in the Archbishop of Cambray's sense of the word: That grace "whereby the soul casts off all unnecessary reflections upon itself." I wish I could say of you, as I did of a young person many years ago, when I sent her his little book,—

"In art, in nature, can we find  
Colours to picture thee?  
Speak, Cambray's pen, for Sally's mind;  
She is simplicity."

To be enabled to relieve those who are in want is one excellent part of self-denial. But you must not imagine that this will be the only one. No; you have a message from God to some of those, to whom no one almost dare speak the plain truth; and He will confirm the word of his

messenger, especially to those who are in weakness or pain, or under any kind of affliction. At such a time, greatness stands aloof, and they are as accessible as common persons.

In religion, as well as in all things else, it is use that brings perfectness. I have long laboured under the same infirmity with you; and I find but one way to conquer. Take up your cross. When the occasion offers, break through. Speak, though it is pain and grief unto you; and it will be easier and easier, till you resemble an eminent surgeon, who once said to my brother, "Mr. Wesley, you know I would not hurt a fly; I would not give pain to any living thing. But if it were necessary, I would scrape all the flesh off a man's bones, and never turn my head aside."

A clear conviction of the superior advantages of a single life certainly implies a call from God to abide therein; supposing a person has received that gift from God. But we know, all cannot receive this saying: And I think, none ought to make any vows concerning it; because, although we know what we are, and what we can do now, yet we do not know what we shall be. The principal advantages of that state are set down in the little tract on that subject; together with the means which are proper to be used by those who desire to retain those advantages. If at any time Providence should seem to call a person to relinquish those advantages, I would earnestly advise her not to lean to her own understanding; (less in this case than any other;) but to consult one or more spiritual friends, and resolutely stand to their award.

Although I am thoroughly persuaded that those reasonings are, in a great measure, from a preternatural cause, and therefore chiefly to be resisted, by continuing instant in prayer; yet I think Christian prudence not only permits, but requires, you to add other means to this. That which I would especially recommend is reading; particularly Pascal's "Thoughts," (in the "Christian Library,") and the two first tracts in the "Preservative against Unsettled Notions in Religion." These temptations are permitted to give you a deep and lasting conviction of the littleness and weakness of your own understanding, and to show you the absolute need wherein you stand of continual light, as well as of power from on high.

That the regulation of social life is the one end of religion,

is a strange position indeed. I never imagined any but a Deist would affirm this. If that good man, Dr. D., did, I suppose it must be a slip of the pen; for he could not but know, that the love, without which, St. Paul affirms, all we do profits us nothing, is that humble, meek, patient love of our neighbour, which supposes and flows from the love of God.

A degree of reasoning you certainly may and ought to use, only joined with humility and prayer. But what you more immediately want, is faith. Believe, and thou shalt be saved into perfect peace.

I am

Yours affectionately.

DCCVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

*April 17, 1776.*

MR. JONES'S book on the Trinity is both more clear and more strong, than any I ever saw on that subject. If anything is wanting, it is the application, lest it should appear to be a merely speculative doctrine, which has no influence on our hearts or lives; but this is abundantly supplied by my brother's Hymns.

After all the noise that has been made about mysteries, and the trouble we have given ourselves upon that head, nothing is more certain than that no child of man is required to believe any mystery at all. With regard to the Trinity, for instance; what am I required to believe? Not the manner, wherein the mystery lies. This is not the object of my faith; but the plain matter of fact, "These Three are One." This I believe, and only this.

Faith is given according to our present need. You have now such faith as is necessary for your living unto God. As yet you are not called to die. When you are, you shall have faith for this also. To-day improve the faith you now have, and trust God with to-morrow.

Some writers make a distinction, which seems not improper. They speak of the essential part of heaven, and the accessory parts. A man without any learning is naturally led into the same distinction. So the poor dying peasant, in Frederica: "To be sure, heaven is a fine place, a very fine place; but I do not care for that: I want to see God, and to be with him." I do not know whether the usual

question be well stated, "Is heaven a state, or a place?" There is no opposition between these two: It is both the one and the other. It is the place where God more immediately dwells with those saints who are in a glorified state. Homer could only conceive of the place, that it was paved with brass. Milton, in one place, makes heaven's pavement beaten gold; in another, he defines it more sublimely, "the house of God, star-paved." As full an account of this house of God as it can yet enter into our hearts to conceive is given us in various parts of the Revelation. There we have a fair prospect into the holiest, where are, first, "He that sitteth upon the throne;" then the "four living creatures;" next, the "twenty-four elders;" afterwards, the "great multitude, which no man can number;" and, surrounding them all, the various "myriads of angels," whom God hath constituted in a wonderful order.

But what is the essential part of heaven? Undoubtedly it is to see God, to know God, to love God. We shall then know both His nature, and His works of creation and providence, and of redemption. Even in paradise, in the intermediate state between death and the resurrection, we shall learn more concerning these in an hour, than we could in an age, during our stay in the body. We cannot tell indeed how we shall then exist, or what kind of organs we shall have: The soul will not be encumbered with flesh and blood; but probably it will have some sort of ethereal vehicle, even before God clothes us "with our nobler house of empyrean light."

No, my dear friend, no; it is no selfishness to be pleased when you give pleasure. It proves that your mind was antecedently in a right state, and then God answers you in the joy of your heart. So be more and more athirst for that holiness; and thereby give more and more pleasure to

Your affectionate friend.

DCCIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

*December 26, 1776.*

EITHER that text in Ezekiel xxxiii. 8 is to be understood literally, or it has no meaning at all. And nothing is more certain, in fact, than that thousands perish through the neglect of others. And yet God is fully justified therein, because the principal cause of their destruction is



their own neglect; their not working out their own salvation with fear and trembling.

Whatever other ends are answered by prayer, this is one, and it seems a primary one, that we may have the petitions which we ask of Him. Asking is the appointed means of receiving; and that for others, as well as for ourselves; as we may learn partly from reason itself, but more fully from our own experience, and more clearly still from revelation. Reason teaches us to argue from analogy. If you (because you have a regard for me) would do more for a third person at my request than otherwise you would have done, how much more will God, at the request of his beloved children, give blessings to those they pray for, which otherwise he would not have given! And how does all experience confirm this! How many times have the petitions of others been answered to our advantage, and ours on the behalf of others!

But the most decisive of all proofs is the scripture: "Go to my servant Job, and he shall pray for you; for him will I accept." It was not a temporal blessing which was here in question, but a spiritual,—the forgiveness of their sin. So when St. Paul said, "Brethren, pray for us;" he did not desire this on a temporal account only, that "he might be delivered out of the mouth of the lion;" but on a spiritual, "that he might speak boldly, as he ought to speak." But the instances of this are innumerable. In proof of the general truth, that God gives us both temporal and spiritual blessings, in answer to each other's prayers, I need only remind you of one scripture more: "Let them pray over him; and the prayer of faith shall save the sick; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him." The promise in the following verse is still more comprehensive: "Pray one for another, and ye shall be healed" of whatsoever you have confessed to each other.

I lament over every pious young woman who is not as active as possible; seeing every one shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour. O, lose no time! Buy up every opportunity of doing good. It does not appear to me that you ought, on any consideration, to give up the privileges you mention. Nether do I apprehend that you would be more useful in a boarding-school than you are in your present station. I cannot, therefore, advise

you to relinquish it. You have now a large field of action: You have employment enough, both temporal and spiritual; and you have ease enough. Abide in your calling. The pious young woman, whom I particularly lament over, does not live at Bath, but Bristol. But I cannot help her: She allows premises, but holds fast her own conclusion. O, who can bear riches! Who can gain money, without, in some measure, losing grace! I verily believe, if she were as poor as you, she would be as advisable.

Our Church Catechism is utterly improper for children of six or seven years old. Certainly you ought not to teach it them against your own judgment. I should imagine it would be far better to teach them the short Catechism, prefixed to the "Instructions for Children."

I am

Your affectionate friend.

DCCX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

BRISTOL, *March 15, 1777.*

THE sea-breezes may be of service to you, if you have constant exercise. This has brought many from the gates of death. It is beyond all medicine whatever.

I am in great hopes this sickness will not be unto death, but that the glory of the Lord may be revealed. Kempis's rule admits of many exceptions. Whatever was the case then, we have now abundant proof, that very "many are made better by sickness;" unless one would rather say "in sickness." This is one of the grand means which God employs for that purpose. In sickness, many are convinced of sin; many converted to God; and still more confirmed in the ways of God, and brought onward to perfection.

His gracious design in yours seems to be chiefly this,—to wean you yet more from created things; to make and keep you dead to all below. To this end, you are in a manner cut off from everything, that you may find your all in Him. If He should see good to restore you, you will be an instrument fit for the Master's use.

It seems, the best way to profit by that retirement which results from your present weakness, is, to divide your time between reading, meditation, and prayer, intermixed with serious conversation. And when your strength will permit, you must endeavour to do a little good; only take care at

first, not to go too far. Some years since, we had a little society at Southampton: Perhaps you may find some fragments of it remaining. May the God of all grace, after you have suffered awhile, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, and settle you!

I am

Your ever affectionate brother.

DCCXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

*February 7, 1778.*

IT is no great matter whether those doubts arose in your mind by conversing with Mr. H., by reading Mr. Law's later works, or by your own reasoning. But, doubtless, what you mention is a point of the last importance, and deserves our most serious consideration: The rather, because the strange account given of it by some has induced others to deny the doctrine of atonement: although this is the distinguishing point between Deism and Christianity. "The morality of the Bible" (said Lord Huntingdon to me) "I admire; but the doctrine of atonement I cannot comprehend." Here, then, we divide. Give up the atonement, and we are all agreed.

This point, therefore, deserves to be largely considered; but that my time will not permit. And it is the less needful, because I have done it already in my letter to Mr. Law; to which I beg you will give a serious reading, whether you have read it before or not. But it is true, I can no more comprehend it than his Lordship: Perhaps I might say, than the angels of God; the highest created understanding. If we attempt to expatiate in this field, we "shall find no end, in wandering mazes lost!" But the question is, (the only question with me; I regard nothing else,) What saith the Scripture? It says, "God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself;" that "He made him, who knew no sin, to be a sin-offering for us." It says, "He was wounded for our transgressions, and bruised for our iniquities." It says, "We have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the Righteous; and he is the atonement for our sins."

But it is certain, had God never been angry, he could never have been reconciled. So that in affirming this, Mr. Law strikes at the very root of the atonement, and finds a

shorter method of converting Deists, than Mr. Leslie's! Although, therefore, I do not term God, as Mr. Law supposes, "a wrathful Being," which conveys a wrong idea; yet I firmly believe he was angry with all mankind, and that he was reconciled to them by the death of his Son. And I know he was angry with me, till I believed in the Son of his love; and yet this is no impeachment to his mercy. But he is just, as well as merciful.

Undoubtedly, as long as the world stands, there will be a thousand objections to this scriptural doctrine. For still the preaching of Christ crucified will be foolishness to the wise men of the world. However, let us hold it fast in our heart, as well as in our understanding; and we shall find by happy experience, that this is to us the wisdom of God, and the power of God.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

LONDON, *October 18, 1778.*

I AM not unwilling to write to you, even upon a tender subject, because you will weigh the matter fairly. And if you have a little prepossession, (which who has not?) yet you are willing to give it up to reason.

The original Methodists were all of the Church of England; and the more awakened they were, the more zealously they adhered to it, in every point, both of doctrine and discipline. Hence we inserted in the very first Rules of our Society, "They that leave the Church, leave us." And this we did, not as a point of prudence, but a point of conscience. We believed it unlawful to separate from the Church, unless sinful terms of communion were imposed. Just as did Mr. Philip Henry, and most of those holy men that were contemporary with him.

"But the Ministers of it do not preach the Gospel."—Neither do some of the Independent or Anabaptist Ministers. Calvinism is not the Gospel: Nay, it is farther from it, than most of the sermons I hear at the Church. These are very frequently unevangelical, but they are not anti-evangelical. They are (to say no more) equally wrong; and they are far more dangerously wrong. Few of the Methodists are now in danger of imbibing error from the Church Ministers; but

they are in great danger of imbibing the grand error, Calvinism, from some of the Dissenting Ministers. Perhaps thousands have done it already; most of whom have drawn back to perdition. I see more instances of this than any one else can do; and on this ground also, exhort all who would keep to the Methodists, and from Calvinism, to go to the church, and not to the meeting.

But to speak freely: I myself find more life in the Church Prayers, than in any formal extemporary prayers of Dissenters. Nay, I find more profit in sermons on either good tempers, or good works, than in what are vulgarly called Gospel sermons. That term has now become a mere cant word: I wish none of our society would use it. It has no determinate meaning. Let but a pert, self-sufficient animal, that has neither sense nor grace, bawl out something about Christ, or his blood, or justification by faith, and his hearers cry out, "What a fine Gospel sermon!" Surely the Methodists have not so learned Christ! We know no Gospel without salvation from sin. There is a Romish error which many Protestants swallow unawares. It is an avowed doctrine of the Romish Church, that the "pure intention of the Minister is essential to the validity of the sacraments." If so, we ought not to attend the ministrations of an unholy man. But in flat opposition to this, our Church teaches, in the Twenty-eighth Article, that "the unworthiness of the Minister does not hinder the validity of the sacraments." Although, therefore, there are many disagreeable circumstances, yet I advise all our friends to keep to the Church. God has surely raised us up for the Church chiefly, that a little leaven may leaven the whole lump. I wish you would seriously consider that little tract, "Reasons against a Separation from the Church of England." Those reasons were never yet answered, and, I believe, they never will.

I am glad you have undertaken that labour of love, and trust it will increase both your spiritual and bodily strength.

I am, my dear sister,

Yours very affectionately.

DCCXIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

WARRINGTON, *May 17, 1781.*

I HAVE written to Mr. Pawson, and am in hopes that Keynsham will be no more neglected. I did not expect you

would meet with any trial of this kind; but it is well to be prepared for all.

When Molly Maddern taught a few children at Kingswood, I saw a truly Christian school. To make the children Christians was her first care; afterwards they were taught what women need to learn. I saw another Christian school at Leytonstone, under the care of Miss Bosanquet. I do not remember I discovered any defect, either in the former or the latter: I observed nothing done which I wished to be omitted; nothing omitted which I wished to have done. May I speak without reserve? I verily think I may. I hoped to see a third Christian school at —; and I did so for a season. But I cannot say, that for some years it has quite answered my expectations. "What then was the matter?" I can hardly tell. I do not know how to express it. I did not see the simplicity which I saw at first. More of the world seemed to be crept in. Good breeding I love; but how difficult is it to keep it quite clear of affectation, and of a something which does not well agree with that mind which was in Christ!

I want your children to be trained up quite in the manner that Miss Bosanquet's were. Although they were very genteel, yet there was something in their whole manner which told you they belonged to another world. Mrs. Castleman was one of Molly Maddern's scholars. She is genteel; yet she is a Christian.

Make Christians, my dear sister, make Christians! Let this be your leading view. Make such Christians as Miranda, as Miss —; such as Miss M. was! Let everything else which you teach be subordinate to this. Mind one thing in all! Let it be said of the young women you educate,—

*"Grace was in all her steps, heaven in her eye,  
In all her gestures sanctity and love."*

But what power do you want to execute this! Ask, and it shall be given you! May you not have the earnest of it this moment?

I am, my dear sister,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCXIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, Near LEEDS, July 17, 1781.

WHEN the school began at —, it was in all respects a school after my own heart; conducted exactly on the same principles as that of Miss Bosauquet, at Leytonstone. But it declined from its original simplicity, I know not how, by slow degrees; indeed so insensibly, that I hardly know what to blame, and so know not how to cure it.

If I have to meet the society at Bristol again, I shall kill or cure those unwise and unkind parents who make their children finer than themselves. I believe I shall make their ears tingle. As to you, I advise you, first, to be a Bible Christian yourself, inwardly and outwardly. Be not a hair's breadth more conformable to the fashions of the world than you were when I last saw you. Then train up your children in the self-same way. Say to them, with all mildness and firmness, "Be ye followers of me, even as I am of Christ." Whoever is pleased or displeased, keep to this; to Christian, primitive simplicity. Perhaps at first you will lose some scholars thereby; but regard not that: God will provide you more. And be assured, nothing shall be wanting that is in the power of,

My dear sister,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCXV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, HAVERFORDWEST, August 18, 1784.

FROM the time I heard you were rejected by —, I have had a tender regard for you, and a strong hope that without regard to the wisdom, or spirit, or customs of the world, you would (as those at — did once)

Square your useful life below  
By reason and by grace.

Hitherto, you have not at all deceived my hope; and I am persuaded you never will. In some of the young ones you will undoubtedly find your labour has not been in vain. What they will be, one cannot judge yet; therefore Solomon's advice is good: "In the morning sow thy seed, and in the evening withhold not thy hand; for thou knowest not which shall prosper."

It seems God himself has already decided the question concerning dancing. He hath shown his approbation of your conduct, by sending those children to you again. If dancing be not evil in itself, yet it leads young women to numberless evils. And the hazard of these on the one side, seems far to overbalance the little inconveniences on the other. Therefore thus much may certainly be said, You have chosen the more excellent way.

I would recommend very few novels to young persons, for fear they should be too desirous of more. Mr. Brooke wrote one more, (besides the "Earl of Moreland,") "The History of the Human Heart." I think it is well worth reading; though it is not equal to his former production. The want of novels may be supplied by well-chosen histories; such as, "The Concise History of England," "The Concise History of the Church," Rollin's Ancient History, Hooke's Roman History, (the only impartial one extant,) and a few more. For the elder and more sensible children, Malebranche's "Search after Truth" is an excellent French book. Perhaps you might add, Locke's "Essay on the Human Understanding," with the Remarks in the Arminian Magazine. I had forgotten that beautiful book, "The Travels of Cyrus," whether in French or English.

I always am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCXVI.—*To Mr. John Baxendale, of Wigan*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

BRISTOL, *March 7, 1783.*

I HAD much satisfaction when I was with you last, and hope to spend a night with you again; though I cannot yet fix the time. I agree with you, it would be well if the chapel were properly settled. You do well to lose no opportunity of enlarging your borders. It is an acceptable time. We are now more especially called to preach the Gospel to every creature: And many of the last shall be first. If we live to meet, I shall be glad to converse with that good young woman you speak of. The happy death of that poor mourner was a token for good. It was intended to encourage you in warning every one, and exhorting every



one; even though you do not see any immediate fruit. In due time you shall reap, if you faint not. Strongly exhort all believers to go on to perfection.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      LONDON, *February 19, 1784.*

You do well to put me in mind of my promise; for otherwise I might have forgotten it. It seems at length the time is come for poor Wigan to lift up its head. I shall be glad to give them a sermon at Winyate myself, in my way from Wigan to Bolton. We should mark the places where God is pleased to work eminently, and strive to pour in all the help we can.

You would do well to read over and consider the large "Minutes of the Conference." See if you can thoroughly agree with what is there laid down, both with regard to doctrine and discipline. If you can, then set your hand to the plough in God's name, and never look back. Begin as soon as you please ordering your affairs, and go on with circumspection. Meantime, stir up the gift of God that is in you, and do all the good you can.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      LONDON, *February 25, 1785.*

You send me an agreeable account of the work of God in and near Wigan. Indeed His work will flourish in every place where full sanctification is clearly and strongly preached. This year I only call on a few societies in my way. My business is with the societies in Ireland. I hope to call at Manchester on Saturday, April 2; at Bolton, the 4th; Wigan, Tuesday, the 5th. Perhaps I might preach at Winyate on my way thither.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      MANCHESTER, *April 3, 1787.*

I HAVE throughly considered your case; and, considering two things,—first, the peculiar love of the people towards you, and, secondly, your usefulness to many of them,—I judge that Providence clearly calls you to remain at Wigan.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

---

DCCXX.—*To —.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      LONDON, *December 23, 1782.*

MANY years since, when I read those words in the lesson for the day, “Son of man, I take from thee the desire of thine eyes with a stroke,” I was so affected, that it was not without difficulty I could speak a word more. But it was not long before He enabled me to say, “Good is the will of the Lord.” I trust He has taught you that great lesson, which reason alone cannot teach. He has always one end, whether in his pleasing or painful dispensations, to wean us from all things here below, and to unite us to himself. You see the present dispensation of his providence in a true light. He is vindicating his right to your whole heart, and claiming you for his own. And He can make you large amends for all He has taken away, by giving you himself.

Let not this medicine be without its full effect. “It is a great loss to lose an affliction.” Now is the time that you are loudly called to give up yourself wholly to God. It would be your wisest way, to select two or three for your intimate acquaintances, who are deeply alive to God; and to have no farther intercourse with those who know not God, than necessary business requires. If you form this resolution, and keep steadily to it, you will meet our dear friend again in a little time. May God enable you so to do! His grace is sufficient for you.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXXI.—*To Miss Frances Godfrey, of Gainsborough.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

LEEDS, *July 31, 1784.*

I THANK YOU for giving me so full an account of that extraordinary deliverance. I doubt not but those that were called epileptic fits were owing to a messenger of Satan whom God permitted to buffet you. Theretore, all human helps were vain. Nothing but the power of God could deliver you. And if you continue to walk humbly and closely with God, he will continue to bruise Satan under your feet, and will add bodily health to the spirit of an healthful mind. Do all you can for so good a Master! And see that you go on to perfection, till you know all that love of God that passeth knowledge.

I am, my dear sister,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

LONDON, *August 5, 1788.*

YOU have indeed escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowler; the snare is broken, and you are delivered. Certainly you have great reason to praise Him who has brought you to the knowledge of his truth; and not only given you to know, but to experience, the truth as it is in Jesus. I felt a love for you from the first time I saw you, when you was under those grievous trials. Now that you have recovered some measure of health and strength, employ it all to the glory of Him that gave it. Now go on to perfection! Hunger and thirst after righteousness, till you are satisfied therewith; then you will be more and more near to,

My dear Fanny,

Yours affectionately.

My love to your mother.

DCCXXIII.—*To the Same.*LEEDS, *August 2, 1789.*

IT gives me pleasure, my dear Fanny, to hear that you still continue in the good way. Still press to the mark, to the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. From what you have already experienced, you know there is one happiness in the earth below, and in heaven above.

You know God alone can satisfy your soul either in earth or heaven. Cleave to Him with full purpose of heart. If you seek happiness in anything but Him, you must be disappointed. I hope you find satisfaction, likewise, in some of your Christian companions. It is a blessed thing to have fellow-travellers to the New Jerusalem. If you cannot find any, you must make them; for none can travel that road alone. Then labour to 'help each other on, that you may be altogether Christians. Wishing you health both of body and mind,

I am, my dear Fanny,  
Yours affectionately

---

DCCXXIV.—*To the Rev. Walter Sellon.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *December 1, 1757*

IF only one stone were removed out of the way, the thing might be immediately effected. Only prevail upon John Brandon to spend a month or two in London, or any other part of England, and I will immediately send another Preacher to Leicester, Ashby, and the adjacent places. But, during the present scarcity of labourers, we cannot spare a second for that small Circuit till you spare us the first. It is surprising that, from one end of the land to the other, so little good is done in a regular way. What have you to do but to follow that way which the providence of God points out? And when they drive you from Smithsby, you know where to have both employment, and the things needful for the body. I think also it will be highly profitable for your soul to be near those who have more experience in the ways of God.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXXV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *December 30, 1766.*

IT is certain that nothing less than the mighty power of God can ever effect that union. However, in me, *mora non erit ulla*: \* And I doubt not you are of the same mind.

Begin then. Set upon John Goodwin as soon as you

please. You are very capable of the work: And you have something more leisure than I have. But I would not have you stint yourself for room. The book should be in the letter wherein my Abridgment of the "Serious Call" is printed. And if it have three hundred and fifty pages, well.

Are you tired with ploughing on the sand? Then come away to better work. It is true you would have less money, only forty pounds a year; but you would have more comfort, and more fruit of your labour. Here is a wide and glorious field of action. You might exceedingly help a willing people, as well as strengthen the hands of

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXXVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, WAKEFIELD, July 9, 1768.

I AM glad you have undertaken the "Redemption Redeemed." But you must in nowise forget Dr. Owen's Answer to it: Otherwise you will leave a loophole for all the Calvinists to creep out. The Doctor's evasions you must needs cut in pieces, either interweaving your answers with the body of the work, under each head, or adding them in marginal notes.

Your ever affectionate brother.

DCCXXVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, December 30, 1769.

IT is not yet determined whether I should go to America, or not. I have been importuned some time; but *nil sat firmiter video*.\* I must have a clear call before I am at liberty to leave Europe.

You should heat your milk, but never let it boil. Boiling robs it of the most nutritious particles. Take care to keep always your body moderately open, and your stomach will not often complain. Mr. Viner did you great honour. Do not make too much haste in dealing with Elisha [Coles]. I am afraid the treatise will be too short. And pray add a word or two to Mr. Toplady, not only with regard to Zanchius, but his slander on the Church of England. You would do well to give a reading to both his tracts. He does certainly believe himself to be the greatest genius in England.

\* I do not yet perceive sufficiently strong grounds for proceeding. — EDIT.

Mr. Johnson was grievously short in not mentioning that "other thing" at the Conference, or not till all the money was gone. However, the matter is not much. I think we can procure you thirty pounds in February. I believe you strengthen the hands of our Preachers all you can. You will find Billy Minethorp a right man. His resolution in the late affair was admirable. I have scarce ever seen such another instance in the kingdom.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXXVIII.—*To the Same.*

LEWISHAM, *February 21, 1770.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

Do not make too much haste. Give everything the last touch. It will be enough if the papers meet me at Manchester before the end of March. I believe it will be the best way to bestow a distinct pamphlet on Mr. Toplady. Surely wisdom will die with him! I believe we can easily get his other tract, which it would be well to sift to the very foundation, in order to stop the mouth of that vain boaster. I am to set out for Bristol, March 5th; and from Bristol, March 12th.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXXIX.—*To the Same.*

DEAR WALTER,

*February 1, 1772.*

YOU do not understand your information right. Observe, "I am going to America to turn Bishop." You are to understand it *in sensu composito*.\* I am not to be a Bishop till I am in America. While I am in Europe, therefore, you have nothing to fear. But as soon as ever you hear of my being landed at Philadelphia, it will be time for your apprehensions to revive. It is true some of our Preachers would not have me stay so long; but I keep my old rule: *Festina lentè*.†

I am, dear Walter,

Your affectionate brother.

\* In its compound sense.—EDIT.

† Proceed with caution.—EDIT.

DCCXXX.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, June 10, 1784.

I SINCERELY thank you for your speedy and satisfactory answer. T. Maxfield affirms that you either wrote such a deed, or signed it. So fare it well.

On the 28th of last June I finished my eightieth year. When I was young I had weak eyes, trembling hands, and abundance of infirmities. But, by the blessing of God, I have outlived them all. I have no infirmities now, but what I judge to be inseparable from flesh and blood. This hath God wrought. I am afraid you want the grand medicine which I use,—exercise, and change of air. I believe what you say concerning that place in the Journal is true. I can trust your memory better than my own.

You used to meet me when I came near you; but you seem, of late, to have forgotten

Your old friend and brother.

DCCXXXI.—*To Miss D. Perronet.*

I AM sensible you have many trials; not only such as are grievous to flesh and blood, but such as oppose those desires which are not from nature, but the Spirit of God; and if you chose for yourself, you ought not to choose the situation you are now in. If you did, it would be a great hurt to your soul. It would hinder the work of God in you. But you do not choose for yourself; God chooses for you: And He cannot err; so that you may safely say,

“ I'll trust my great Physician's skill:  
What he prescribes can ne'er be ill.”

It is true, so it may seem to us, because we are dim-sighted, and dull of understanding: But in this case too we may apply his word, “ Blessed are they who have not seen, and yet have believed.” O believe, and feel Him near! Believe, and experience that blessedness. He calls you into a stormy path; but did He not himself tread it before you? And does He not go with you through the fire, so that you are not burned, neither can the flames kindle upon you? Lie, then, as clay in the potter's hand, that He may stamp you with all his image. Be still, and know that He is God;

—your God, your love, your all. Be as a little child before Him. The word of God to them of old, "Speak to the children of Israel, that they go forward," is undoubtedly spoken to you. Horses, and chariots, and armies, and mountains, and seas, cannot hinder you; for God is on your side. You have Him with you who has all power in heaven. O trust Him, and you shall praise Him! And do not fail to remember in your prayers

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXXXII.—*To the Same.*

BY and by you shall have the abiding witness of His Spirit; and He will shine upon his own work; and why not now? Ask, and it shall be given you. The Lord is at hand; and He cannot deny himself. Your trials, you know, are all chosen by God. It is the cup which your Father has given you; and he does and will bless it, as long as He is pleased to give it. Just when it is best, He will take it away, and give you outward fellowship with his children. Continue in private prayer, in spite of all coldness and wanderings, and you shall soon pray without ceasing.

DCCXXXIII.—*To the Same.*

THAT remarkable sinking of spirits did not necessarily imply any preceding unfaithfulness. It might possibly be owing to the body. At such a season, you have nothing to do but simply to give yourself up into the hands of God. Tell him, "Lord, I am thine. I will be thine. I desire to be thine alone for ever. Thou shalt answer for me. Keep thou thine own; and let me do, or suffer, just as seemeth thee good." What can hurt us, if our eye be single? Look forward! Holiness and heaven are before you. You have no need to determine whether your heart is or is not made new, till the witness speaks within you, and puts it beyond all doubt. You are led in a rough way: It is a safe one. A more smooth way would be more dangerous. Your earnestly desiring the most excellent means of grace, is neither sin nor infirmity. It is right to say, "My soul hath a desire and longing to enter into the courts of the house of my God." Read the eighty-fourth psalm, and try if your heart answers to it. At present, exercise all the faith you have; and it will be increased day by day.



DCCXXXIV.—*To the Same.*DUBLIN, *March 30, 1771.*

I do not wonder you should find such a nearness to M. B. She is an amiable young woman. When she was with us last, I marked her every word, and almost every meaning; but I could find nothing to reprove. There was in all her actions sanctity and love. God sent her to you in an acceptable time. She came with a good message, and blessed is she that believed; for there shall be a performance of those things which were spoken unto her. He will water you every moment, and on this depends the continuance of the great salvation. It will surely continue, if you watch and pray; and yet not without temptation. I expect temptations will come about you,

Thick as autumnal leaves that strew the vales.

But what are temptations to you? He giveth occasions of fighting, that you may conquer. If there is no fight, there is no victory. There is no general rule whereby we can always determine whether a thought come from a good or an evil spirit; but on all particular occasions we may plead that promise, "If a man be willing to do my will, he shall know of the doctrine," or suggestion, by the light then given, "whether it be of God."

I am, &c.

DCCXXXV.—*To Miss J. C. M.*

*January 30, 1762.*

WHEN you was justified, you had a direct witness that your sins were forgiven: Afterward, this witness was frequently intermitted; and yet you did not doubt of it. In like manner, you have had a direct witness that you are saved from sin; and this witness is frequently intermitted; and yet even then you do not doubt of it. But I much doubt, if God withdraws either the one witness or the other, without some occasion given on our part. I never knew any one receive the abiding witness gradually: Therefore I incline to think, this also is given in a moment. But there will be still, after this, abundant room for a gradual growth in grace.

DCCXXXVI.—*To the Same.*WHITEHAVEN, *June 24, 1764.*

You give me an agreeable account of the state of things in London, and such as calls for much thankfulness. From different letters I find that there is at length a calm season; God having rebuked the wind and the seas. But I am concerned for you. I cannot doubt a moment but you was saved from sin. Your every act, word, thought, was love, whatever it be now. You was, in a measure, a living witness of the perfection I believe and preach,—the only perfection of which we are capable while we remain in the body. To carry perfection higher is to sap the foundation of it, and destroy it from the face of the earth. I am jealous over you: I am afraid lest, by grasping at a shadow, you should have let go the substance; lest, by aiming at a perfection which we cannot have till hereafter, you should cast away that which now belongs to the children of God. This is love filling the heart. Surely it did fill yours, and it may do now, by simple faith. O cast not away your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward! Converse much with those who are all alive; who strive, not to pull you down, but to build you up. Accursed be that humility by which shipwreck is made of the faith. Look up, and receive power from on high. Receive all you had once, and more than all. Give no place to evil reasoning. You have need to be guarded by a steady, and yet tender, hand. Be as a little child. The Lord is at hand. He is yours; therefore shall you lack nothing.

I am, &amp;c.

DCCXXXVII.—*To the Same.*NEWCASTLE, *June 3, 1774.*

You are a living witness of two great truths: The one, that there cannot be a lasting, steady, enjoyment of pure love, without the direct testimony of the Spirit concerning it; without God's Spirit shining on his own work: The other, that setting perfection too high is the ready way to drive it out of the world. A third thing you may learn from your own experience is, that the heart of man contains things that one would think incompatible. Such are the tempers and sensations of those especially that are renewed in love. Some

of them seem to be quite inconsistent with others; so that, if we give way to reasoning on this head, if we will not believe what God has wrought till we can account for all the circumstances attending it, till we know how these things can be, we shall bewilder ourselves more and more, and

Find no end, in wandering mazes lost.

I believe one thing which has hurt you is, that kind of silence. One use of your present journey may be this:—Learn to speak for God without either fear or shame. You have need to be more simple. Look straight forward; eye one thing! Do not consider that you are a woman, or a gentlewoman. Do not you bear an higher character? What! know you not that your very body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you? Therefore glorify God with your body and with your spirit. Give Him the praise that is due unto his name. I am glad you are going to Stroud. It is probable you will see that good young woman, A. Esther. If you do, I hope you will be enabled to encourage her, that she may hold fast the good gift of God. Her experience was exceeding clear when I talked with her last. If possible, guard her against evil reasoning; that she may never let go her simplicity. Peace be with all your spirits!

DCCXXXVIII.—*To the Same.*

ALNWICK.

SOMETIMES I have been afraid lest you should sustain loss for want of some reproach or disgrace. Your being young, and a woman of fortune, and not wanting in understanding, were circumstances which, according to the ordinary course of Providence, keep reproach at a distance. However, you shall not escape it, if our blessed Lord sees it to be the best means of purifying your soul. You shall have it just in due measure, and in due time; for He will withhold from you no manner of thing that is good. There is one with me here who seems as yet to be under a peculiar dispensation;—to be wholly screened from the reproach of Christ. There is something in the natural temper, the understanding, the person, and the behaviour, of Lady M., which has hitherto prevented reproach; although she is much devoted to God, and in many things quite singular. But she is not careful about it; being willing, whenever He shall see it best, and in

whatever measure He shall choose, to share the portion of her Lord. The knowledge of ourselves is true humility; and without this we cannot be freed from vanity; a desire of praise being inseparably connected with every degree of pride. Continual watchfulness is absolutely necessary, to hinder this from stealing in upon us. But as long as we steadily watch and pray, we shall not enter into temptation. It may, and will, assault us on every side; but it cannot prevail.

---

DCCXXXIX.—*To Miss Ritchie, afterwards Mrs. Mortimer.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

May 8, 1774.

IT is not common for me to write to any one first: I only answer those that write to me. But I willingly make an exception with regard to you; for it is not a common concern that I feel for you. You are just rising into life; and I would fain have you, not almost, but altogether, a Christian. I would have you just such a one as Miranda. And you cannot be content with less: You cannot be satisfied with right notions; neither with harmlessness; no, nor yet with barely external religion, how exact soever it be. Nay, you will not be content with a taste of inward religion. This it has pleased God to give you already. You know in whom you have believed; you have tasted of the powers of the world to come: But

A taste of love cannot suffice;  
Your soul for all His fulness cries!

Cry on, and never cease! Mind not those who rebuke you, that you should hold your peace. Cry so much the more, "Jesus of Nazareth, take away all my sins! Leave none remaining! Speak the word only, and I shall be healed!"  
Write freely to

Yours affectionately.

DCCXL.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

June 3, 1774.

I SHALL much want to hear that you stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made you free. It is absolutely certain that you never need lose anything of what

God has wrought. He is able, and he is willing, to give you always what he has once given. He will do it, provided you watch unto prayer, and stir up the gift of God which is in you. There is one invariable rule which God observes in all his dealings with the children of men: "Unto him that hath," uses what he hath, "shall be given, and he shall have more abundantly." When we are justified, He gives us one talent; to those that use this He gives more. When we are sanctified, He gives, as it were, five talents. And if you use the whole power which is then given, He will not only continue that power, but increase it day by day. Meantime be not ignorant of Satan's devices: He will assault you on every side: He will cast temptations upon you,

Thick as autumnal leaves that strew the ground.

But with every temptation there shall be a way to escape; and you shall be more than conqueror through Him that loves you. You can do, you can suffer, His whole will. Go on in His name, and in the power of His might; and fulfil the joy of

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

*June 23, 1774.*

It gives me pleasure to find that you still stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made you free; and that in spite of various temptations. And these indeed you are still to expect; for Satan neither slumbers nor sleeps; and he will strive to torment, if he cannot destroy. Nay, God himself, as one observes, "prepareth for thee occasions of fighting, that thou mayest conquer." So that you are still called to fight the good fight of faith, and thus to lay hold on eternal life. One admirable help toward conquering all is, for believers to keep close together; to walk hand in hand, and provoke one another to love and to good works. And one means of retaining the pure love of God is, the exhorting others to press earnestly after it. When you meet on a Sunday morning, I doubt not but this will be the chief matter both of your prayers and conversation. You may then expect to be more and more abundantly endued with power from on high; witnessing that He is faithful

and just both to forgive us our sins, and also to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

I remain

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

July 31, 1774.

IT gives me much pleasure to find that you stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made you free. Trials you will have; but they will only be means of uniting you to Him more closely. While your eye is singly fixed on Him, your whole body will be full of light. You will be enabled

To trace His example,  
The world to disdain,  
And constantly trample  
On pleasure and pain.

While you are doing this, you will not find many doubts of the way wherein you should go. The unction of the Holy One will shine in your heart, and shine upon your path; especially if you frequently consider the "Directions for preserving Fervency of Spirit," and the "Farther Thoughts upon Christian Perfection." If you should at any time be in doubt concerning any point either of doctrine or practice, use me as a friend; and speak freely to

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

September 1, 1774.

IT is an admirable Providence which keeps you thus weak in body, till your soul has received more strength. It is good that you should feel how very helpless you are, that you may hang upon Him continually. Are you always sensible of His presence? In what sense do you pray without ceasing? Can you in everything give thanks? And have you a witness in yourself, that all you say and do is well-pleasing to Him?

Could you but use constant exercise in the open air, I think you would need no other medicine. But it is certain, be your body well or ill, all is best, as long as your soul is stayed on Him. And why should not this be without any intermission, till your spirit returns to God? nay, with a

continual increase? For this is your calling, to sink deeper and deeper into Him; out of his fulness to receive more and more, till you know all that love of God that passeth knowledge.

I hope you do not pass any day without spending some time in private exercises. What do you read at those seasons? Do you read, as it were, by chance; or have you a method in reading? I want you to make the best use that is possible of every means of improvement. Now is the time! Now you have the fervour of youth on your side. Now animal nature is in its perfection. Now your faculties are in their vigour, And happy are you, who have been enabled to begin your race betimes! I hope you are just now minding this one thing; looking unto Jesus, and pressing on to the mark, to the prize of our high calling! O run, and never tire! So shall your love and zeal always be a comfort to

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

*November 29, 1774.*

It gives me pleasure to hear that you have recovered your health. If you find any fresh illness, you should let me know: We must not neglect the body, although the main thing is a healthful mind. There are many excellent things in Madam Guion's Works; and there are many that are exceedingly dangerous. The more so, because the good things make way for the mischievous ones. And it is not easy, unless for those of much experience, to distinguish the one from the other. Perhaps, therefore, it might be safest for you chiefly to confine yourself to what we have published. You will then neither be perplexed with various sentiments, nor with various language; and you will find enough on every head of religion, speculative or practical.

I know not whether any method of reading would be more profitable, than to read a chapter of the Old Testament, with the Notes, every morning; and every evening a chapter, or, at least, a section, in the New Testament. At other times of the day, I advise you to read our Works regularly from the beginning; marking any tract, or part of a tract, which you find most useful, that you may make it matter of meditation. Some of the most useful to believers

are, Mr. Law's tracts, the Lives of Mr. Brainerd, De Renty, and Thomas Walsh, the tracts translated from the French, and those upon Christian Perfection.

I am glad you have been with our dear sister C. Converse as much as you can with those of her spirit: They are the excellent ones of the earth. You must not give place, no, not for a day, to inactivity. Nothing is more apt to grow upon the soul: The less you speak or act for God, the less you may. If elder persons do not speak, you are called, like Elihu, to supply this lack of service. Whether you are young or old, is not material: Speak, and spare not! Redeem the time: Be fervent in spirit! Buy up every opportunity; and be always a comfort to

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

January 17, 1775.

I BEG, if you love me, you will send me a minute account how you are, both in body and mind. Some of the Mystic writers do not choose to speak plainly; some of them know not how. But, blessed be God, we do; and we know, there is nothing deeper, there is nothing better, in heaven or earth, than love! There cannot be, unless there were something higher than the God of love! So that we see distinctly what we have to aim at. We see the prize, and the way to it! Here is the height, here is the depth, of Christian experience! "God is love; and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him."

Mr. Fletcher has given us a wonderful view of the different dispensations which we are under. I believe that difficult subject was never placed in so clear a light before. It seems God has raised him up for this very thing,—

To vindicate eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to man.

By confining yourself to those who write clearly, your understanding will be opened and strengthened, far more than by reading a multiplicity of authors; at the same time your heart will be enlarged, and, I trust, more and more united to

Yours affectionately.



DCCXLVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

March 23, 1775.

I AM glad you have had an opportunity of spending a little time at L—, and with Miss B. This, I doubt not, has been a blessed means of increasing your spiritual strength. And I trust you will find more and more opportunity of using whatever strength you have, even at O—. Wherever the work of God revives, we are more particularly called to work together with him. Now be instant in season and out of season! Redeem the time! Buy up every opportunity. In the morning sow thy seed, and in the evening slack not thy hand; and God will give the increase!

In a day or two I expect to embark. Possibly in autumn we may meet again; and, in the mean time, I am persuaded you will not forget

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

November 29, 1775.

"TEMPTATIONS," says one, "and distinct deliverances from temptations, avail much." I do not doubt but you have found it so, with regard to your late trials; although there are none which it is harder to withstand at your time of life. I am glad you were enabled to withstand that plausible temptation, which few young women have power to resist; particularly when you had to encounter the persuasions of those you esteemed and loved.

Mr. C., I think, will do some good; and I am persuaded he will do no hurt. I am glad Mr. T. has given you a little more employment; and a glorious employment it is! to be a "fellow-worker with God!" O may you be found faithful! Be zealous for God! Be diligent! Be patient! And never forget

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

July 15, 1776.

I SUPPOSE you wait for my writing first. Nay, I hope this is the case; otherwise, I should be afraid that you were fallen ill again. How is your health? (And how is your

mind? Do you find as near and as constant a communion with God as ever? Are you always happy? Does no circumstance interrupt or deaden your spirit of prayer? Do you feel nothing contrary to resignation? Can you say with your whole heart,—

“Determined all thy will to’ obey,  
Thy blessings I restore:  
Give, Lord, or take thy gifts away,  
I praise thee evermore?”

The word of our Lord to you is, “Feed my lambs.” Methinks I see you giving yourself up, as far as possibly you can, to that blessed work; carrying the weak, as it were, in your bosom, and gently leading the rest to the waters of comfort. Meantime your own soul will enjoy a well of water, springing up into everlasting life. If you find any perplexing temptation in your way, you should not scruple to let me know. Youth is the season for many of the most dangerous temptations incident to human nature. But indeed you are preserved from many of these, by your settled determination to slight all dreams of creature happiness, and give your heart to Him who alone is worthy. And believe me to remain

Yours affectionately.

DCCXLIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

*August 12, 1776.*

To talk of “thinking without ideas,” is stark nonsense. Whatever is presented to your mind is an idea; so that, to be without ideas, is not to think at all. Seeing, feeling, joy, grief, pleasure, pain, are ideas. Therefore, to be without ideas, is to be without either sense or reason. Mr. — certainly does not understand the word. He mistakes it for images.

O desire nothing different in nature from love! There is nothing higher in earth or heaven. Whatever he speaks of, which seems to be higher, is either natural or preternatural enthusiasm. Desire none of those extraordinaries. Such a desire might be an inlet to a thousand delusions. I wish your desires may all centre in that,—

“I want the witness, Lord,  
That all I do is right!  
According to thy will and word,  
Well pleasing in thy sight!

“ I ask no higher state,  
 Indulge me but in this !  
 And soon, or later, then translate  
 To my eternal bliss.”

You say, Satan had laid a snare for you. What snare was that? I am concerned in whatever concerns you. O continue to remember, in all your prayers,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCL.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

September 20, 1776.

SOME time since, you certainly were in danger of exchanging the plain religion of the Bible, for the refined one of Mysticism; a danger which few can judge of but those that feel it. This my brother and I did for several years. This scheme, especially as Madam Guion has polished and improved it, gives a delicate satisfaction to whatever of curiosity and self-esteem lies hid in the heart. It was particularly liable to make an impression upon you, as it came recommended by one you had a friendship for, whom you knew to be upright and sincere, and who had both sense and a pleasing address. At the same time, that subtle enemy, “who beguiled Eve by his subtilty,” would not fail to enforce the temptation. The more reason you have to bless God, that you are delivered out of the snare of the fowler.

“He that followeth me,” says our Lord, “walketh not in darkness.” Nothing can be more certain. Closely follow Him, and you will never come into any darkness of soul. On the contrary, your light shall shine more and more unto the perfect day. Nothing but sin can bring you into confusion; and this, I trust, God has bruised under your feet. Surely then you have no need of ever losing the least part of what God has given you. But you may “stand fast in glorious liberty” till your spirit returns to God.

I remain

Yours affectionately.

DCCLI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

June 16, 1777.

I WRITE a few lines, on condition that you will not write, if it does you hurt: It certainly will, if you lean upon

your breast, or if you write much at a time. But perhaps (of which you yourself must be the judge) you might write a few lines now and then. Do you still find your will wholly given up? Have you no choice as to life or death? And have you no choice as to the manner of your death? Are you not afraid of the pain of dissolution? Can you freely part with all your friends here?

And to an unknown somewhere wing away?

Do you never lose your consciousness of the presence of the Three-One God? And is your testimony of his Spirit, that you are saved from inward sin, never obscured? Are you always happy? Do you always enjoy a hope full of immortality? I ask many questions, that you may have an opportunity of being a witness for God, whether you live or die. I think, in life or death, you will not forget

Yours affectionately.

DCCLII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

*August 2, 1777.*

It is with great pleasure I learn, that God has been pleased to lift you up from the gates of death, and that your strength is considerably increased, although you are far from being out of danger. When, and in what manner, was this change wrought? Can you impute it to any outward circumstance? How did you feel your mind affected, when you found a return of strength? Did you rejoice or grieve? or calmly desire, "Let the will of the Lord be done?" In what respects are you better than when I saw you? In what respects are you the same, or worse? Give me as particular an account as you can. Do you find your soul as much alive to God as ever? Does not the corruptible body press down the soul? Do you feel faith's abiding impression, realizing things to come? Do you live in eternity, and walk in eternity? And do you still (as Mr. De Benty says) "carry about with you an experimental verity, and a fulness of the presence of the ever-blessed Trinity?"

I remain

Yours affectionately.

DCCLIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

August 24, 1777.

EVER since I was informed that it has pleased God in some measure to restore your strength, I have lived in hope that he will yet be entreated, and will give you back to our prayers. Do you still find the same consciousness of the presence of the ever-blessed Trinity? Do you find it day and night? In the midst of trials, does it remain the same? But one would be ready to ask, excepting a weak body, what trials can you have?

Secluded from the world, and all its care,  
Hast thou to joy or grieve, to hope or fear?

Unless it be for this,—You long to please all for their good; but you cannot succeed. You would fain give them satisfaction; but they will not be satisfied. This may be a close trial.

Send as particular an account as you can of the state both of your body and mind, to

Yours affectionately.

DCCLIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

October 6, 1778.

SINCE I saw her, I have had the pleasure of receiving two letters from —; and I am more and more convinced, that she has sustained no real loss from her late trials. Indeed the greatness of them proved the greatness of her grace; otherwise, she must have utterly fainted. But I am afraid the poor tenement of clay has received such a shock as will not easily be repaired. The wonderful behaviour of Mrs. — was more than it was well able to bear. But the comfort is, He with whom we have to do is the Physician.

I doubt whether any embodied spirit can feel such entire self-abasement as is felt by those spirits that see the face of our Father which is in heaven. And, undoubtedly, the nearer they approach the throne, the more abased they will be.

The plerophory (or full assurance) of faith is such a divine testimony, that we are reconciled to God, as excludes all doubt and fear concerning it. This refers only to what

is present. The plerophory (or full assurance) of hope is a divine testimony, that we shall endure to the end; or, more directly, that we shall enjoy God in glory. This is by no means essential to, or inseparable from, perfect love. It is sometimes given to those that are not perfected in love, as it was to Mr. Grimshaw. And it is not given (at least not for some time) to many that are perfected in love. I do not say, you ought to pray for it; but I think you may, only with absolute resignation. In this, as in all things,

His manner and His time are best.

I rejoice to hear of the continuance of your health. But you will still need constant exercise; to which should be added, as often as may be, change of air. That you may enjoy more and more health, both of soul and body, is the prayer of

Yours affectionately.

DCCLV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

*February 12, 1779.*

THE remark of Luther, "that a revival of religion seldom continues above thirty years," has been verified many times in several countries. But it will not always hold. The present revival of religion in England has already continued fifty years. And, blessed be God, it is at least as likely to continue, as it was twenty or thirty years ago. Indeed, it is far more likely; as it not only spreads wider, but sinks deeper, than ever; more and more persons being able to testify that the blood of Christ cleanses from all sin. We have therefore reason to hope that this revival of religion will continue, and continually increase, till the time when all Israel shall be saved, and the fulness of the Gentiles shall come.

I have heard that Mr. — is in London, but have not heard where he is, or what he does. As far as I can learn, he lives in the utmost privacy, and does not preach at all. He seems to think that his present calling is to be a hermit in London.

Surely it is your wisdom to stand fast even in the outward liberty wherewith Christ has made you free. You are now happily disengaged from caring for the things of this world, and need only care for the things of the Lord; how you

may be holy in body and spirit, and how you may promote his kingdom upon earth.

I have abundant proof that Baron Swedenborg's fever, which he had thirty years before he died, much affected his understanding. Yet his tract is "majestic, though in ruins." He has strong and beautiful thoughts, and may be read with profit by a serious and cautious reader.

Some weeks since, I began another Journal, and am going on with it, when I have any scraps of time: Probably it will be finished next month. I expect to visit Yorkshire this spring, when I hope to see you.

I am

Yours affectionately.

DCCLVI.—*To the Same.*

LONDON, *January 19, 1782.*

It seemed a little strange to me, my dear Betsy, that I did not hear from you for so long a time. But I imputed your silence to your bodily weakness, of which several of our friends sent me word.

From our brethren in various parts of England and Ireland, I have very pleasing accounts of the uncommon blessings which many received at the time of renewing their covenant with God. I am glad to hear that you at Otley had your share. That point, entire salvation from inbred sin, can hardly ever be insisted upon, either in preaching or prayer, without a particular blessing. Honest Isaac Brown firmly believes this doctrine, that we are to be saved from all sin in this life. But I wish, when opportunity serves, you would encourage him, 1. To preach Christian perfection, constantly, strongly, and explicitly: 2. Explicitly to assert and prove, that it may be received now: And, 3. (Which indeed is implied therein,) that it is to be received by simple faith.

In every state of mind, in that of conviction, or justification, or sanctification, I believe every person may either go sensibly backward, or seem to stand still, or go forward. I incline to think, all the persons you mention were fully sanctified. But some of them, watching unto prayer, went on from faith to faith; while the others, being less watchful, seemed to stand still, but were, indeed, imperceptibly back-

sliding. Wishing you all may increase with all the increase of God,

I am  
Ever yours.

DCCLVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

BRISTOL, *July 20, 1783.*

It seemed a long time since I heard from you; but I believe your not writing was owing to your not knowing how to direct to me while I was abroad. The prayers of many were productive of many blessings, and in particular of the amazing friendship and good-will which were shown us in every place. We always looked upon the Dutch as a heavy, dull, stoical people. But, truly, most, nay, I may say, all, with whom we conversed familiarly, were as tender-hearted and as earnestly affectionate as the Irish themselves. Two of our sisters, when we left the Hague, came twelve miles with us on our way; and one of our brethren of Amsterdam came to take leave of us to Utrecht, above thirty miles. There are, indeed, many precious souls in Utrecht full of faith and love, as also at Haerlem, the Hague, and Amsterdam. And one and all (without any human teaching) dress as plainly as you do. I believe, if my life be prolonged, I shall pay them a visit at least every other year. Had I had a little more time, I would have visited our brethren in Friesland and Westphalia likewise; for a glorious work of God is lately broken out in both these provinces.

Miss L— is an Israelite indeed: She is a pattern to all that are round about her. One would scarcely have expected to see the daughter of the head Burgomaster dressed on a Sunday in a plain linen gown. She appears to have but one desire,—that Christ may reign alone in her heart.

I do not remember any storm which travelled so far as that on the 10th. It has been in almost all parts of England, but especially at Witney, near Oxford. The next night they had a far greater, which seemed to cover the whole town for four hours, with almost one uninterrupted blaze; and it has made such an impression on high and low, rich and poor, as had not been known in the memory of man.

I expect a good deal of difficulty at this Conference, and



shall stand in need of the prayers of you and your friends.  
Peace be with all your spirits !

I am

Yours most affectionately.

DCCLVIII.—*To the Same.*

TRACEEN, PEMBROKESHIRE, *August 19, 1784.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

I WAS a little surprised at a letter from sister D—, in which she seems to approve of all that Mrs. C. has done; and speaks as if it were just and right, and done in obedience to the order of Providence! I could not help saying, “There is but one advice which I can give her upon the present occasion: ‘Remember from whence thou art fallen. Repent, and do thy first works.’”

Some years ago, I committed a little company of lovely children to the care of one of our sisters at Haverford. I was concerned yesterday to find she was weary of well-doing, and had totally given up her charge. I hope, my dear Betsy, this will never be your case! You will never leave off your labour of love; though you should not always (not immediately, at least) see the fruit of your labours. You may not immediately see Mrs. H— so established in grace as you desire and hope. But, in this, as well as many other instances, in due time “you shall reap, if you faint not.”

I have been often musing upon this,—why the generality of Christians, even those that really are such, are less zealous and less active for God when they are middle-aged, than they were when they were young. May we not draw an answer to this question from that declaration of our Lord, (no less than eight times repeated by the Evangelists,) “To him that hath,” uses what he hath, “shall be given; but from him that hath not, shall be taken away that he hath?” A measure of zeal and activity is given to every one, when he finds peace with God. If he earnestly and diligently uses this talent, it will surely be increased. But if he ceases (yea, or intermits) to do good, he insensibly loses both the will and the power. So there is no possible way to retain those talents, but to use them to the uttermost. Let this never be the case of my dear friend! Never abate anything of your diligence in doing good. Sometimes,

indeed, the feeble body sinks under you ; but when you do all you can, you do enough.

Remember, in all your prayers,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCLIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

DUBLIN, *June 26, 1785.*

OUR Lord has indeed poured out abundance of blessings, almost in every part of this kingdom. I have now gone through every province, and visited all the chief societies, and I have found far the greater part of them increasing both in number and strength. Many are convinced of sin ; many justified ; and not a few perfected in love. One means of which is, that several of our young Preachers, of whom we made little account, appear to be (contrary to all expectation) men full of faith, and of the Holy Ghost ; and they are pushing out, to the right hand and the left ; and wherever they go, God prospers their labour. I know not whether Thomas Walsh will not revive in two, if not three, of them.

Many years ago I was saying, "I cannot imagine how Mr. Whitefield can keep his soul alive, as he is not now going through honour and dishonour, evil report and good report ; having nothing but honour and good report attending him wherever he goes." It is now my own case : I am just in the condition now that he was then in. I am become, I know not how, an honourable man. The scandal of the cross is ceased ; and all the kingdom, rich and poor, Papists and Protestants, behave with courtesy, nay, and seeming good-will ! It seems as if I had well-nigh finished my course, and our Lord was giving me an honourable discharge.

My dear B., have you not something to do in Dublin ? If so, the sooner you visit our friends, the better. Peace be with your spirit !

Adieu !

DCCLX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,

LONDON, *February 24, 1786.*

IT is doubtless the will of the Lord we should be guided by our reason, so far as it can go. But in many cases it gives us very little light, and in others none at all.

In all cases it cannot guide us right, but in subordination to the unction of the Holy One. So that in all our ways we are to acknowledge Him, and He will direct our paths.

I do not remember to have heard or read anything like my own experience. Almost ever since I can remember, I have been led in a peculiar way. I go on in an even line, being very little raised at one time, or depressed at another. Count Zinzendorf observes, there are three different ways wherein it pleases God to lead his people. Some are guided almost in every instance by apposite texts of Scripture. Others see a clear and plain reason for everything they are to do. And yet others are led not so much by Scripture or reason, as by particular impressions. I am very rarely led by impressions, but generally by reason and by Scripture. I see abundantly more than I feel. I want to feel more love and zeal for God.

My very dear friend, adieu !

---

DCCLXI.—*To Mr. Robert Marsden, at Mr. Frith's, Grocer, in Sheffield.*

BRISTOL, *August 31, 1756.*

A CARELESS reader of the Address may possibly think, I make it necessary for a Minister to have much learning ; and thence imagine I act inconsistently ; seeing many of our Preachers have no learning at all. But the answer is easy. First, I do not make any learning necessary even for a Minister (the Minister of a parish, who, as such, undertakes single to guide and feed, to instruct and govern, that whole flock) but the knowledge of the Scriptures : Although many branches of learning are highly expedient for him. Secondly, These Preachers are not Ministers : None of them undertakes single the care of a whole flock ; but ten, twenty, or thirty, one following and helping another, and all under the direction of my brother and me, undertake jointly what (as I judge) no man in England is equal to alone.

Fight your way through all. God is on your side. And what then can man do to you ? Make known all your wants to Him, and you shall have the petitions you ask of Him.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCLXII.—*To Mr. C. Glascott, Jesus College, Oxon.*

DEAR SIR, NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, *May 11, 1764.*

It is an unspeakable blessing, that God has given you to taste of the powers of the world to come. And He is willing to give always what He gives once. You need lose nothing of what you have received. Rather expect to receive more every moment; grace upon grace. And be not content till you are a Christian altogether, till your soul is all love, "till you can rejoice evermore, and pray without ceasing, and in everything give thanks."

If you are not already, it may be of use to you to be acquainted with Mr. Crosse, of Edmund-hall. He has a sound judgment, and an excellent temper; and you have need of every help, that you may not lose what God hath wrought, but may have a full reward. A little tract wrote by Bishop Bull, entitled, "A Companion for Candidates for holy Orders," was of much use to me. In order to be well acquainted with the doctrines of Christianity, you need but one book, (besides the Bible,)—Bishop Pearson on the Creed. This I advise you to read and master throughly: It is a library in one volume. But above all be much in prayer, and God will withhold no manner of thing that is good.

I am

Your affectionate servant

---

DCCLXIII.—*To Mr. (afterwards Dr.) John Whitehead.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *August 15, 1767.*

As you desired it, you may labour in Lancashire for the ensuing year.

I have considered what you say, concerning the usefulness of being present at the general Conference. And I think we may steer a middle course. I will only require a select number to be present. But I will permit any other Traveling Preacher who desires it, to be present with them.

O let us be all alive to God, and all athirst for his whole image!

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCLXIV.—*To Miss C——, Armagh.*CLANMAIN, *June 8, 1773.*

Do not think it strange, my dear Miss C——, that I write to you: The regard I have for you constrains me. It is possible, I may see you no more: I am not young, and you are not healthy; nay, and the ten thousand gates of death stand continually open to every child of man. Will you take it ill then, that I tell you freely, you have been much upon my mind? Ever since I saw you first, I felt an earnest desire, that you should be wise and happy; that you should make the best of a few uncertain days, and improve the time which flees away as a shadow, and knows not to return. Believe me, my dear maid, what are called pleasures and diversions can give you no solid happiness. They are poor, empty, insignificant trifles: And you was made for better things. You are not only to consider yourself as having an agreeable person: You are an immortal spirit. You was made a little lower than the angels, that you may live with them for ever. You are come forth from God, and are returning to God, as fast as a few fleeting years can carry you. But I am in pain for you: I am concerned lest you should forget this, like other pretty, giddy, unthinking creatures. What if it should be said of you,—

“ At dawn poor Stells danced and sung ;  
The gazing youth around her bow'd :  
At night her passing-bell was rung ;  
I saw, and kiss'd her in her shroud ! ”

O make haste. Be a Christian, a real Bible Christian now ! You may say, “ Nay, I am a Christian already.” I fear not. (See how freely I speak.) A Christian is not afraid to die. Are not you? Do you desire to depart, and to be with Christ? A Christian is happy in God. Are you? Can you say,—

“ I nothing need, beneath, above,  
Happy, happy, in thy love ? ”

A Christian (though perhaps he never heard the name of a Methodist) has power over all sin. Have you? If not, it is certain you may; for God is no respecter of persons. Whatsoever he has given to any other, He is willing to give to you also. O let your heart cry to Him, “ What I know

not teach thou me. Let me not die before I long to die ! Give me the wisdom that sitteth by thy throne, and reject me not from among thy children ! ” To His care I tenderly commit you ; and am,

My dear Miss C—,

Yours affectionately.

If you love me, hear Mr. Saunderson preach.

DCCLXV.—*To Mrs. Knapp, Worcester.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

BIRMINGHAM, *March 25, 1781.*

I ALWAYS loved you since I knew you ; but lately more than ever, because I believe you are more devoted to God, and more athirst for his whole image. I have been seriously considering your case, and I will tell you my thoughts freely. Your body frequently presses down your spirit, by reason of your nervous disorder. What then can be done, in order to lessen at least, if not to remove it? Perhaps it may be entirely removed, if you can take advice. And I think you can by God's assistance. I advise you, 1. Sleep early. Never sit up later than ten o'clock, for any business whatever ; no, not for reading or prayer. Do not offer murder for sacrifice. 2. Rise early : Never lie more than seven hours ; unless when you lie-in. 3. Beware of Satan transformed into an angel of light : He can hurt you no other way ; as your heart is upright toward God, and you desire to please Him in all things. 4. Take advice, as far as you possibly can, of brother Knapp. Two are better than one. He loves you tenderly, and God will often give him light for you !

I wish you to be always full of faith and love, and a pattern to all that are round about you.

I am, my dear sister,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCLXVI.—*To the Rev. Freeborn Garrettson, of the Methodist Episcopal Church, in America.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

DUBLIN, *June 16, 1785.*

DR. COKE gives some account of you in his Journal ; so that, although I have not seen you, I am not a stranger to

your character. By all means send me, when you have an opportunity, a more particular account of your experience and travels. It is noway improbable that God may find out a way for you to visit England; and it may be the means of your receiving more strength, as well as more light. It is a very desirable thing that the children of God should communicate their experience to each other; and it is generally most profitable when they can do it face to face. Till Providence opens a way for you to see Europe, do all you can for a good Master in America.

I am glad brother Cromwell and you have undertaken that "labour of love" of visiting Nova-Scotia; and doubt not but you act in full concert with the little handful who were almost alone till you came. It will be the wisest way to make all those who desire to join together, thoroughly acquainted with the whole Methodist plan; and to accustom them, from the very beginning, to the accurate observance of all our rules. Let none of them rest in being half-Christians. Whatever they do, let them do it with their might; and it will be well, as soon as any of them find peace with God, to exhort them to "go on to perfection." The more explicitly and strongly you press all believers to aspire after full sanctification, as attainable now by simple faith, the more the whole work of God will prosper.

I do not expect any great matters from the Bishop. I doubt his eye is not single; and if it be not, he will do little good to you, or any one else. It may be a comfort to you that you have no need of him. You want nothing which he can give.

It is a noble proposal of brother Marchington; but I doubt it will not take place. You do not know the state of the English Methodists: They do not roll in money, like many of the American Methodists. It is with the utmost difficulty that we can raise five or six hundred pounds a year to supply our Contingent expenses; so that it is entirely impracticable to raise five hundred pounds among them to build houses in America. It is true, they might do much; but it is a sad observation, they that have most money have usually least grace.

The peace of God be with all your spirits!

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCLXVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *September 30, 1786.*

I TRUST before this comes to hand you and Dr. Coke will have met, and refreshed each other's bowels in the Lord. I can exceedingly ill spare him from England, as I have no Clergyman capable of supplying his lack of service; but I was convinced he was more wanted in America than in Europe. For it is impossible but offences will come; and "of yourselves will men arise speaking perverse things," and striving "to draw away disciples after them." It is a wonderful blessing, they are restrained so long, till the poor people are a little grounded in the faith. You have need to watch over them with your might. Let those that have set their hands to the plough continually "pray to the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth more labourers into his harvest."

It is far better to send your Journals as they are, than not to send them at all. I am afraid it is too late in the season to send books this year; but I hope Dr. Coke has brought some with him to serve you for the present. I was far off from London when he set sail. Most of those in England who have riches love money, even the Methodists; at least those who are called so. The poor are the Christians. I am quite out of conceit with almost all those who have this world's goods. Let us take care to lay up our treasure in heaven. Peace be with your spirit!

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCLXVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, *November 30, 1786.*

YOU have great reason to be thankful to God, that he lets you see the fruit of your labours. Whenever any are awakened, you do well to join them together immediately. But I do not advise you to go on too fast. It is not expedient to break up more ground than you can keep; to preach at any more places than you or your brethren can constantly attend. To preach once in a place, and no more, very seldom does any good; it only alarms the devil and his children, and makes them more upon their guard against a first assault.

Wherever there is any Church service, I do not approve



of any appointment the same hour; because I love the Church of England, and would assist, not oppose, it all I can. How do the inhabitants of Shelburn, Halifax, and other parts of the province, go on as to temporal things? Have they trade? Have they sufficiency of food, and the other necessaries of life? And do they increase or decrease in numbers? It seems there is a scarcity of some things,—of good ink, for yours is so pale that many of your words are not legible.

As I take it for granted that you have had several conversations with Dr. Coke, I doubt not you proposed all your difficulties to him, and received full satisfaction concerning them. Commending you to Him who is able to guide and strengthen you in all things,

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

P.S. Probably we shall send a little help for your building, if we live till Conference. Observe the rules for building laid down in the Minutes.

I see nothing of your Journal yet. I am afraid of another American Revolution. I do not know how to get the enclosed safe to Dr. Coke: Probably you know. On second thoughts, I think it best not to write to him at present.

DCCLXIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,           MACCLESFIELD, *July 16, 1787.*

I HAVE your letter of March 15, and that of May 20. In the former you give me a pleasing account of the work of God in Halifax and other towns in Nova-Scotia; and indeed everywhere except poor Shelburn, from which I had an excellent account a few years ago. Shall the first be last? What could have occasioned the decrease of the work there? St. Paul's advice is certainly good for all Methodist Preachers,—that "it is good for a man not to touch a woman;" and, "if thou mayest be free, use it rather." And yet I dare not exclude those who marry out of our Connexion, or forbid to marry; but happy are those who, having no necessity laid upon them, stand fast in the glorious liberty. I commend you for laying as little burden upon the poor people as possible.

Before I had printing presses of my own, I used to pay two-and-thirty shillings for printing two-and-twenty pages

duodecimo. The paper was from twelve to sixteen shillings a ream. I do not blame you for printing those tracts.

But you do not send me your Journal yet. Surely you had time enough to write it over. Dr. Coke seems to think you are irresolute, yet not willing to take advice. I hope better things of you; and your heart says to God and man, "What I know not, teach thou me."

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCLXX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *January 24, 1789.*

It signifies but little where we are, so we are but fully employed for our good Master. Whether you went, therefore, to the east, it is all one, so you were labouring to promote His work. You are following the order of His providence wherever it appeared, as a holy man strongly expressed it, in a kind of holy disordered order. But there is one expression that occurs twice or thrice in yours, which gives me some concern: You speak of finding "freedom" to do this or that. This is a word much liable to be abused. If I have plain Scripture, or plain reason, for doing a thing, well. These are my rules, and my only rules. I regard not whether I had freedom or no. This is an unscriptural expression, and a very fallacious rule. I wish to be, in every point, great and small, a scriptural, rational Christian.

In one instance, formerly, you promised to send me your Journal. Will you break your word, because you do not find freedom to keep it? Is not this enthusiasm? O be not of this way of thinking! You know not whither it may lead you. You are called to

Square your useful life below  
By reason and by grace.

But whatever you do with regard to me you must do quickly, or you will no more in this world.

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCLXXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, CHESTER, *July 15, 1789.*

You are entirely in the right. There can be no manner of doubt, that it was the enemy of souls that hindered your

sending me your experience. Many parts both of your inward and outward experience ought by no means to be suppressed. But if you are minded to send anything to me, you have no time to lose. Whatever you do for me you must do quickly; lest death have quicker wings than love. A great man observes that there is a three-fold leading of the Spirit. Some He leads by giving them, on every occasion, apposite texts of Scripture; some by suggesting reasons for every step they take,—the way by which He chiefly leads me; and some by impressions: But he judges the last to be the least desirable way; as it is often impossible to distinguish dark impressions from divine, or even diabolical.

I hope you will not long delay to write more particularly to  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCLXXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 3, 1790*

TWO or three days ago, I had the pleasure of a letter from you, dated August 23d, 1789, giving me a comfortable account of the swift and extensive progress of the work of God in America. You likewise informed me that you had written an account of your life, and directed it should be sent to me; and I have been expecting it from day to day ever since, but have now almost given up my expectation; for, unless it comes soon, it will hardly overtake me in the present world. You see time has shaken me by the hand, and death is not far behind. While we live, let us work our Lord's work betimes; and in His time he will give us our full reward.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCLXXIII.—*To the Rev. Francis Asbury.*

LONDON, *September 20, 1788.*

THERE is indeed a wide difference between the relation wherein you stand to the Americans, and the relation wherein I stand to all the Methodists. You are the elder brother of the American Methodists: I am, under God, the father of the whole family. Therefore, I naturally care for

you all in a manner no other person can do. Therefore, I, in a measure, provide for you all; for the supplies which Dr. Coke provides for you, he could not provide, were it not for me,—were it not that I not only permit him to collect, but also support him in so doing.

But in one point, my dear brother, I am a little afraid, both the Doctor and you differ from me. I study to be little; you study to be great. I creep; you strut along. I found a school; you a college! nay, and call it after your own names!\* O, beware, do not seek to be something! Let me be nothing, and “Christ be all in all!”

One instance of this, of your greatness, has given me great concern. How can you, how dare you, suffer yourself to be called Bishop? I shudder, I start at the very thought! Men may call me a knave or a fool, a rascal, a scoundrel, and I am content: But they shall never, by my consent, call me Bishop! For my sake, for God’s sake, for Christ’s sake, put a full end to this! Let the Presbyterians do what they please, but let the Methodists know their calling better.

Thus, my dear Franky, I have told you all that is in my heart. And let this, when I am no more seen, bear witness how sincerely

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCLXXIV.—*To Miss Hester Ann Roe, afterwards  
Mrs. Rogers.*

WHITEHAVEN, May 3, 1776.

WITH pleasure I sit down to write to my dear Miss Roe, who has been much upon my mind since I left Macclesfield. Once I saw my dear friend, Miss Beresford: When I came again, she was in Abraham’s bosom. Once I have seen her living picture, drawn by the same hand, and breathing the same spirit; and I am afraid I shall hardly see you again, till we meet in the garden of God. But if you should gradually decay, if you be sensible of the hour approaching when your spirit is to return to God; I should be glad to

\* Cokesbury College, twice burned down. The name was formed from the names of its founders,—Coke and Asbury.—EDIT.

have notice of it, wherever I am, that if possible I might see you once more before you

Clap your glad wing, and soar away,  
And mingle with the blaze of day.

Perhaps in such a circumstance, I might be of some little comfort to your dear mamma, who would stand in much need of comfort; and, it may be, our blessed Master would enable me to teach you at once, and learn of you, to die! In the mean time, see that you neglect no probable means of restoring your health; and send me, from time to time, a particular account of the state wherein you are. Do you feel your own will quite given up to God, so that you have no repugnance to His will in anything? Do you find no strivings of pride? no remains of vanity? no desire of praise, or fear of dispraise? Do you enjoy an uninterrupted sense of the loving presence of God? How far does the corruptible and decaying body press down the soul? Your disorder naturally sinks the spirits, and occasions heaviness and dejection. Can you, notwithstanding this, "rejoice evermore, and in everything give thanks?" Certainly before the root of sin is taken away, believers may live above the power of it. Yet what a difference between the first love, and the pure love! You can explain this to Mr. Roe by your own experience. Let him follow on, and how soon may he attain it!

I am glad you wrote to Miss Yates, and hope you will write to Miss —. As to health, they are both nearly as you are; only Miss — is a little strengthened by a late journey. I never conversed with her so much before. I can give you her character in one line. She is "all praise, all meekness, and all love." If it will not hurt you, I desire you will write often to,

My dear Hetty,  
Yours affectionately.

DCCLXXV.—*To the Same.*

NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, *June 2, 1776.*

MY DEAR HETTY,

It is not uncommon for a person to be thoroughly convinced of his duty to call sinners to repentance, several years before he has an opportunity of doing it. This has been the

case with several of our Preachers. Probably it may be the case with Mr. Roe: God may show him now what he is to do hereafter. It seems, his present duty is to wait the openings of divine Providence.

If I durst, I should earnestly desire that you might continue with us a little longer. I could almost say, it is hard that I should just see you once and no more. But it is a comfort, that to die is not to be lost. Our union will be more full and perfect hereafter.

Surely our disembodied souls shall join,  
 Surely my friendly shade shall mix with thine:  
 To earth-born pain superior, light shall rise  
 Through the wide waves of unopposing skies;  
 Together swift ascend heaven's high abode,  
 Converse with angels, and rejoice with God.

Tell me, my dear Hetty, do you experience something similar to what Mr. De Renty expresses in those strong words: "I bear about with me an experimental verity, and a plenitude of the presence of the ever-blessed Trinity?" Do you commune with God in the night season? Does He bid you even in sleep, Go on? And does He "make your very dreams devout?"

That He may fill you with all his fulness, is the constant wish of.

My dear Hetty,  
 Yours affectionately.

DCCLXXVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY, BRISTOL, *September 16, 1776.*

As I did not receive yours, of August 28, before my return from Cornwall, I was beginning to grow a little apprehensive lest your love was declining: But you have sweetly dispelled all my apprehensions of that sort, and I take knowledge that you are still the same. The happy change wrought in Miss P. R. and Miss B. may encourage you to snatch every opportunity of speaking a word for a good Master. Sometimes you see present fruit; but if not, your labour is not lost, the seed may spring up after many days. I hope, though your cousins are tried, they will not be discouraged; then all these things will "work together for good." Probably, if they stand firm, religion will, in a

while, leaven the whole family. But they will have need of much patience, as well as much resolution. I am not sorry that you have met with a little blame in the affair, and I hope it was not undeserved. Happy are they that suffer for well-doing! I was almost afraid that all men would speak well of you. Do you feel no intermission of your happiness in God? Do you never find any lowness of spirits? Does time never hang heavy upon your hands? How is your health? You see how inquisitive I am, because everything relating to you nearly concerns me. I once thought I could not be well acquainted with any one till many years had elapsed; and yet I am as well acquainted with you as if I had known you from your infancy. You now are my comfort and joy! And I hope to be far longer than this little span of life,

My dear Hetty,

Yours in tender affection.

DCCLXXVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY,

BRISTOL, *October 6, 1776.*

TO-MORROW I set out for London, in and near which, if it please God to continue my life, I shall remain till spring. The trials which a gracious Providence sends, may be precious means of growing in grace, and particularly of increasing in faith, patience, and resignation; and are they not all chosen for us by infinite Wisdom and Goodness? So that we may well subscribe to those beautiful lines,—

“ With patient mind thy course of duty run ;  
 God nothing docs, or suffers to be done,  
 But thou wouldst do thyself, if thou couldst see  
 The end of all events as well as He.”

Everything that we can do for a parent, we ought to do, that is, everything we can do without killing ourselves. But this we have no right to do. Our lives are not at our own disposal. Remember that, my dear Hetty, and do not carry a good principle too far. Do you still find,

Labour is rest, and pain is sweet,  
 When thou, my God, art here?

I know pain or grief does not interrupt your happiness: But does it not lessen it? You often feel sorrow for your friends: Does that sorrow rather quicken than depress your soul?

Does it sink you deeper into God? I cannot express the satisfaction which I receive from your open and artless manner of writing; especially when you speak of the union of spirit which you feel with,

My dear Hetty,

Your ever affectionate.

DCCLXXVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY,

LONDON, *February 11, 1777.*

THE papers of one who lately went to God are fallen into my hands. I will transcribe a few particulars. His experience is uncommon: And you may simply tell me how far your experience does or does not agree with it. But beware of hurting yourself upon the occasion; beware of unprofitable reasonings. God may have wrought the same work in you, though not in the same manner. "Just after my uniting with the Methodists, the Father was revealed to me the first time; soon after, the whole Trinity. I beheld the distinct Persons of the Godhead, and worshipped one undivided Jehovah, and each Person separately. After this I had equal intercourse with the Son, and afterwards with the Spirit, the same as with the Father and the Son. After some years, my communion was with the Son only, though at times with the Father, and not wholly without the Spirit. Of late I have found the same access to the Triune God. When I approach Jesus, the Father and the Spirit commune with me

"Whatever I receive now, centres in taking leave of earth, and hasting to another place. I am as one that is no more. I stand and look on what God has done; his calls, helps, mercies, forbearances, deliverances from sorrows, rescues out of evils; and I adore and devote myself to Him with new ardour. If it be asked how, or in what manner, I beheld the Triune God, it is above all description. He that has seen this light of God, can no more describe it than he that has not. In two of those divine interviews, the Father spoke, while I was in an agony of prayer for perfect conformity to Himself; twice more when I was in the depth of sorrow; and each time in Scripture words. It may be asked, 'Was the appearance glorious?' It was all divine, it was glory. I had no conception of it. It was God. The first time, the glory of Him I saw reached even to me. I was overwhelmed with



it; body and soul were penetrated through with the rays of Deity."

Tell me, my dear maid, if you have ever experienced anything like these things: But do not puzzle yourself about them; only speak in simplicity. You cannot speak of these things to many; but you may say anything without reserve to,

My dear Hetty,

Yours in tender affection.

DCCLXXIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY,

LONDON, *February 11, 1779.*

It is a great mercy that, on the one hand, you have previous warning of the trials that are at hand; and, on the other, are not careful about them, but only prepared to encounter them. We know indeed that these, as well as all things, are ordered by unerring wisdom; and are given us exactly at the right time, and in due number, weight, and measure. And they continue no longer than is best; for chance has no share in the government of the world. The Lord reigns, and disposes all things, strongly and sweetly, for the good of them that love Him. I rejoice to hear that you have now less hinderance in the way, and can oftener converse with his people. Be sure to improve every one of those precious opportunities of doing and receiving good.

I am often grieved to observe that, although on His part "the gifts and callings of God are without repentance;" although He never repents of anything He has given us, but is willing to give it always; yet so very few retain the same ardour of affection which they received either when they were justified, or when they were (more fully) sanctified. Certainly none need to lose any part of their light or their love. It may increase more and more. Of this you are a witness for God; and so is our dear Miss —. You have not lost anything of what you have received; your love has never grown cold since the moment God visited you with his great salvation. And I hope also you will ever retain the same affection for

Yours most tenderly.

DCCLXXX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY, LIVERPOOL, *April 10, 1781.*

MANY of our brethren and sisters in London, during that great outpouring of the Spirit, spoke of several new blessings which they had attained. But after all, they could find nothing higher than pure love; on which the full assurance of hope generally attends. This the inspired writings always represent as the highest point; only there are innumerable degrees of it. The plerophory or full assurance of faith is such a clear conviction of being now in the favour of God as excludes all doubt and fear concerning it. The full assurance of hope is such a clear confidence in the person who possesses it, that he shall enjoy the glory of God, as excludes all doubt and fear concerning this. And this confidence is totally different from an opinion that "no saint shall fall from grace." It has, indeed, no relation to it. Bold, presumptuous men often substitute this base counterfeit in the room of that precious confidence. But it is observable, the opinion remains just as strong while men are sinning and serving the devil, as while they are serving God. Holiness or unholiness does not affect it in the least degree. Whereas, the giving way to anything unholy, either in heart or life, immediately clouds the full assurance of hope; which cannot subsist any longer than the heart cleaves steadfastly to God.

I am persuaded the storm which met us in the teeth, and drove us back to England, was not a casual, but a providential, thing: Therefore I lay aside the thought of seeing Ireland at present.

I am, my dear Hetty,  
Always yours in tender affection.

DCCLXXXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY, LONDON, *December 9, 1781.*

WE may easily account for those notices which we frequently receive, either sleeping or waking, upon the scriptural supposition that "He giveth his angels charge over us, to keep us in all our ways." How easy is it for them, who have at all times so ready an access to our souls, to impart to us whatever may be a means of increasing our holiness or our happiness! So that we may well say, with Bishop Ken,—

“ O may thy angels, while we sleep,  
 Around our beds their vigils keep,  
 Their love angelical instil,  
 Stop every avenue of ill ! ”

Without needing to use any other arguments, you have a clear proof in your own experience, that our blessed Lord is both able and willing to give us always what he gives once ; that there is no necessity of ever losing what we receive in the moment of justification or sanctification. But it is His will that all the light and love which we then receive, should increase more and more unto the perfect day.

If you are employed to assist children that are brought to the birth, that groan either for the first or the pure love, happy are you ! But this is not all your work. No, my Hetty, you are likewise to watch over the new-born babes. Although they have love, they have not yet either much light or much strength, so that they never had more need of your assistance, that they may neither be turned out of the way, nor hindered in running the race that is set before them.

I should not have been willing that Miss Bosanquet should have been joined to any other person than Mr. Fletcher ; but I trust she may be as useful with him as she was before.

I fear our dear —— will not stay long with us. I have no answer to my last letter, and Mrs. Downes writes that she is far from well. Yet God is able to raise her up. As to Peggy Roe, I have little hope of her life : But she seemed, when I saw her, to be quite simple of heart, desiring nothing more but God. My dear Hetty, adieu ! Remember in all your prayers

Yours most affectionately.

DCCLXXXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY, LONDON, *January 7, 1782.*

IN the success of Mr. Leech's preaching, we have one proof of a thousand, that the blessing of God always attends the publishing of full salvation as attainable now, by simple faith. You should always have in readiness that little tract, “The Plain Account of Christian Perfection.” There is nothing that would so effectually stop the mouths of those who call this “a new doctrine.” All who thus object are really (though they suspect nothing less) seeking sanctifica-

tion by works. If it be by works, then certainly these will need time, in order to the doing of these works. But if it is by faith, it is plain, a moment is as a thousand years. Then God says, (in the spiritual, as in the outward world,) Let there be light, and there is light.

I am in great hopes, as J. S. got his own soul much quickened in Macclesfield, he will now be a blessing to many at Chester. A few witnesses of pure love remain there still; but several are gone to Abraham's bosom. Encourage those in M. who enjoy it, to speak explicitly what they do experience; and to go on, till they know all that "love of God that passeth knowledge."

Give all the help you can, my dear Hetty, to them, and to  
Yours most affectionately

DCCLXXXIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY, DARLINGTON, June 25, 1782.

It is certain there has been, for these forty years, such an outpouring of the Spirit, and such an increase of vital religion, as has not been in England for many centuries; and it does not appear that the work of God at all decays. In many places there is a considerable increase of it; so that we have reason to hope, that the time is at hand, when the kingdom of God shall come with power, and all the people of this poor heathen land shall know Him, from the least to the greatest.

I am glad you had so good an opportunity of talking with Mr. S——. Surely, if prayer was made for him, so useful an instrument as he was would not be suffered to lose all his usefulness. I wish you could make such little excursions oftener, as you always find your labour is not in vain.

This afternoon, I was agreeably surprised by a letter from our dear Miss ——. It seems as if God, in answer to many prayers, has lent her to us yet a little longer. "He bringeth down to the grave, and bringeth up again. Wise are all his ways!"

Take particular care, my dear Hetty, of the children: They are glorious monuments of divine grace; and I think you have a particular affection for them, and a gift to profit them.

I always am, my dear friend,  
Yours most affectionately.

DCCLXXXIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY, BRISTOL, *October 1, 1782.*

I RECEIVED yours two days after date, and read it yesterday to Miss Stockdale and poor Peggy Roe, who is still strangely detained in life. But she is permitted to stay in the body a little longer, that she may be more ready for the Bridegroom.

You did exceedingly well to send me so circumstantial an account of Robert Roe's last illness and happy death. It may incite many to run the race that is set before them with more courage and patience.

The removal of so useful an instrument as your late cousin, in the midst, or rather in the dawn, of his usefulness, (especially while the harvest is so great, and the faithful labourers so few,) is an instance of the divine economy which leaves our reason behind: Our little narrow minds cannot comprehend it. We can only wonder and adore. How is your health? I sometimes fear, lest you also (as those I tenderly love generally have been) should be snatched away. But let us live to-day.

I always am  
Affectionately yours.

DCCLXXXV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY, BRISTOL, *March 15, 1783.*

I SHALL not be able to visit Macclesfield quite so soon as usual this year; for the preaching-houses at Hinckley and Nottingham are to be opened, which I take in my way. I expect to be at Nottingham on the 1st of April; but how long I shall stay there, I cannot yet determine. Thence I shall probably come, by Derby, to Macclesfield.

I intended to have written a good deal more, but I am hardly able. For a few days, I have had just such a fever as I had a few years ago in Ireland. But all is well. I am in no pain, but the wheel of life seems scarcely able to move; yet I made shift to preach this morning to a crowded audience, and hope to say something to them this afternoon. I love that word, "And Ishmael died in the presence of all his brethren." Still pray for,

My dear Hetty,  
Yours most affectionately.



power, I hope many of the backsliders in Cork will be brought back: There are great numbers of them in and about the city, and many are of the genteeler sort. It seems you have a particular mission to these: Perhaps they will hear none but you. I hope you have already found out Mrs. Forbes (Captain Forbes's wife); and that now she is more than almost persuaded to be a Christian. The pearl on my eye is but just discernible, and dulls the sight a little, but not much: As it grows no worse, I do not much regard it.

Mr. Smyth's society, I verily believe, will do us no harm: And every one may speak of me as he will. I am just flying away as a shadow. It more than makes me amends, that James and you still love, and pray for,

My dear Hetty,

Your most affectionate.

DCCLXXXVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR HETTY,

*February 9, 1789.*

I AM glad to hear that you do not grow weary or faint in your mind; that you are rather increasing in the way of holiness. Go on in the name of the Lord, and in the power of his might, doing the will of God from the heart.

It was a providence indeed, the flood did not begin in the night, rather than in the day. So it is that judgment is usually mixed with mercy, that sinners may be awakened and not destroyed. I liked well to lodge at brother Laffan's when I was in Cork last; but certainly I shall like much better to lodge with brother Rogers and you. I shall be more at home with you, than I could be anywhere else in Cork. I still find (blessed be God) a gradual increase of strength, and my sight is rather better than worse. If my life and health be continued, I shall endeavour to reach Dublin about the end of March; and Cork before the end of June. Peace be with your spirits!

I am, my dear Hetty,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCLXXXIX.—*To Miss Patty Chapman.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

December 17, 1773.

CERTAINLY the more good you do, the more will many be tempted against you. But go on. So much the more will the Spirit of glory and of Christ rest upon you. By fighting against that reserve, you will conquer it: The more it is resisted, the more it is weakened. You need not be overcome by peevishness any more. The grace of God is sufficient for you. It seems that you are at present in your place: "How knowest thou, but thou shalt gain thy brother?" The most profitable way of reading is to read in an exact method: Suppose a chapter or two (as time may serve) in the Old Testament, with the Notes, in the morning; and a chapter, more or less, of the New Testament, and Notes, in the afternoon or evening. Next to this, it might be useful to read the Works in order, only not too fast, not too much at a time. For all reading should be joined with meditation and prayer. Read a little; pray and meditate much. In order to converse usefully, we had a rule at Oxford, to plan every conversation before we went into company; to consider, what subject would be most useful, and how to prosecute it. And though of yourself you are not sufficient for these things, yet One is nigh to supply all your wants. Love Him, and trust Him for all things; and continue to love, for his sake,

My dear Patty,

Yours affectionately.

DCCXC.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

LEWISHAM, January 19, 1773.

IF nothing unforeseen prevent, I shall be at Newbury on Monday, March 8th. You should not be content with coming yourself, but bring Mr. and Mrs. Jacques with you.

I doubt not but you will see a still greater increase of the work of God at Watlington: Only lose no time! Be instant in season, out of season! In due time you will reap, if you faint not.

God gives the full assurance of hope sooner or later, as it seemeth Him good. But the main point is, let your heart be whole with Him.



Let no false rival claim a part,  
Nor sin disseize him of his own !

I am, dear Patty,  
Yours affectionately.

DCCXCI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, *Near LONDON, October 27, 1778.*  
Now is the hour and the power of darkness : But

In vain does Satan rage his hour ;  
Beyond his chain he cannot go.

And I doubt not, most of those that are scattered abroad in the dark and cloudy day, will again be gathered in by our good Shepherd. It is right, therefore, to be concerned for them ; but not to sorrow as those without hope ; seeing the Lord hath not forgotten to be gracious. You that are spiritual, labour to restore them that are fallen, in the spirit of meekness ; and your labour shall not be in vain. Meantime, in your patience possess your own soul. All things shall work together for *your* good ; shall bring you nearer to God.

Your affectionate brother.

DCCXCII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, *Near LONDON, February 25, 1774.*

I SHOULD have been glad to see you at Newbury ; but the will of our Lord is best.

You can never speak too strongly or explicitly upon the head of Christian perfection. If you speak only faintly and indirectly, none will be offended, and none profited. But if you speak out, although some will probably be angry, yet others will soon find the power of God unto salvation.

You have good encouragement from the experience of her whom God has lately taken to himself. Speak to all, and spare not. Be instant in season, out of season : And pray always with all perseverance ; particularly for

Yours affectionately.

DCCXCIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, *BRISTOL, October 6, 1774.*

ON Monday se'nnight, the 17th of this month, I hope to be at Wallingford ; and at High-Wycomb, as usual, on the Thursday following.

When you have time, you would do well to write down

the particular circumstances of your conversion to God. The more closely we are united to Him, the more nearly we shall be united to each other. I cannot doubt but He will make Mr. Wolf an instrument of good to many of His children. He is simple of heart, and much devoted to God; and, indeed, so is his wife also.

Yours affectionately.

DCCXCIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, LUTON, *January 11, 1775.*

I HOPE, with God's help, to be at Newbury on Thursday, March 2; and to have the pleasure of seeing you there, unless something unforeseen should hinder.

You have lately had a wintry season at Watlington; now you may expect the return of spring. Beware you are not weary and faint in your mind! Even bodily weakness may incline you to this; especially when there appears to be no increase, but rather a decay, of the work of God. Yet I do not apprehend that you are yet at liberty to remove from Watlington. Cannot Hannah Ball step over for two or three days, and kindle a flame among you? If she does not come, look for One greater than her! How soon? It may be before you see another day.

I am, dear Patty,

Yours affectionately.

DCCXCV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, WORCESTER, *March 15, 1775.*

YOU only tell me in general that your health is declining: But you do not say in what manner, or from what cause. When did you begin to feel any decay of health? In what manner was you affected? What did you imagine it was owing to? How have you been since, from time to time? What means of recovery have you used; and with what effect? Write to me as particularly as you can on these heads, directing to me in Dublin. It is our duty to take care of our bodily health; but what is this to an healthful mind? Let your mind be

All praise, all meekness, and all love.

I am, dear Patty,

Yours affectionately.

DCCXCVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, DUBLIN, *April 5, 1775.*

THE Apothecary seems to have understood your case : But you have done right in leaving off the taking of medicines. But withal you should use all the exercise you can, particularly in the open air. And use what little strength you have to the glory of Him that gave it. Warn every one, and exhort every one, if by any means you may save some.

I am, my dear Patty,  
Yours affectionately.

DCCXCVII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR PATTY, LONDON, *October 13, 1781.*

I RETURNED hither yesterday in the afternoon, and had the pleasure of yours. I hope to be at High-Wycomb on Monday and Tuesday ; at Oxford on Wednesday noon ; and at Witney on Wednesday evening.

If in all these trials your mind is unmoved, and fixed upon Him that loves you, they will only help you forward on your way.

I am, dear Patty,  
Your affectionate brother.

DCCXCVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, *Near LONDON, November 3, 1784.*

I WAS a little disappointed at your not seeing me at Wallingford, as you used to do, before I went away. But I took it for granted, there was some circumstance which I did not know : So I did not blame you.

I am glad you do not let go your confidence, or lose the witness of your sanctification. Take care that you lose not any of the things that you have gained, but that you receive a full reward. Certainly it is a most uncomfortable thing to lose any part of what God hath wrought in us. I wonder how any that have lost the love of God can find any rest in their souls, till they have regained it.

It was well for you that God did not suffer you to find rest in any creature. He had better things in store for

you. One more degree of His love makes you large amends, even in the present world, for every other loss.

I am, dear Patty,

Your affectionate brother.

---

DCCXCIX.—*To Mr. William Simpson.*

DEAR BILLY,                      *Near LONDON, November 11, 1786.*

BUSY as I am, I snatch time to write a few lines, as I judge you had rather see my hand-writing than John Broadbent's.

You must in anywise write a few loving lines to brother Inglis, and tell him I desired you so to do. It may induce him to be a little more careful for the time to come.

The Sunday preaching may continue at Jervas for the present. I suppose the society at Jervas is as large as that at Northallerton; and this is a point which is much to be considered.

You must needs expel out of the society at Knaresborough those that *will* be contentious.

I am, with love to Nancy,

Dear Billy,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCC.—*To the Same.*

DEAR BILLY,                      *LONDON, November 23, 1786.*

YOU have taken, in this intricate affair, the very best method that could be taken. When you have to do with those stubborn spirits, it is absolutely necessary, either to mend them or to end them: And ten persons of a quiet temper are better than thirty contentious ones.

Undoubtedly some of the eloquent men will be sending me heavy complaints. It is well, therefore, that you spoke first.

I am, dear Billy,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCCL.—*To Mr. Robert Hopkins.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      *Near LEEDS, July 25, 1781.*

AS long as you give yourself up to God without reserve, you may be assured He will give you His blessing. Indeed,

you have already received a thousand blessings: But the greatest of all is yet behind,—Christ in a pure and sinless heart, reigning the Lord of every motion there. It is good for you to hold fast what you have attained, and to be continually aspiring after this; and you will never find more life in your own soul, than when you are earnestly exhorting others to go on unto perfection. Many will blame you for doing it; but regard not that: Go on through honour and dishonour. “This one thing I do,” is your motto. I save my own soul, and them that hear me.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ROBERT,

LONDON, *January 22, 1784.*

THE return you are to make for the blessings you have received, is, to declare them to all mankind; and to exhort all believers, strongly and explicitly, to go on to perfection. You never need lose what you now experience; but may increase therein till your spirit returns to God.

You cannot infer that the air of this or that place does not agree with you, because you have a fever there. But if there be a necessity, Christopher Peacock will change places with you.

I am, dear Robert,

Your affectionate brother.

---

DCCCIII.—*To E. B.*

CHESTER, *March 17, 1771.*

You do well to break through that needless fear. Love me more, and fear me less; then you will prove,

Love, like the grave, makes all distinctions vain.

You have great reason to praise Him who hath done great things for you already. What you now want is, to come boldly to the throne of grace; that the hunger and thirst which God has given you may be satisfied. Full salvation is nigh, even at the door. Only believe, and it is yours. It is a great blessing that, at your years, you are preserved from seeking happiness in any creature. You need not,

seeing Christ is yours. O cleave to Him with all your heart!

---

DCCCIV.—*To Mr. Alexander.*

DEAR SIR,                      *Near LONDON, November 21, 1783.*

IT is very certain your day of grace is not passed: If it were, you would be quite easy and unconcerned. It is plain the Lover of souls is still striving with you, and drawing you to himself. But you have no time to lose; for “now is the accepted time; now is the day of salvation!” It is, therefore, your wisdom (without considering what others do, whether Clergyman or layman) to attend to one thing; that is, “to work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.” And nothing can be more sure than that, if you do this, if it be indeed your one care to “seek the kingdom of God and his righteousness, all other things shall be added unto you.” To His protection I commit you and yours; and am,

Dear Sir,

Your affectionate brother.

I write a line to your son:—

DEAR JAMES,                      *Near LONDON, November 21, 1783.*

ONLY let your actions correspond with your words, and then they will have weight with all that hear them. It seems highly probable to me that Providence does not intend you should be a tradesman.

I have known a young man that feared God acquire as much learning in one year, as children usually do in seven. Possibly you may do the same. If you have a desire to try, and we should live till July, I will give you a year’s schooling and board at Kingswood School, and you will then be the better able to judge what it is that God calls you to.

I am

Yours affectionately.

---

DCCCIV.—*To Miss Cooke, afterwards Mrs. Clarke.*

MY DEAR SISTER,                      *BRISTOL, September 24, 1785.*

IT is highly probable my letter to you was intercepted by some person of the same name; who, having opened it,

(likely by a mistake,) was afterwards ashamed to send it you. However, as you have now favoured me with better information, I hope there will be no such mistake for the time to come. But I beg, when you write to me hereafter, do not write as to a stranger, but a friend. Be not afraid of me, because I have lived so much longer than you. I assume nothing upon that account, but wish to stand upon even ground with you, and to converse without either disguise or reserve. I love you all three, and not a little; especially since your sisters spoke so freely to me; yet I do not say in the same degree. There is a mildness and sweetness in your spirit, such as I wish to find in one that is more to me than a common friend. Not that I impute this to nature: Whatever is truly amiable is not of nature, but from a higher principle. Cultivate this, my dear friend, to the uttermost. Still learn of Him who was meek and lowly in heart. O what a blessing it is to be little, and mean, and vile in our own eyes! You are an amiable woman, it is true; but still you are a sinner, born to die! You are an immortal spirit come forth from God, and speedily returning to Him. You know well that one thing, and one thing only, is needful for you upon earth,—to ensure a better portion, to recover the favour and image of God. The former, by his grace, you have recovered; you have tasted of the love of God. See that you do not cast it away. See that you hold fast the beginning of your confidence steadfast unto the end! And how soon may you be made a partaker of sanctification! And not only by a slow and insensible growth in grace, but by the power of the Highest overshadowing you, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, so as utterly to abolish sin, and to renew you in his whole image! If you are simple of heart, if you are willing to receive the heavenly gift, as a little child, without reasoning, why may you not receive it now? He is nigh that sanctifieth; He is with you; He is knocking at the door of your heart!

Come in, my Lord, come in,  
And seize her for thine own!

This is the wish of,

My dear friend,  
Yours in tender affection.

DCCCVI.—*To the Same.*LONDON, *October 30, 1785.*

My dear Miss Cooke leans to the right-hand error. It is safer to think too little than too much of yourself. I blame none for not believing he is in the favour of God, till he is in a manner constrained to believe it. But, laying all circumstances together, I can make no doubt of your having a measure of faith. Many years ago, when one was describing the glorious privilege of a believer, I cried out, "If this be so, I have no faith." He replied, "*Habes fidem, sed exiguam* : 'You have faith, but it is weak.'" The very same thing I say to you, my dear friend. You have faith, but it is only as a grain of mustard-seed. Hold fast what you have, and ask for what you want. There is an irreconcilable variability in the operations of the Holy Spirit on the souls of men ; more especially as to the manner of justification. Many find Him rushing upon them like a torrent, while they experience

The' o'erwhelming power of saving grace.

This has been the experience of many ; perhaps of more, in this late visitation, than in any other age since the times of the Apostles. But in others, He works in a very different way :

He deigns his influence to infuse,  
Sweet, refreshing, as the violet dew.

It has pleased Him to work the latter way in you, from the beginning ; and it is not improbable He will continue (as He has begun) to work in a gentle and almost imperceptible manner. Let Him take his own way : He is wiser than you ; He will do all things well. Do not reason against Him ; but let the prayer of your heart be,—

"Mould as thou wilt thy passive clay !"

I commit you and your dear sisters to His tender care ; and am,

My dear friend,  
Most affectionately yours.



DCCCVII.—*To the Same.*LONDON, *December 14, 1785.*

I LOVE to see the hand-writing of my dear Miss Cooke, even before I open the letter. The thinking of you gives me very sensible pleasure; ever since you spoke so freely to me. There is a remedy for the evil of which you complain, —unprofitable reasonings; and I do not know whether there is any other. It is the peace of God. This will not only keep your heart, your affections, and passions, as a garrison keeps a city; but your mind likewise; all the workings and all the wanderings of your imagination. And this is promised: “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find.”

Though it seem to tarry long,  
True and faithful is His word.

A small measure of it you have frequently found; which may encourage you to look for the fulness. But if you were to give scope to your reasonings, there would be no end: The farther you went, the more you would be entangled; so true it is, that, to our weak apprehension,

The ways of Heaven are dark and intricate,  
Puzzled with mazes, and perplex'd with error.

But that peace will silence all our hard thoughts of God, and give us in patience to possess our souls. I believe, at the time that any first receive the peace of God, a degree of holy boldness is connected with it; and that all persons, when they are newly justified, are called to bear witness to the truth. Those who use the grace which is then freely given to them of God will not only have the continuance of it, but a large increase; for “unto him that hath,” (that is, uses what he hath,) “shall be given, and he shall have more abundantly.” We shall grow in boldness the more, the more we use it; and it is by the same method, added to prayer, that we are to recover anything we have lost. Do what in you lies, and He will do the rest. My best service attends Mr. L., who I hope will be holier and happier by means of his late union. He certainly will, if Mrs. L. and he provoke one another to love and to good works. I do not despair of having the pleasure to wait on them at the

Devizes. My best wishes wait likewise on Miss S. I hope you two are one. Indeed

I am, my dear Miss Cookc,  
Yours in tender affection.

DCCCVIII.—*To the Same.*

BATH, *September 9, 1786.*

IT gives me much satisfaction, my dear friend, to observe you are happier than when you wrote last. I do not doubt but you have at some times a rich foretaste of the state which your soul pants after. And even

These wandering gleams of light,  
And gentle ardours from above,  
Have made you sit, like seraph bright,  
Some moments on a throne of love.

But you know you are not to rest here: This is but a drop out of the ocean. Only this has been known again and again, that one of those happy moments has been the prelude of pure love. It has opened into the full liberty of the children of God. Who knows but this may be your happy experience?—but the next time your soul is so caught up, He that loves you may touch your nature clean, and so take you into the holiest, that

You may never leave the skies,  
Never stoop to earth again.

I am now intent upon my own work, finishing the Life of Mr. Fletcher. This requires all the time I have to spare: So that, as far as it is possible, I must, for two or three months, shut myself up. Two weeks I give to Bristol: After that time, I return to London. I cannot, therefore, have the happiness of seeing Trowbridge this autumn. But might I not see you or your sisters at Bristol? If I am invisible to others, I would not be so to you. You may always command everything that is in the power of,

My very dear friend,  
Yours in life and in death.

DCCCIX.—*To the Same.*

LONDON, *December 12, 1786.*

MY DEAR SISTER AND FRIEND,

ONCE or twice I have been a little out of order this autumn; but it was only for a day or two at a time. In

general, my health has been better for these last ten years, than it ever was for ten years together since I was born. Ever since that good fever which I had in the north of Ireland, I have had, as it were, a new constitution. All my pains and aches have forsaken me, and I am a stranger even to weariness of any kind. This is the Lord's doing, and it may well be marvellous in all our eyes. You oblige me much, (and so do your very dear sisters,) by being so solicitous about my health: I take it as a mark of your sincere affection. Meantime I wonder at you! I am almost ashamed that you should love me so well. It is plain how little you know me.

I am glad to find that the hunger and thirst after righteousness which God has given you does not abate. His providence cannot fail. You shall be filled, yea, satisfied therewith. But when you express it, not many will understand you, except Mrs. B., and our dear Betsy Johnson. However, do not fail to encourage all the believers about you, to press on to this mark. Some will gladly receive the word of exhortation; and surely a few witnesses will be raised up. I cannot tell you how much I am

Yours.

DCCCX.—*To the Same.*

MACCLESFIELD, *March 31, 1787.*

Now you give me a proof, my dear Miss Cooke, that you have not forgotten me. But considering that I am usually obliged to write in haste, I often doubt whether my correspondence is worth having.

When the witness and the fruit of the Spirit meet together, there can be no stronger proof that we are of God. But still you may relapse into doubts, if you do not steadily watch against evil reasonings; and were you to substitute the deductions of reason for the witness of the Spirit, you never would be established. That all trials are for good, you cannot always see, (at least for the present,) but you may always believe. You have doubtless reason to be thankful to God, that you feel love in your heart. Nay, indeed, thankfulness, gratitude, and love, for benefits received, are almost, if not quite, the same. Accordingly in this world, (whatever be the case in the next,) we love Him because he hath first loved us. This love is undoubtedly the

spring of all inward and outward obedience. But we delight to do what He has commanded; and for that very reason, because He has commanded it. So,

Obedience is our pure delight,  
To do the pleasure of our Lord.

I was a good deal refreshed with the company of you and your dear sisters, when we last met. The more so, because I trust you are all going forward in the good way. Peace be multiplied unto you!

My dear friend, adieu!

DCCCXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, LONDON, *December 21, 1787.*

YOU have unspeakable reason to praise God for his late manifestations to you. And you will generally observe, that large consolations are preceded by deep exercises of soul. And we all have reason to praise Him for the many tokens we see of his approaching kingdom. It is plain, Satan, the murderer and the deceiver of mankind, is in a great measure bound already: He is not now permitted to deceive the nations, as in the past ages. And even in the Romish countries scarce any are now called to resist unto blood. If two or three of you continue instant in prayer, the work will revive at Trowbridge also. When you are met together, boldly lay hold on the promise: His word will speak, and will not lie. Peace be with all your spirits!

I am, my dear sister,  
Yours most affectionately.

DCCCXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, DUMFRIES, *June 1, 1790.*

THE great question is, What can be done for Adam Clarke? Now, will you save his life? Look round; consider if there be any Circuit where he can have much rest, and little work; or shall he and you spend September in my rooms at Kingswood, on condition that he shall preach but twice a week, and ride to the Hot Wells every day? I think he must do this, or die; and I do not want him (neither do you) to run away from us in haste. You need not be told that this will be attended with some expense: If it be, we can make it easy. I am apt to think this will be the best

way. In the mean time, let him do as much as he can, and no more. It is probable I shall stay with you a little longer, as my strength does not much decline. I travelled yesterday nearly eighty miles, and preached in the evening without any pain. The Lord does what pleases Him. Peace be with all your spirits !

I am, my dear sister,  
Yours most affectionately.

---

DCCCXIII.—*To Mr. Adam Clarke, afterwards  
Dr. Adam Clarke.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      LONDON, *February 3, 1786.*

You do well in insisting upon full and present salvation, whether men will hear or forbear; as also in preaching abroad, when the weather permits, and recommending fasting, both by precept and example. But you need not wonder that all these are opposed, not only by formalists, but by half-Methodists. You should not forget French, or anything you have learned. I do not know whether I have read the book you speak of: You may send your translation at your leisure. Be all in earnest, and you shall see greater things than these.

I am, my dear Adam,  
Your affectionate brother.

DCCCXIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      LONDON, *February 21, 1786.*

I LIKE the extract from Mr. Brittain's well. Probably it may have a place in the Magazine. It is well you have broken into Stonehouse. Now enlarge your borders, while I am with you: Probably you will have rougher weather when I am gone. You may come to the Conference. You and your fellow-labourers should spend some time in consulting together how you may enlarge your borders. This mild weather is almost as good as summer: I preached abroad last Monday. O let us snatch every means of redeeming the time! Eternity is at hand!

I am, dear Adam,  
Your affectionate brother.

In a few days I shall set out for Bristol.

DCCCXV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM, Near LONDON, January 3, 1787.

You see, none that trust in Him are confounded. When God is for us, who can be against us? Discipline is the great want in Guernsey; without which, the work of God cannot prosper. You did well to set upon it without delay, and to be as exact as possible. It is a true saying, "The soul and the body make the man; and the spirit and discipline make a Christian." We heard of a remarkable awakening in some part of the island. I hope those who were then awakened are not all fallen asleep again. Preaching in the morning is one excellent means of keeping their souls awake. If you desire to have any health, you must never pass one day without walking, at least, an hour: And take care not to speak too loud, or too long. Never exceed an hour at a time. Grace be with all your spirits!

I am, dear Adam,

Yours affectionately.

DCCCXVI.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM, PLYMOUTH-DOCK, March 3, 1787.

AFTER staying a few days in Bristol, I am engaged to visit the intermediate societies between Stroud and Chester. I must then hasten to Dublin, or I shall not have time to go through the four provinces of Ireland. I shall not, therefore, have a day to spare before the Conference. Possibly, after the Conference, I may be able to stay two or three weeks. And, if so, I shall pass away to Southampton, in order to spend two or three days at Guernsey, and as many in Jersey. This will we do, if God permit. I am glad you are minded to make a trial at Alderney. If God send you, He will make a way for you. The hearts of all men are in His hands. To His care I commend you; and

I am, my dear Adam,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCXVII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM, BIRMINGHAM, March 26, 1787.

YOU have reason to praise God for giving you such favour in the eyes of the poor people of Alderney. And I am in hopes our brother De Queteville will meet with a

blessing in watering the seed which is already sown. But I observe in the map the name of another island, not very far from Alderney. Are there none that understand English in the Isle of Sark? If there are, I cannot tell whether you are not a debtor to those poor souls also.

If confinement hurts you, do not submit to it. Spread yourself abroad through all the four islands. But I doubt speaking loud hurts you more, if not speaking long too. Beware of this for conscience' sake. Do not offer murder for sacrifice; but, before it be too late, take the advice of,

Dear Adam,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCXVIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM,

*Near LONDON, November 9, 1787.*

I AM glad to hear that there is a prospect of a good work in the Isle of Alderney, as well as in the Isles of Jersey and Guernsey. I do not despair of seeing our Jersey and Guernsey friends once more, if it should please God to prolong my life. I love them dearly; particularly the family at Mount Plaisir, in Guernsey, and J. B., in Jersey. I would take some pains, and undergo some fatigue, were it only to spend two or three days with them. One would wonder that the prince of this world was so slow, and that he did not sooner fight, lest his kingdom should be delivered up. He will at length do what he can. But if you continue instant in prayer, God will put the bridle in his mouth. It is well we should be convinced that we have need of Him. Our safety will we ascribe to Him alone.

As the case of sister H. is too singular to be credited without the fullest evidence, I think you would do well to write the account fair, and have it formally attested by Mrs. J., Mr. A., and three or four more who were eye-witnesses of the whole. You must not believe all you hear concerning the circumstances of Mr. L.'s marriage. Indeed, you should believe nothing about them, till you have told it to themselves. Envy will invent a thousand things, and with the most plausible circumstances. Lead them, if it be possible, which can never be done by harshness; but love will "break the bone."

The Bailiff was talking of building you a house at St. Peter's: I think it may be done by and by. Be exact in

every point of discipline. Keep our rules, and they will keep you.

I am, dear Adam,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXIX.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM,

BRISTOL, *March 9, 1789.*

IF I should live to see you another Conference, I should be glad to have sister Clarke and you here, rather than at most other places; because I spend more time here myself, than at any other place, except London. I am glad to hear that God has raised up so able a Preacher from the islands; but certainly you should spare no pains in teaching him to read and write English. And I do not doubt but if he learned with a single eye, he would be largely strengthened by the blessing of God.

It would be a reason for being very wary in choosing names for our children, if that old remark were true:—

That our first tempers from example flow,  
And borrow that example from our names.

Peace be with you and yours!

I am, dear Adam,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXX.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM,

Near DUBLIN, *June 25, 1789.*

YOU send me good news with regard to the islands. Who can hurt us, if God is on our side? Trials may come, but they are all good. I have not been so tried for many years. Every week, and almost every day, I am bespattered in the public papers. Many are in tears on the occasion; many terribly frightened, and crying out, "O what will the end be?" *What will it be?* Why, glory to God in the highest, and peace and good-will among men. But, meantime, what is to be done? What will be the most effectual means to stem this furious torrent? I have just visited the classes, and find still in the society upwards of a thousand members; and among them, many as deep Christians as any I have met with in Europe. But who is able to watch over these, that they may not be moved from their steadfastness? I know none more proper than Adam Clarke and his wife.



Indeed it may seem hard for them to go into a strange land again. Well, you may come to me at Leeds, the latter end of next month ; and if you can show me any that are more proper, I will send them instead, that God may be glorified in all that is designed by,

Dear Adam,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXXI.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM,

BRISTOL, *September 9, 1790.*

DID not the terrible weather that you had at sea make you forget your fatigue by land? Come, set one against the other, and you have no great reason to complain of your journey. You will have need of all the courage and prudence which God has given you. Indeed, you will want constant supplies of both. Very gently, and very steadily, you should proceed between the rocks on either hand. In the great revival at London, my first difficulty was, to bring in temper those who opposed the work ; and my next, to check and regulate the extravagancies of those that promoted it. And this was far the hardest part of the work ; for many of them would bear no check at all. But I followed one rule, though with all calmness : “ You must either bend or break.” Meantime, while you act exactly right, expect to be blamed by both sides. I will give you a few directions : 1. See that no prayer-meeting continue later than nine at night, particularly on Sunday. Let the house be emptied before the clock strikes nine. 2. Let there be no exhortation at any prayer-meeting. 3. Beware of jealousy, or judging one another. 4. Never think a man is an enemy to the work, because he reproveth irregularities. Peace be with you and yours !

I am, dear Adam,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXXII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM,

LONDON, *November 26, 1790.*

THE account you send me of the continuance of the great work of God in Jersey gives me great satisfaction. To retain the grace of God, is much more than to gain it: Hardly one in three does this. And this should be strongly and explicitly urged on all who have tasted of perfect love.

If we can prove that any of our Local Preachers or Leaders, either directly or indirectly, speak against it, let him be a Local Preacher or Leader no longer. I doubt whether he should continue in the society. Because he that could speak thus in our congregations cannot be an honest man. I wish sister Clarke to do what she can, but no more than she can. Betsy Ritchie, Miss Johnson, and M. Clarke are women after my own heart. Last week I had an excellent letter from Mrs. Pawson, (a glorious witness of full salvation,) showing how impossible it is to retain pure love without growing therein.

Wishing every blessing to you and all the family,

I am, dear Adam,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

∴ DCCCXXIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR ADAM,

LONDON, *February 9, 1791.*

YOU have great reason to bless God for giving you strength according to your day. He has indeed supported you in a wonderful manner under these complicated afflictions. You may well say, I will put my trust in thee as long as I live. I will desire Dr. Whitehead to consider your case, and give you his thoughts upon it. I am not afraid of your doing too little, but too much. I am in imminent danger of this. Do a little at a time, that you may do the more. My love to sisters Cookman and Boyle; but it is a doubt with me, whether I shall cross the seas any more. What Preacher was it who first omitted meeting the select society? I wonder it did not destroy the work! You have done right in setting up the Strangers' (Friend). Society. It is an excellent institution. I am quite at a loss concerning Mr. Maddan. I know not what to think of him. Send me your best thoughts concerning him. At any rate, write, and send me your thoughts on Animal Magnetism. I set my face against this device of Satan. I know its principles full well. With much love to your wife,

I am, my dear Adam,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCXXIV.—*To Miss Jane Bisson, afterwards Mrs. Cock, of St. Helier's, Jersey.*

MY DEAR SISTER, MANCHESTER, *August 4, 1787.*

ALTHOUGH it is probable I shall see you in a few days, yet I must write a few lines. I rejoice to hear that you are still happy in God; and trust that happiness will never cease, but rather increase more and more, till your spirit returns to God. Be assured there is no necessity that it ever should cease. He is willing to give it you always; and He can purify you by the fire of his love, as well as by the fire of affliction. Do not therefore expect or desire affliction, but let the joy of the Lord be your strength. That your joy and peace may flow as a river, is the prayer of,

My dear sister,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCXXV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, PENZANCE, *September 7, 1787.*

ALMOST as soon as we were in the ship, the wind entirely died away. But we knew our remedy: We went into the cabin, and applied ourselves to Him that has all power. Immediately a fair wind sprung up, which never ceased till it brought us to Penzance bay. Our brethren here were not a little surprised, having given up all hopes of seeing us this year: But so much the more thankful they were to the Giver of every good gift.

I have thought of you much since I had the satisfaction of conversing with you: And I will tell you every thought that passed through my mind, as I wish always to do. It seems to me that our blessed Lord is willing to show all the power of his grace in you; even his power of saving to the uttermost those that come unto God through Him. But there is a mountain that stands in the way; and how you will get over it, I know not: I mean pride. O my sister, what can save you from this, but the mighty power of God! I almost tremble for you. If you give way to it, yea, but a little, your grace will wither away. But still, that God whom you serve is able to deliver you; and He really will, if you continue instant in prayer. That other temptation which did formerly beset you, I trust will assault you no more: Or, if it should, you are now better

prepared for it; and you will know in whom your strength lieth.

When you have opportunity, my dear Jenny, write freely to

Your affectionate brother.

I hope Miss Lempriere has recovered her health.

DCCCXXVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,                      LONDON, *December 17, 1787.*

I LOVE to hear from you; especially when you send me that good news that you still stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made you free. I have a good hope that you will never lose any of the things which He has wrought in you, but that you will receive a full reward! Do you always find a clear sense of the presence of the ever-blessed Trinity? Are you enabled to rejoice evermore? In what sense do you pray without ceasing? And can you in everything give thanks; seeing it is the will of God concerning you in Christ Jesus? What you speak of your communion with Him comforts my heart. I love to read, to hear any part of your experience. If I doubted of anything you say, I would tell you so. I want to know everything wherein I can serve you. My dear Jenny, do not forget to pray for

Yours.

DCCCXXVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,                      *Near LONDON, February 20, 1788.*

YOUR last letter gave me a very sensible pleasure: Indeed, so do all your letters. There is something in your spirit that does me good, that softens and quickens me too: But at the same time, that melancholy thought occurs, that it is doubtful whether I shall ever have the satisfaction of taking you by the hand again. I shall, if it be the will of Him that orders all things well; who orders all for our profit, that we may be partakers of His holiness. And we know, He will not deny to them that fear Him any manner of thing that is good.

Your speaking of trials makes me almost cry out, in the words of our poet,—

“Secluded from the world, and all its care,  
Hast thou to joy or grieve, to hope or fear?”

Shut up, as you are, in your father's house, and a little, retired, quiet island, and having food to eat and raiment to put on, what can you find to try you? One of your trials I can easily foresee. With all your innocence and prudence, you cannot escape censure. In spite of all you can do, the good that is in you will surely be evil spoken of. And it is not unlikely, some will join in the cry against you from whom you expected better things. But as you are just entering into life, one would think you had hardly yet met with any who rewarded you evil for good, and gave you occasion to cry out,

“Ingratitude! sharp as the viper's tooth!”

However, you have one Friend that never fails, and that is always near. What a comfort it is, that He is about your bed, and about your path, still laying his hand upon you! As soon as you have opportunity, write without reserve to  
Yours most affectionately.

DCCCXXVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, EDINBURGH, *May 20, 1788.*

FROM my long delay to answer, you might conclude I had forgotten you; but that is impossible: I shall not easily forget the agreeable conversations I had with you at Mont Plaisir, or the plain and artless account which, from time to time, you have given me of your experience. I shall be glad to know how you have found your soul since you altered your condition. You must needs have abundantly more care now than you had in a single life. And are you able still, among all these cares, to attend upon the Lord without distraction? Does nothing make you inattentive to His presence? Is there no intermission of your communion with the Father and the Son? When you have leisure, you will send an answer to,

My dear sister,

Yours very affectionately.

You may direct to London.

DCCCXXIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER, LONDON, *October 2, 1788.*

It gives me much pleasure to find you are still happy in God, leaning upon your Beloved. O may you increase

therein more and more! May you be more and more holy, and you will be more and more happy! This I long for, even your perfection; your growing up in all things into Him that is our Head. O may you never endeavour

Love's all-sufficient sea to raise  
By drops of creature-happiness!

I sent you a little book or two by Mr. Clarke. If I can be of any service to you in anything, it would be an unspeakable satisfaction to,

My dear sister,  
Yours affectionately.

DCCCXXX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

DUBLIN, *April 7, 1789.*

I CANNOT but say, that it was some concern to me when I first heard that you was married; because I was afraid that you would be less useful than you might have been in a single life. And indeed I hoped that if you married at all, it would be one of our Preachers: Then I could have stationed him in some Circuit where I should have had frequent opportunities of conversing with you. I am glad, however, that you are still happy in God. If you had married an ungodly man, it would certainly have been a sin. But it was no sin to marry a child of God; yea, though he were but a babe in Christ. And surely, if you pray mightily for him, the Lord will hear your prayer, and supply whatever is yet wanting in his faith, till he is happy, and holy, and perfect in love. I hope there is no shyness between you and Mr. or Mrs. Clarke. And do you converse freely with the other Preachers? Do you meet in band? I hope you are still acquainted with Miss Lempriere; and (I think the name of her friend is) Mrs. Saumurez. I want you and them continually to grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. O let us improve this span of life to the uttermost!

Yours in tender affection.

DCCCXXXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

LEEDS, *August 3, 1789.*

I AM always well pleased to hear from you. When I first heard of your marriage, I was afraid of two things: The one was, that it would hurt your soul; the other, that

it would prevent your usefulness; at least, that you would not be useful in so high a degree as otherwise you might be. But your last letter has given me much satisfaction. I now hope that your own soul has suffered no loss; and likewise, that you will find many opportunities of doing good, and will improve them to the uttermost. I want you to do the will of God below, as angels do above. I want you to be all light, all fire, all love; and to grow up in all things into Him that is our Head; and still to love and pray for

Yours affectionately.

DCCCXXXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

November 3, 1789.

WHEN I heard Mr. Brackenbury give the first account of you, I had a great desire of having some conversation with you; and a much greater when I read the account of your experience which you had given him. How is it with you now, my dear friend? Is your soul now as much alive as ever? Do you still find deep and uninterrupted communion with God; with the Three-One God; with the Father, and the Son, through the Spirit? Do not you find anything deaden or flatten your soul? Do you now rejoice evermore? Do you pray without ceasing? Are you always conscious of the loving presence of God? Do you in everything give thanks, knowing it is the will of God concerning you in Christ Jesus?

Are you now as zealous of good works, and as active therein, as ever you was? And do you now live in eternity, and walk in eternity; and experience the life that is hid with Christ in God. Have you one or more children? With whom do you now maintain the most intimate acquaintance? Do you sometimes visit our friends in Guernsey? Are there any books which you have a mind to have? Or is there anything else in which I can serve you? This would at all times be a pleasure to

Yours very affectionately.

DCCCXXXIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

LONDON, February 13, 1790.

I LOVE to see your name at the bottom of a letter; especially when it brings me the good news, that your spirit

is still rejoicing in God your Saviour. My sight is so far decayed, that I cannot well read a small print by candle-light; but I can write almost as well as ever I could: And it does me no harm, but rather good, to preach once or twice a day. A few days since, I had a letter from one of our sisters in Scotland, whose experience agrees much with yours; only she goes farther: She speaks of being "taken up into heaven, surrounded with the blessed Trinity, and let into God the Father." I commend you to his care; and am

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCXXXIV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

NEWCASTLE, *June 6, 1790.*

To hear from you is always a pleasure to me; though it is a pleasure mixed with concern when I hear of your weakness or sickness: Only I know, the Lord loveth whom He chasteneth. But of what kind is your illness? Perhaps I might be enabled to tell you how to remove it: And if you can recover your health, you ought; for health is a great blessing. In August last my strength failed almost at once; and my sight in a great measure went from me. But all is well: I can still write almost as easily as ever; and I can read in a clear light; and I think, if I could not read or write at all, I could still say something for God. When you have more strength, tell me more of the work of God, whether in yourself or those round about you. And ought you not to let me know if you are in any temporal distress? For everything that concerns you, concerns,

My dear Jeanny,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCXXXV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

Near BRISTOL, *July 22, 1790.*

I HAVE reason to bless God, that I can still see a little; so that I can, as yet, go on in my business: And it is enough if we are enabled either to do or to suffer His holy and acceptable will. It is no wonder, if among yourselves there arise men speaking perverse things. Wherever our Lord sows his good seed, Satan will endeavour to sow his tares also: And they are suffered, the tares and the wheat, to grow up together for a season, to exercise our faith and



patience. I hope Mr. Stevens will be more and more useful among you, as his eye is single; therefore there can be no objection to his continuing with you a little longer. I am always glad to hear a little of your experience; and indeed the more the better. Wishing you and yours every blessing,

I remain

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCXXXVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

LONDON, *November 9, 1790.*

How unsearchable are the counsels of God! How little are we able to account for his ways! When I saw the wonderful manner wherein He had dealt with you from your early years, when I talked with you in Jersey, and when I conversed more largely with you in Guernsey, I thought He was preparing you for a large sphere of action. Surely you was not then designed to be shut up in a little cottage, and fully taken up with domestic cares! I was in hopes of seeing all the graces which He had given you employed in far other things. However, although I cannot deny that you are now acting in a lower sphere than was originally designed you, yet I trust you still enjoy communion with God the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ. I hope you are still sensible, wherever you go, of the presence of the ever-blessed Trinity; and that you continually enjoy that loving-kindness which is better than life itself.

I wish you would inform me of your present outward and inward state. Have you all things that are needful for the body? Do your brethren and sisters treat you with tender affection, or with coldness? Are the Preachers free and loving to you? Is your soul as much alive as ever? Are the consolations of the Holy One small with you; or are they as frequent and as plentiful as ever? Write as particularly as you can, to

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCXXXVII.—*To Mr. William Percival, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne.*

DEAR BILLY, LONDON, *February 17, 1787.*

YOU cannot be too watchful against evil speaking, or too zealous for the poor Church of England. I commend sister Percival for having her child baptized there, and for returning public thanks. By all means go to church as often as you can, and exhort all Methodists so to do. They that are enemies to the Church are enemies to me. I am a friend to it, and ever was. By our reading prayers we prevent our people's contracting an hatred for forms of prayer; which would naturally be the case, if we always prayed extempore. I am, with love to sister Percival,

Dear Billy,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCXXXVIII.—*To Mr. George Holder.*

DEAR GEORGE, BATH, *September 15, 1787.*

UPON mature deliberation, I judge it most advisable that John Barber should remove to Edinburgh; (for I can trust him in any part of Great Britain;) and that you should supply his place at York. As soon as may be, inform him and Mr. Rutherford of this, that there may be as little delay as possible.

I am, dear George,

Yours affectionately.

DCCCXXXIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 28, 1789.*

YOU say, "The last quarter, when we compared our plans with the Minutes of Conferencè, we wanted a considerable number of people whom Mr. Crook had given in to you." I cannot understand this. Cannot Mr. Crook cast up a plain account? And surely, neither he, nor you, nor any Preacher, would wilfully give in a false account.

There is something very remarkable in the relation which you give of the life and death of Mr. Charles Laco. "Right precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints." And every Assistaunt should take all possible care to procure

the best account of them that can be had. These accounts are frequently means of awakening men of the world, as well as of encouraging the children of God. In every place the subscribers to the Magazines will fall off, unless great care be taken. You have need of great diligence as well in this as in all other parts of your office.

I am, dear George,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXL.—*To the Same.*

DEAR GEORGE,

DUBLIN, *June 24, 1789.*

You send me an agreeable account of the work of God in the Isle. If He will work, who shall stay His hand? I should be glad of an opportunity of seeing my friends that are with you once more; but I cannot reasonably expect it. In my last voyage, the sea affected me more than ever it did before in my life; so that I perceive my voyages draw toward an end. Brother Smith may bring all the accounts to the Conference, and will be stationed in England the next year.

I am, dear George,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXLI.—*To the Same.*

DEAR GEORGE,

Near LONDON, *November 20, 1789.*

You did well to remember the case of Dewsbury house, and to send what you could to Mr. Mather. I exceedingly disapprove of your publishing anything in the Manx language. On the contrary, we should do everything in our power to abolish it from the earth, and persuade every member of our society to learn and talk English. This would be much hindered by providing them with hymns in their own language. Therefore, gently and quietly let that proposal drop. I hope you and your fellow-labourers are of one heart. Peace be with your spirits!

I am, dear George,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXLII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR GEORGE,

ABERDEEN, *May 24, 1790.*

I HAVE no objection to your being in an English Circuit next year, as brother Brown is staying another in the island;

which I suppose may be supplied by three Preachers this year, as it was the last. When the wit told the world of my being in the water at Portsmouth, I was three or four hundred miles from it. Be zealous for God, and you will all see the fruit of your labour.

I am, dear George,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXLIII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR GEORGE,

LONDON, *October 30, 1790.*

THE Assistant in every Circuit (not the Leaders) is to determine how each Preacher is to travel. If Jonathan Hern will not, or cannot, take his turn with his fellow-labourers, I must send another that will. I do not like dividing Circuits. Could not three or more of the northern places be added to the Sunderland or Newcastle Circuits, in order to lessen yours, and bring it into a six weeks' Circuit? Pray send me the manner of your travelling through your Circuit. I think I shall order it better.

I am, with love to sister Holder, dear George,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXLIV.—*To Miss Harriet Lewis, of Dudley.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

MADELEY, *March 29, 1788.*

YOU see I cannot refuse anything that you desire; so I write the first opportunity. I was much surprised at the account which you gave of what had lately befallen your friend. But in the whole course of that strange affair one may discover the hand of God. I am persuaded it was the hand of God for good, both in regard to him and you: To him, that he might learn both more patience and resignation in himself, and more meekness and forbearance toward others: To you, that, being cut off from worldly hope, you might simply and nakedly hang upon the living God! You have already tasted that He is gracious. Go on! You are in His school, the school of affliction, where you will always find Him a present help. But He does not yet clearly point out the way that you should go. I was greatly pleased with your openness the other day.

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCXLV.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

DUBLIN, *April 2, 1789.*

CONSIDERING how changeable human nature is, I should have thought you would have forgotten me before now: I was therefore agreeably surprised when I had the pleasure of seeing you at Dudley. You seemed to be just the same as you was the first time that I conversed with you at Mr. Moor's house; to be as desirous now as you was then, to be not almost but altogether a Christian. But if this be your determination, you must remember you cannot be warm alone; you must needs find one, if not more, with whom you can converse freely on the things of God. This you may properly make matter of prayer: And sooner or later your prayer will be heard; although some of those with whom you once conversed are grown cold. But God is able to provide you with others who will not be unstable as water. It is a great blessing that He has upheld your goings in the way, and enabled you still to press on to the mark. May He stablish, strengthen, and settle you! So prays

Yours affectionately.

DCCCXLVI.—*To the Same.*LEEDS, *August 3, 1789.*

You see the blessed effects of unconditional perseverance! It leads the way, by easy steps, first to presumption, and then to black despair! There will be no way to recover your poor friend to a scriptural faith, but by taking away that broken reed from her; and by convincing her, that if she dies in her present state she will perish eternally. It will indeed be a medicine that will put her to pain; but it will be the only one that will save her soul alive. What a blessing it is, my dear Harriet, that you have been saved from this poisonous doctrine! and that you are enabled to follow after that holiness without which we cannot see the Lord! So run, that you may obtain. The prize is before you. Never be weary or faint in your mind. In due time you will reap, if you faint not.

I am

Yours affectionately.

DCCCXLVII.—*To Miss Rachel Jones, of Barton-le-Willows, near York.*

MY DEAR SISTER, BRISTOL, *March 2, 1789.*

As you desired it, I cannot but send you a line, although I have not a moment to spare. You have exceeding reason to praise God, who has dealt so mercifully with you. You have reason to praise Him likewise for hearing your prayer, and hearing for those of your household. Now be a pattern for all that are around about you. Be a pattern of meekness and lowliness in particular. Be the least of all, and the servant of all. Be a companion of them, and them only, that worship in spirit and in truth. Read, again and again, the thirteenth chapter of St. Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians. Then shall your light shine more and more unto the perfect day.

I am, dear sister,  
Your affectionate brother.

---

DCCCXLVIII.—*To Mrs. Ingram, of Limerick.*

MY DEAR MADAM, DUBLIN, *June 28, 1789.*

YOUR letter gave me much satisfaction. I am obliged to you for taking the trouble of writing. Indeed, when I saw your name, I was afraid of finding a fresh accusation; therefore, I was the more agreeably surprised when I read what you had written. I shall not easily do anything that would give you pain; but whatever would be agreeable to you, will be so to,

Dear Madam,  
Your affectionate servant.

DCCCXLIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR MADAM, DUBLIN, *July 5, 1789.*

AFTER the fair and candid account that Miss Ingram and you had given of the transaction, there was no fear that I should be much prejudiced by anything which had occurred. I advise my dear Becky and you to say as little as possible of what is past. It will then pass away like a dream; while you

both forget the things that are behind, and press towards the prize of your high calling in Christ Jesus.

I am, dear Madam,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCL.—*To Miss Rebecca Ingram.*

WATERFORD, *April 29, 1789.*

To receive a line from you was an unexpected pleasure. You will please to inform Mr. Brown, that, as I purpose setting out from Kilfennan pretty early on Tuesday morning, May 12, I shall probably be at Limerick between twelve and one. I am glad to find your love does not grow cold; nor your desires after all the mind that was in Christ. Now is the time to regain the whole image of God, wherein you was created. O be satisfied with nothing less; and you will surely receive it by simple faith! The Lord increase your faith! So prays

Yours affectionately.

DCCCLI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BECKY,

DUBLIN, *June 28, 1789.*

I WILL tell you my thoughts without the least reserve. These are the rules in the large Minutes of Conference,—that “no Methodist (and least of all a Preacher) ought to marry a woman without the consent of her parents;” and the same thing is insisted upon in one of the sermons in the Arminian Magazine. Therefore, I cannot commend Mr. Brown for saying anything to you on that head, without the consent of your father. But I exceedingly approve of your present temper and behaviour. I commend your resignation to the will of God. Keep there! Beware of murmuring; beware of fretting; beware of the sorrow which worketh death! I commend you to Him who can save you to the utmost; and am,

My dear Becky,

Yours.

DCCCLII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BECKY,

DUBLIN, *July 5, 1789.*

You mistake me. All I mean is this: It is a general rule with us, “No one ought to propose marriage to a woman

till he has the consent of her parents." So you fear where no fear is. You say, "Marriage was not proposed to" you; and I believe you. Therefore, it is your wisdom to think of past things as little as possible. You have something better to employ your thoughts. The prize and the crown are before you. Look unto Jesus! He is altogether lovely: But how little have you loved Him! Let all the springs of your happiness be in Him.

My dear Becky,  
Yours very affectionately.

---

DCCCLIII.—*To Mr. Charles Atmore.*

DEAR CHARLES, MADELEY, *March 24, 1790.*

I AM glad you have set up Sunday-schools at Newcastle. This is one of the best institutions which have been seen in Europe for some centuries, and will do more and more good, provided the Teachers and Inspectors do their duty. Nothing can prevent the success of this blessed work, but the neglect of the instruments. Therefore, be sure to watch them with all care, that they may not grow weary of well-doing. I shall be at Darlington, if God permit, on Tuesday and Wednesday, May 4, 5; on Thursday, at Durham, to preach at twelve o'clock; and at Newcastle, between four and five in the afternoon. Peace be with you all, and yours.

I am, dear Charles,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCCLIV.—*To Mr. James M'Donald.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *October 23, 1790.*

YOU have great reason to praise God for his late glorious work at and near Newry; and I make no doubt but it will continue, yea, and increase, if the subjects of it continue to walk humbly and closely with God. Exhort all our brethren steadily to wait upon God in the appointed means of fasting and prayer; the former of which has been almost universally neglected by the Methodists, both in England and Ireland.



But it is a true remark of Kempis: "The more thou deniest thyself, the more thou wilt grow in grace."

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCCLV.—*To Mr. Edward Lewly, Birmingham.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *January 12, 1791.*

I DO not believe any single person in your select society scruples saying,

"Every moment, Lord, I need  
The merit of thy death."

This is clearly determined in the "Thoughts upon Christian Perfection." But who expects common people to speak accurately? And how easy is it to entangle them in their talk! I am afraid some have done this already. A man that is not a thorough friend to Christian perfection will easily puzzle others, and thereby weaken, if not destroy, any select society. I doubt this has been the case with you. That society was in a lively state, and well united together, when I was last at Birmingham. My health has been better for a few days than it has been for several months. Peace be with all your spirits!

I am

Your affectionate brother.

---

DCCCLVI.—*To Mr. Thomas Broadbent.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *January 29, 1791.*

You have great reason to praise God, that he gives a blessing to your labours. So He will more and more, if you do not entangle yourself with the affairs of this life. If you seek your happiness in God alone, you will never be disappointed: If in anything else, you surely will; for all creatures are broken cisterns. Let your eye be single. Seek one thing—to save yourself and those that hear you.

I am, dear Tommy,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCLVII.—*To Miss Elizabeth Baker, afterwards  
Mrs. Jordan, of Monmouth.*

MY DEAR BETSY,                      CARMARTHEN, *August 26, 1788.*

SINCE I had the pleasure of seeing you, I have been thinking much on what you said concerning your loving others too much. In one sense, this cannot be; you cannot have too much benevolence for the whole human race: But in another sense, you may; you may grieve too much for the distresses of others; even so much as to make you incapable of giving them the relief which otherwise you should give them. So I know one that, when he sees any one in strong pain, directly faints away.

Is it something like this which you mean by feeling too much for others? You can give me two or three instances of it; and then I shall be better able to judge.

Have you a constant witness of the pardoning love of God? And do you find an abiding love to Him? Have you yet been enabled to give Him your whole heart? If so, at what time, and in what manner, did you receive this blessing?

I think you can speak with all freedom to

Yours very affectionately.

DCCCLVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY,                      BRISTOL, *September 16, 1788.*

ONE would be apt to imagine that there could be no ill consequence of the deepest concern for the sin and misery of our fellow-creatures. But clear, indisputable experience shows the contrary to a demonstration. Lucretia Smith, (to mention only one instance,) a young gentlewoman of our society here, who found remission of sins long ago, and was unblamable in her whole behaviour, reasoned on that question, "Why does not the God of love make every one as happy as me?" till she lost all her happiness, all her peace, which she never recovered since. Beware, therefore, of reasoning on those points which are far too high for you. Such knowledge is too wonderful for us: We cannot attain unto it. His ways are unsearchable, and his judgments a great deep. What He doeth thou knowest not now: It is enough that thou shalt know hereafter. I hope you never

will be weary of well-doing. Herein your sister Sally is a pattern. She has done unspeakable good since she came to Cowbridge. God sent her thither to revive his work there. When I first heard of her removal from Monmouth, I could not but be troubled at not seeing by what possible means the want of her could be supplied. But it is done already. God has raised you to supply her place. And He will supply all your wants out of the riches of his mercy in Christ Jesus. In what sense do you see God? Are you always sensible of His loving presence? How do you "rejoice evermore," and "pray without ceasing, and in everything give thanks?" It is certain this is the will of God concerning you in Christ Jesus.

Adieu !

DCCCLIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BETSY, *Near OXFORD, October 29, 1789.*

You cannot easily conceive how great satisfaction I received from your affectionate letter. I am glad you write without reserve; and take knowledge that your words come from your heart. What is that sympathy that often unites our hearts to each other perhaps the first interview? Surely it is not intended that this should cease till it is perfected in eternity.

I am pleased to hear that the work of God does not decline, but rather increase, in Monmouth. My dear friend, stir up the gift of God that is in you. Warn every one: Exhort every one! Be not weary of well-doing! In due time you shall reap, if you faint not.

Still let thy mind be bent, still plotting how,  
And when, and where, the business may be done.

Have you received a clear, direct witness that you was saved from inbred sin? At what time? In what manner? And do you find it as clear as it was at first? Do you feel an increase?

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCLX.—*To Mr. George Sykes.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LIVERPOOL, *April 8, 1790.*

WHAT says our Lord? "Let the dead bury their dead; but preach thou the Gospel." O refuse not Him that speaketh, but take up thy cross and follow Him!

I am

Your affectionate brother.

---

DCCCLXI.—*To Mr. Benjamin Rhodes, Redruth.*

Near LONDON, *January 7, 1789.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

YOU have done exactly right. Observe the rules of the Conference, both in changing the Stewards, or in any other point, whoever is pleased or displeased. And do not fail mildly to expostulate the case, either with George, or any other Assistant, who does not observe them. The Trustees and Leaders will soon trample them under foot, if you will 'et them. But I think you can be mild, and yet firm.

I am, with love to sister Rhodes,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCCLXII.—*To Mr. —.\**

DEAR SAMMY, LONDON, *November 9, 1782.*

I ABHOR the thought of giving to twenty men the power to place or displace the Preachers in their congregations. How would he then dare to speak an unpleasing truth? And, if he did, what would become of him? This must never be the case while I live among the Methodists. And Birstal is a leading case; the first of an avowed violation of our plan. Therefore, the point must be carried for the Methodist Preachers now or never: And I alone can carry it; which I will, God being my Helper.

\* The direction of this letter is lost; but it appears to have been addressed to Mr. Bradburn, who was then stationed in Bradford, only a few miles from Birstal, where an attempt was made to settle a Methodist chapel upon the plan of Independency.—EDIT.

You are not a match for the silver tongue, nor brother Hopper. But do not, to please any of your new friends, forsake

Your true old friend.

DCCCLXIII.—*To Mr. Samuel Bradburn.*

DEAR SAMMY,

EPWORTH, *July 10, 1779.*

It is the judgment of many, that since the time of the Invincible Armada, Great Britain and Ireland were never in such danger from foreign enemies as they are at this day. Humanly speaking, we are not able to contend with them, either by sea or land. They are watching over us as a leopard over his prey, just ready to spring upon us. They are mighty, and rage horribly: But the Lord that dwelleth on high is mightier; and now is the time, at this awful crisis, for the inhabitants of the land to learn righteousness. I make no doubt but you improve the important opportunity, and lift up your voice like a trumpet. Who knoweth but God may be entreated of *us*, as He was for Nineveh?

Our brethren in various parts of England have set apart an hour in a week for prayer, (namely, from eight till nine on Sunday evening,) in behalf of our King and country. Should not the same thing be done in Ireland too? particularly at Cork and Bandon. Those who have not opportunity of meeting at the time, may pray part of the hour in private. Meantime, there is a text for *you*: "I will not destroy it for *ten's* sake."

I am, dear Sammy,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCLXIV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SAMMY,

LONDON, *February 26, 1780.*

I THINK you have reason to be exceeding thankful for an honest and sensible fellow-labourer. The good fruit of it appears already, in your deliverance from that troublesome man. If your opponents cannot provoke you to return evil for evil, they can do you no harm. In patience possess ye your soul, and all those things shall work together for good.

I hope to be in Dublin about the end of March; and, probably, in Cork, before the middle of May. If you are at Bristol by and by, (to which I have no great objection,) we

must hire a lodging for you near the room. Peace be with your spirits!

I am, with kind love to Betsy,  
Dear Sammy,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCLXV.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SAMMY, LONDON, *January 14, 1786.*

IT is well we know that trouble springeth not out of the dust; but that the Lord reigneth. But still, even when we can say, "It is the Lord," it is hard to add, "Let Him do what seemeth Him good." I remember formerly, when I read these words in the church at Savannah, "Son of man, behold, I take from thee the desire of thine eyes with a stroke," I was pierced through as with a sword, and could not utter a word more. But our comfort is, He that made the heart can heal the heart. Your help stands in Him alone. He will command all these things to work together for good. To His tender care I commend you; and am,

Dear Sammy,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCLXVI.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SAMMY, DUBLIN, *July 10, 1787.*

I DESIRED John Atlay to make up the twenty pounds, which I gave Mr. Heath, fifty. But if he mistook me, and gave him fifty instead of thirty, it will not ruin me. What is still wanting, Dr. Coke will supply.

I am glad you have visited the country societies, and that you find so much life among them. What we can do for the poor people at Wandsworth, I know not. I doubt their case will grow worse and worse.

I am, with love to S. Bradburn, dear Sammy,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

On the same sheet is the following letter to Mrs. Hall, Mr. Wesley's sister, then resident in London:—

DEAR PATTY, DUBLIN, *July 10, 1787.*

TO-MORROW I hope to sail. I am glad you have not forgotten me: And am, with much affection,

Ever yours.

DCCCLXVII.—*To the Same.*

DEAR SAMMY, *Near MANCHESTER, July 17, 1787.*

YOU should be at Manchester, to meet the Assistants, by two in the afternoon, on the 30th instant.

I have a good letter from William N. Pitt, at Deptford. Pray thank him for it in my name; and tell him I shall take the matter he mentions into serious consideration.

I desire you to inform Mr. Dornford, that I will propose Richard Taylor at the Conference.

I am, with love to Sophy, dear Sammy,  
Ever yours.

---

DCCCLXVIII.—*To Miss Sophia Cook, afterwards Mrs. Bradburn.*

*CROWLE, June 20, 1786.*

SURELY, you never can have need to use any ceremony with me. You may think aloud, and tell me all that is in your heart. As soon as ever I saw Mr. Bradburn and you together, I believed you would be more nearly united. His former wife never wanted anything; neither need any of our Preachers' wives. They neither want, nor abound. They have all things needful for life and godliness. But I am not a fair judge. I am partial. I long so much to have you under my own roof, that I cannot divest myself of prejudice in the matter. I can only say, "Give yourself to prayer; and then act, in the name and in the fear of God, as you are fully persuaded in your own mind."

I am

Yours affectionately.

---

DCCCLXIX.—*To Miss Loxdale.*

*DOUGLAS, ISLE OF MAN, June 10, 1781.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

I HAD much hope that at my last return to Shrewsbury I should have seen you: But we are in the hands of Him who knows what is best for every one that trusts in Him; and if our meeting be hindered for a season, when those

hinderances are removed it will be the more blessed to us. That man of God, Gregory Lopez, observes of himself, that the large manifestations of God, with which he was favoured, at first overpowered his body, and nearly suspended his understanding, nay, took away the use of his senses; but that after a time they neither interrupted the one nor the other, nor disturbed the operation of any of his faculties. I think if those manifestations which you had, had been continued, the case would have been the same with you: They would no longer have overwhelmed you as they did at first, but have flowed with a calm, even stream.

Many years since, Madam Bourignon's Works were put into my hands, particularly the treatises you mention, and her "Exterior and Interior Life," written by herself. It was easy to see that she was a person dead to the world, and much devoted to God; yet I take her to have been very many degrees beneath both Mr. De Renty, and Gregory Lopez. Nay, I do not believe she had so much Christian experience as either David Brainerd or Thomas Walsh. What makes many passages, both in her life and writings, so striking, is, that they are so peculiar; they are so entirely her own, so different from everything which we have seen or read elsewhere. But this is in reality not an excellence, but a capital defect. I avoid, I am afraid of, whatever is peculiar, either in the experience or the language of any one. I desire nothing, I will accept of nothing, but the common faith and common salvation; and I want you, my dear sister, to be only just such a common Christian as Jenny Cooper was. The new expressions of Madam Bourignon naturally tended to give you a new set of ideas. They would surely set your imagination at work, and make you fancy wonderful things; but they were only shadows. I cannot doubt, in the least, but either Mr. —, or you, or your sister, has experienced more of the life of faith, and deeper communion with the Father and the Son, than ever she did in her life. As I apprehend your mind must be a little confused by reading those uncommon treatises, I wish you would give another deliberate reading to the "Plain Account of Christian Perfection;" and you may be assured, there is no religion under heaven higher or deeper than that which is there described. But it is certainly possible to have your mind, as well as your heart, continually stayed upon God. This you did experience



for some time, and you should be continually expecting to receive it again : " Ask, and it shall be given."

For all the promises are sure  
To persevering prayer.

I wrote to Mr. Fletcher some time since, and wonder I have had no answer. I hope you will always write, without reserve, my dear Miss Loxdale, to

Your truly affectionate.

DCCCLXX.—*To the Same.*

NOTTINGHAM, July 14, 1781.

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

As it has pleased God to restore you in a measure to what you enjoyed once, I make no doubt but he will restore all which you then had ; and will add to it what you never had yet. There is no end of His mercies. He will give " exceeding abundantly beyond all that you are able to ask or think." If that sickness you mention came (as is the case with some) only at the time of private prayer, I should incline to think it was preternatural, a messenger of Satan permitted to buffet you. But as you find it likewise at other times, when you feel any vehement emotion of mind, it seems to be (partly at least) a natural effect of what is called weakness of nerves. But even in this case, the prayer of faith will not fall to the ground. You may ask with resignation ; and, if it be best, this cup will be removed from you.

You have, indeed, reason to rejoice over your sister. Is she not given you in answer to prayer ? And have you not encouragement, even from this very thing, to expect, that more of your family will be given you ? Those are true words, when in His own strength you wrestle with God,—

" My powerful groans thou canst not bear,  
Nor stand the violence of my prayer,  
My prayer omnipotent."

You remind me of what occurred when my dear H. R. first mentioned you to me. I almost wondered I should feel so much regard for one I had never seen ! But I can taste your spirit, and rejoice to find that you are so near, my dear Miss Loxdale, to

Yours in tender affection.

DCCCLXXI.—*To the Same.*SHEFFIELD, *August 15, 1781.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

YOUR letter gave much satisfaction. Whereunto you have attained, hold fast; and “press on toward the mark, the prize of your high calling of God in Christ Jesus.” I do not see any reason to doubt, but that you have tasted of the pure love of God. But you seem to be only a babe in that state, and have, therefore, need to go forward continually. It is by doing and suffering the whole will of our Lord, that we grow up in Him that is our Head; and if you diligently hearken to His voice, He will show you the way wherein you should go. But you have need to be exceeding faithful to the light He gives you. “While you have the light, walk in the light,” and it will continually increase. Do not regard the judgment of the world, even of those called the religious world. You are not to conform to the judgment of others, but to follow your own light; that which the blessed Spirit gives you from time to time, which is truth and is no lie. That He may guide you and your sister into all truth and all holiness, is the prayer of,

My dear Miss Loxdale,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCLXXII.—*To the Same.*CHESTER, *December 15, 1781.*

I SNATCH a few moments to write to my dear Miss Loxdale, although I have not time to write as I would. The trials you have lately undergone were all instances of the goodness of God, who permitted them merely for your profit, that you might be the more largely partaker of His holiness. You know our blessed Lord himself, as man, “learned obedience by the things that he suffered.” And the last lesson which he learned upon earth was that, “Father, not as I will, but as thou wilt.” Never imagine, my dear friend, that your letters to me can be too frequent, or too long,—I may add, or too free. Nothing endears you to me so much as your artless simplicity. I beg you would always write just what you feel, without disguise, without reserve, to

Yours affectionately.

DCCCLXXIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE, BRISTOL, *March 9, 1782.*

GOLD is tried in the fire, and acceptable men in the furnace of adversity.

You say, "I know not whither I am going." I will tell you whither. You are going the straight way to be swallowed up in God. "I know not what I am doing." You are suffering the will of God, and glorifying Him in the fire. "But I am not increasing in the divine life." That is your mistake. Perhaps you are now increasing therein faster than ever you did since you were justified. It is true, that the usual method of our Lord is, to purify us by joy in the Holy Ghost, and a full consciousness of His love. But I have known several exempt cases, and I am clearly satisfied yours is one; and

Far, far beyond thy thought  
His counsel shall appear,  
When fully He the work hath wrought  
That caused thy needless fear.

If it be possible, meet me at Madeley on Saturday: Then you may talk more largely with,

My dear Miss Loxdale,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCLXXIV.—*To the Same.*

LIVERPOOL, *April 12, 1782.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

I ADVISED formerly my dear Jenny Cooper, and so I advise you, frequently to read and meditate upon the thirteenth chapter of the First Epistle to the Corinthians. There is the true picture of Christian perfection! Let us copy after it with all our might. I believe it might likewise be of use to you to read more than once the "Plain Account of Christian Perfection." Indeed, what is it more or less than humble, gentle, patient love! It is undoubtedly our privilege to "rejoice evermore," with a calm, still, heartfelt joy. Nevertheless, this is seldom long at one stay. Many circumstances may cause it to ebb and flow. This, therefore, is not the essence of religion; which is no other than humble, gentle, patient love. I do not know whether all

these are not included in that one word, resignation. For the highest lesson our Lord (as man) learned on earth was to say, "Not as I will, but as thou wilt."—May He confirm you more and more!

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCLXXV.—*To the Same.*

BIRMINGHAM, July 12, 1782.

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

IT raised some wonder in me that I had not a line from you in so long a time. I began to be almost afraid that your love was growing cold. And it would not be at all strange if it did: It is more strange if it does not; especially while you have an affair in hand that naturally tends to engross the whole thought. Whoever follows the few plain directions which are given in the sermon on Enthusiasm, will easily and distinctly see what is the will of God concerning any point in question; that is, provided his eye be single, provided he has one design and one desire. But it is a just observation, "As a very little dust will disorder the motion of a clock; and as a very little sand will hinder the sight of the eye; so a very little desire, or selfish design, will greatly obstruct the eye of the soul." By experience, the strongest of all arguments, you have been once and again convinced, that salvation from inbred sin is received by simple faith, although it is certain there is a gradual work both preceding and following.

Is it not then your wisdom not willingly to converse with any that oppose this great and important truth? If you play with fire, will you not be burned, sooner or later? Nay, have you not been burned already?

I remain, my dear Nancy,

Yours most affectionately.

DCCCLXXVI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE, LONDON, October 8, 1785.

NOT once, but many times, I have been making all the inquiries I could concerning you. The rather, as I was afraid you might suffer loss by the severe trials you had met with. I should not have wondered if you had: I rather wonder how you have escaped. But, indeed, as long as you can say from your heart, "Lord, not as I will, but as thou wilt," no

weapon formed against you shall prosper. You unquestionably did enjoy a measure of his pure and perfect love. And as you received it at first by naked faith, just so you may receive it again; and who knows how soon? May you not say,—

“If thou canst so greatly bow,  
Friend of sinners, why not now?”

I believe Mr. W—'s nervous disorder gave rise to many, if not most, of those temptations to which many persons of equal grace, but firmer nerves, are utter strangers. As you never yet experienced anything of the kind, so I am persuaded you never will. Yet I do not wonder at the horrid temptations of Gregory Lopez, because he was in a desert, that is, so far out of God's way. I thank you for writing freely to me. If I had you now by the hand, I would tell you, you can never write or speak too freely to,

My dear Miss Loxdale,

Yours most affectionately.

---

DCCCLXXVII.—To Mr. C——.

DUNDEE, *May 2, 1786.*

I DOUBT not but both — and you are in trouble, because — has “changed his religion.” Nay, he has changed his opinions, and mode of worship: But that is not religion; it is quite another thing. “Has he then,” you may ask, “sustained no loss by the change?” Yes, unspeakable loss; because his new opinion, and mode of worship, are so unfavourable to religion, that they make it, if not impossible to one that once knew better, yet extremely difficult.

“What then is religion?” It is happiness in God, or in the knowledge and love of God. It is “faith working by love;” producing “righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.” In other words, it is a heart and life devoted to God; or, communion with God the Father and the Son; or, the mind which was in Christ Jesus, enabling us to walk as He walked. Now, either he has this religion, or he has not: If he has, he will not finally perish, notwithstanding the absurd, unscriptural opinions he has embraced, and the superstitious and idolatrous modes of worship. But these are so many shackles, which will greatly retard him in run-

ning the race that is set before him. If he has not this religion, if he has not given God his heart, the case is unspeakably worse: I doubt if he ever will; for his new friends will continually endeavour to hinder him, by putting something else in its place, by encouraging him to rest in the form, notions, or externals, without being born again, without having Christ in him, the hope of glory, without being renewed in the image of Him that created him. This is the deadly evil. I have often lamented that he had not this holiness, without which no man can see the Lord. But though he had it not, yet in his hours of cool reflection, he did not hope to go to heaven without it: But now he is or will be taught, that, let him only have a right faith, (that is, such and such notions,) and add thereunto such and such externals, and he is quite safe. He may indeed roll a few years in purging fire, but he will surely go to heaven at last!

Therefore, you and my dear —— have great need to weep over him: But have you not also need to weep for yourselves? For have you given God your hearts? Are you holy in heart? Have you the kingdom of God within you? righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost? the only true religion under heaven? O cry unto Him that is mighty to save, for this one thing needful! Earnestly and diligently use all the means which God hath put plentifully into your hands! Otherwise, I should not at all wonder if God permit you also to be given up to a strong delusion. But whether you were or were not; whether you are Protestants or Papists, neither you nor he can ever enter into glory, unless you are now cleansed from all pollution of flesh and spirit, and perfect holiness in the fear of God.

I am

Your affectionate.

---

DCCCLXXVIII.—*To the Rev. Mr. L——.*

DEAR BROTHER,

LEWISHAM, *December 14, 1771.*

FOR some time I have been in doubt whether it was best for me to write, or to leave you to your own reflections. But at length love turns the scale. I cannot be silent any longer without being wanting in affection. I will therefore state the case as impartially as I can; and may God give you a right judgment in all things!

It has pleased God to entrust you with several talents ; a measure of his grace, of natural understanding, improved by reading and conversation ; and a tolerable utterance. And what are you doing with these talents ? You are well-nigh burying them in the earth. A dispensation of the Gospel is committed to you ; and yet you preach not the Gospel, or but now and then ; instead of continually stirring up the gift of God that is in you. Is this inactivity, this losing so many precious opportunities, owing to any temporal views ? Do you expect to get more money by delay ? I hope not. Do you want to avoid labour, shame, or censure ? I would fain think better things of you. Surely you have not so learned Christ !

But you have promised (not indeed to man, but) before God, that you will not leave the Church. What do you mean by this ? What ideas do you affix to that confused expression ? In what sense can the officiating at West-street or Spitalfields chapels (both of them consecrated places, if that avails anything) be called leaving the Church ? Does Mr. Dodd, one of the King's Chaplains, leave the Church by officiating at Charlotte-street chapel ? although this was never consecrated yet, neither is under any Episcopal jurisdiction.

But if you had made that promise ten times, still I ask, Would it not be "more honoured in the breach than in the observance ?" For, what was it you promised ? To wait for dead men's shoes ? Was not this a foolish promise ? To bury your talent in the earth ? Was not this a sinful promise ? To incur the woe of not preaching the Gospel ? Is not this both foolish and sinful ? "But you do not intend to stand in the vineyard all the day idle. You will but wait a while longer." Well, how long will you be as a dumb dog ? twenty years ? or ten ? or one and a half ? If you have a lease of your life, well. But what, if you are called in one year to give an account of your stewardship ? O live to-day ! Do all the good you can while it is called to-day ! Now stir up the gift of God which is in you ! Now save as many souls as you can ; and do all you can to ease the labour and prolong the life of

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCLXXIX.—*To the Same.*

*October 25, 1786.*

LAST night I had a long conversation with a few sensible men, concerning going to church. I asked them what objection they had to the hearing of Mr. L——. They answered, they could not hear him; he generally spoke so low, that they lost a good part of what he said; and that what they could hear was spoken in a dead, cold, languid manner, as if he did not feel anything which he spoke. This would naturally disgust them the more, because Dr. C—— leaned to the other extreme. I doubt there is some ground for their objection. But I should think you might easily remove it. I asked again, "Have you any objection to anything in his behaviour?" They answered, "One thing we cannot approve of; his being ashamed of the Methodists. His never recommending or defending them at all, we think, is a full proof of this: For every one knows his near relation, and his many obligations, to you. They know how you have loved and cherished him from a child." They might have added, "You owe your whole education to him; and therefore, in effect, your ordination, your curacy, your school, yea, and your wife: None of which you would in all likelihood have had, had it not been for him."

I would add a word upon this head myself. I do not think you act wisely. Not one of your genteel friends can be depended on: They are mere summer flies. Whereas, had you condescended to make the Methodists your friends, they would have adhered to you one and all. And they are already no inconsiderable body of people; beside that, they are increasing more and more.

Suffer me now to speak a word between you and me. Is not the reason of your preaching so languidly and coldly, that you do not feel what you say? And why not? Because your soul is not alive to God. Do you know that your sins are forgiven? I fear not. Can you say, "I know that my Redeemer liveth?" I doubt, if you did know it once, whether you know it now! Have you fellowship with the Father and the Son? Alas, it is well if you know what it means! And are you content to have your portion in this world? Do you savour only earthly things? Then I do not wonder that you are shy to the Methodists; for they are not to your taste!



O think and pray to-day ; for I do not promise you that you shall live another year ! I now give you a full proof that

I am

Your truly affectionate.

DCCCLXXX.—*To Mr. Theophilus Lessey.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

THERE is no one point in all the Bible concerning which I have said more, or written more, for almost these fifty years, than faith. I can say no more than I have said. To believe the being and attributes of God is the faith of a Heathen. To believe the Old Testament, and trust in Him that was to come, was the faith of a Jew. To believe, Christ gave himself for me, is the faith of a Christian. This faith He did give to you, and I hope does still : Hold it fast, without any philosophical refinement. When we urge any to believe, we mean, "Accept that faith which God is now ready to give." Indeed, believing is the act of man, but it is the gift of God. For no one ever did believe unless God gave him the power. Take it simply without reasoning, and hold it fast.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCLXXXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

THAT you are slighted in some places ought not to discourage you, but to humble you, and to put you upon more diligence in searching the Scriptures with more meditation and prayer. As a balance for the slight you meet with in some places, you see that God gives you success in others. And there is no doubt but he gives you as much honour and success as you can bear. Many censures must be expected to follow the expulsion of unworthy members. But this will do you no hurt. The way to the kingdom lies through honour and dishonour. I am in great hopes that sister Cousins will now have better health than she has had for some time. And she may say with assurance, "Health I shall have, if health be best." Go on, fulfilling your

character, and being "patient in bearing ill, and doing well."

I am

Your affectionate brother

---

DCCCLXXXII.—*To Mr. John Stretton, in Harbour-grace, Newfoundland.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 25, 1785.*

You did well in breaking through that needless diffidence: If you had wrote sooner, you would have heard from me sooner. Although I have not been at Limerick for some years, yet I remember your father and mother well. They truly feared God when I conversed with them. Be a follower of them, as they were of Christ.

The last time I saw Mr. Coughlan, he was ill in body, but in a blessed state of mind. He was utterly broken in pieces, full of tears and contrition for his past unfaithfulness. Not long after I went out of town, God removed him to a better place.

If that deadly enemy of true religion, Popery, is breaking in upon you, there is indeed no time to be lost; for it is far easier to prevent the plague than to stop it. Last autumn Dr. Coke sailed from England, and is now visiting the flock in the midland provinces of America, and settling them on the New-Testament plan, to which they all willingly and joyfully conform, being all united, as by one Spirit, so in one body. I trust they will no more want such Pastors as are after God's own heart. After he has gone through these parts, he intends, if God permit, to see the brethren in Nova-Scotia, probably attended with one or two able Preachers who will be willing to abide there. A day or two ago, I wrote and desired him before he returns to England to call upon our brethren also in Newfoundland, and, perhaps, leave a Preacher there likewise. About food and raiment, we take no thought. Our heavenly Father knoweth that we need these things, and he will provide. Only let us be faithful and diligent in feeding his flock. Your Preacher will be ordained. Go on, in the name of the Lord, and in the power of his might! You shall want no assistance that is in the power of

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCLXXXIII.—*To Mr. George Blackall,  
of Brentford.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 25, 1783.*

ST. PAUL teaches, that it is in heaven we are to be joined with "the spirits of just men made perfect," in such a sense as we cannot be on earth, or even in paradise. In paradise the souls of good men rest from their labours, and are with Christ from death to the resurrection. This bears no resemblance at all to the Popish purgatory, wherein wicked men are supposed to be tormented in purging fire, till they are sufficiently purified to have a place in heaven. But we believe, (as did the ancient church,) that none suffer after death, but those who suffer eternally. We believe that we are to be *here* saved from sin, and enabled to love God with all our heart.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCLXXXIV.—*To Mr. John Bausell.*

I BELIEVE what you say, or write, proceeds from a real desire to promote the glory of God by the salvation of men: Therefore I take in good part all you say; and thank you for your letter to me. Your advice is good as to the substance of it: Little circumstances I do not contend for.

I likewise approve the exhortation, in your printed treatise, to the people called Methodists. It is quite consistent with what I am saying to them day by day, in private, as well as in public. A great number of them have the form of godliness; but I am jealous over them, for fear they should stop there, and imagine they are safe in the form, without the power.

In earth, in paradise, in heaven,

Our all in all is love.

Without this, we know all religion is a shadow. The Lord fire your heart with this! So prays

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCLXXXV.—*To Mr. Victory Purdy, of Bristol.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *February 1, 1784.*

YOUR father was one of our first society, which met at Fetter-lane; and one of the first that found peace with God. When it was thought best that I should go to Bristol, we spent a considerable time in prayer, and then cast lots who should accompany me thither. The lot fell upon him; and he was with me day and night till he judged it proper to marry. But I had no curiosity; so that I scarce ever asked him a question concerning his parents, birth, or former way of life. I first saw him when he came to the Foundery, and desired to be admitted into the society. He was a man of eminent integrity and simplicity; "fervent in zeal, and warm in charity;" both in his spirit and behaviour greatly resembling Joseph Bradford. Be you a follower of him, as he was of Christ!

I am

Your affectionate brother

---

 DCCCLXXXVI.—*To Mr. —.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, *January, 1780.*

YOU seem to me not to have well considered the Rules of a Helper, or the rise of Methodism. It pleased God, by me, to awaken, first my brother, and then a few others; who severally desired of me, as a favour, that I would direct them in all things. After my return from Georgia, many were both awakened and converted to God. One, and another, and another of these desired to join with me as sons in the Gospel, to be directed by me. I drew up a few plain rules. (observe, there was no Conference in being!) and permitted them to join me on these conditions. Whoever, therefore, violates these conditions, particularly that of being directed by me in the work, does, *ipso facto*, disjoin himself from me. This brother M. has done: (But he cannot see that he has done amiss:) And he would have it a common cause; that is, he would have all the Preachers do the same. He thinks "they have a right so to do." So they have. They have a right to disjoin themselves from me whenever they please. But they cannot, in the nature of the thing, join with me

any longer than they are directed by me. And what, if fifty of the present Preachers disjoined themselves! What should I lose thereby? Only a great deal of labour and care, which I do not seek; but endure, because no one else either can or will.

You seem likewise to have quite a wrong idea of a Conference. For above six years after my return to England, there was no such thing. I then desired some of our Preachers to meet me, in order to advise, not control, me. And you may observe, they had no power at all, but what I exercised through them. I chose to exercise the power which God had given me in this manner, both to avoid ostentation, and gently to habituate the people to obey them when I should be taken from their head. But as long as I remain with them, the fundamental rule of Methodism remains inviolate. As long as any Preacher joins with me, he is to be directed by me in his work. Do not you see, then, that brother M., whatever his intentions might be, acted as wrong as wrong could be? and that the representing of this as the common cause of the Preachers was the way to common destruction? the way to turn all their heads, and to set them in arms? It was a blow at the very root of Methodism. I could not therefore do less than I did: It was the very least that could be done, for fear that evil should spread.

I do not willingly speak of these things at all: But I do it now out of necessity; because I perceive the mind of you, and some others, is a little hurt by not seeing them in a true light.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

---

DCCCLXXXVII.—*To Mr. —.*

DEAR —,

*December, 1786.*

YOU know I love you. Ever since I knew you, I have neglected no way of showing it, that was in my power. And you know I esteem you for your zeal and activity, for your love of discipline, and for your gifts which God has given you; particularly quickness of apprehension, and readiness of utterance; especially in prayer.

Therefore I am jealous over you, lest you should lose any of the things you have gained, and not receive a full reward: And the more so, because I fear you are wanting in other respects. And who will venture to tell you so? You will scarce know how to bear it from me, unless you lift up your heart to God. If you do this, I may venture to tell you what I fear, without any further preface. I fear you think of yourself more highly than you ought to think. Do not you think too highly of your own understanding? of your gifts? particularly in preaching? as if you were the very best Preacher in the Connexion? of your own importance? as if the work of God, here or there, depended wholly or mainly on you? and of your popularity? which I have found, to my surprise, far less, even in L——, than I expected.

May not this be much owing to the want of brotherly love? With what measure you mete, men will measure to you again. I fear there is something unloving in your spirit; something not only of roughness, but of harshness, yea, of sourness! Are you not also extremely open to prejudice, and not easy to be cured of it? so that whenever you are prejudiced, you commence bitter, implacable, unmerciful! If so, that people are prejudiced against you, is both the natural and the judicial consequence.

I am afraid lest your want of love to your neighbours should spring from want of love to God; from want of thankfulness. I have sometimes heard you speak in a manner that made me tremble; indeed, in terms that not only a weak Christian, but even a serious Deist, would scruple to use.

I fear, you greatly want evenness of temper. Are you not generally too high, or too low? Are not all your passions too lively? your anger in particular? Is it not too soon raised? And is it not too impetuous? causing you to be violent, boisterous, bearing down all before you?

Now, lift up your heart to God, or you will be angry at me. But I must go a little further. I fear you are greatly wanting in the government of your tongue. You are not exact in relating facts. I have observed it myself. You are apt to amplify; to enlarge a little beyond the truth. You cannot imagine, if others observe this, how it will affect your reputation.

But I fear you are more wanting in another respect: That

you give a loose to your tongue when you are angry; that your language then is not only sharp, but coarse, and ill-bred. If this be so, the people will not bear it. They will not take it either from you or me.

---

DCCCLXXXVIII.—*To Bishop Lowth.*

MY LORD,

*August 10, 1780.*

SOME time since I received your Lordship's favour, for which I return your Lordship my sincere thanks. Those persons did not apply to the Society, because they had nothing to ask of them. They wanted no salary for their Minister; they were themselves able and willing to maintain him. They therefore applied, by me, to your Lordship, as members of the Church of England, and desirous so to continue, begging the favour of your Lordship, after your Lordship had examined him, to ordain a pious man who might officiate as their Minister.

But your Lordship observes, "There are three Ministers in that country already." True, my Lord: But what are three, to watch over all the souls in that extensive country? Will your Lordship permit me to speak freely? I dare not do otherwise. I am on the verge of the grave, and know not the hour when I shall drop into it. Suppose there were threescore of those Missionaries in the country, could I in conscience recommend these souls to their care? Do they take any care of their own souls? If they do, (I speak it with concern!) I fear they are almost the only Missionaries in America that do. My Lord, I do not speak rashly: I have been in America; and so have several with whom I have lately conversed. And both I and they know what manner of men the far greater part of these are. They are men who have neither the power of religion, nor the form; men that lay no claim to piety, nor even decency.

Give me leave, my Lord, to speak more freely still: Perhaps it is the last time I shall trouble your Lordship. I know your Lordship's abilities and extensive learning: I believe, what is far more, that your Lordship fears God. I have heard that your Lordship is unfashionably diligent in examining the candidates for holy orders; yea, that your Lordship is generally at the pains of examining them your-

self. Examining them! In what respects? Why, whether they understand a little Latin and Greek, and can answer a few trite questions in the science of divinity! Alas, how little does this avail! Does your Lordship examine, whether they serve Christ or Belial? whether they love God or the world? whether they ever had any serious thoughts about heaven or hell? whether they have any real desire to save their own souls, or the souls of others? If not, what have they to do with holy orders? And what will become of the souls committed to their care?

My Lord, I do by no means despise learning: I know the value of it too well. But what is this, particularly in a Christian Minister, compared to piety? What is it in a man that has no religion? "As a jewel in a swine's snout."

Some time since, I recommended to your Lordship a plain man, whom I had known above twenty years, as a person of deep, genuine piety, and of unblamable conversation. But he neither understood Greek nor Latin; and he affirmed, in so many words, that he believed it was his duty to preach, whether he was ordained or no. I believe so too. What became of him since, I know not: But I suppose he received Presbyterian ordination; and I cannot blame him, if he did. He might think any ordination better than none.

I do not know that Mr. Hoskins had any favour to ask of the Society. He asked the favour of your Lordship to ordain him, that he might minister to a little flock in America. But your Lordship did not see good to ordain him: But your Lordship did see good to ordain, and send into America, other persons, who knew something of Greek and Latin; but who knew no more of saving souls, than of catching whales.

In this respect also, I mourn for poor America; for the sheep scattered up and down therein. Part of them have no shepherds at all, particularly in the northern colonies; and the case of the rest is little better, for their own shepherds pity them not. They cannot; for they have no pity on themselves. They take no thought or care about their own souls.

Wishing your Lordship every blessing from the great Shepherd and Bishop of souls,

I remain, my Lord,

Your Lordship's dutiful son and servant.



DCCCLXXXIX.—*To the Bishop of —.*

MY LORD,

I AM a dying man, having already one foot in the grave. Humanly speaking, I cannot long creep upon the earth, being now nearer ninety than eighty years of age. But I cannot die in peace, before I have discharged this office of Christian love to your Lordship. I write without ceremony, as neither hoping nor fearing anything from your Lordship, or from any man living. And I ask, in the name and in the presence of Him to whom both you and I are shortly to give an account, why do you trouble those that are quiet in the land? those that fear God and work righteousness? Does your Lordship know what the Methodists are? that many thousands of them are zealous members of the Church of England, and strongly attached, not only to His Majesty, but to his present Ministry? Why should your Lordship, setting religion out of the question, throw away such a body of respectable friends? Is it for their religious sentiments? Alas, my Lord! is this a time to persecute any man for conscience' sake? I beseech you, my Lord, do as you would be done to. You are a man of sense; you are a man of learning; nay, I verily believe, (what is of infinitely more value,) you are a man of piety. Then think, and let think. I pray God to bless you with the choicest of his blessings.

I am, my Lord, &amp;c

DCCCXC.—*To the Bishop of —.*

MY LORD,

HULL, June 26, 1790.

It may seem strange, that one who is not acquainted with your Lordship, should trouble you with a letter. But I am constrained to do it: I believe it is my duty both to God and your Lordship. And I must speak plain; having nothing to hope or fear in this world, which I am on the point of leaving.

The Methodists, in general, my Lord, are members of the Church of England. They hold all her doctrines, attend her service, and partake of her sacraments. They do not willingly do harm to any one, but do what good they can to

all. To encourage each other herein, they frequently spend an hour together in prayer and mutual exhortation. Permit me then to ask, *Cui bono*? "For what reasonable end" would your Lordship drive these people out of the Church? Are they not as quiet, as inoffensive, nay, as pious, as any of their neighbours? except perhaps here and there a hair-brained man, who knows not what he is about. Do you ask, "Who drives them out of the Church?" Your Lordship does; and that in the most cruel manner; yea, and the most disingenuous manner. They desire a license to worship God after their own conscience. Your Lordship refuses it; and then punishes them for not having a license! So your Lordship leaves them only this alternative, "Leave the Church, or starve." And is it a Christian, yea, a Protestant Bishop, that so persecutes his own flock? I say, *persecutes*; for it is persecution to all intents and purposes. You do not burn them indeed, but you starve them. And how small is the difference! And your Lordship does this under colour of a vile, execrable law, not a whit better than that *de hæretico comburendo*.\* So persecution, which is banished out of France, is again countenanced in England!

O my Lord, for God's sake, for Christ's sake, for pity's sake, suffer the poor people to enjoy their religious, as well as civil, liberty! I am on the brink of eternity! Perhaps so is your Lordship too! How soon may you also be called to give an account of your stewardship, to the great Shepherd and Bishop of our souls! May He enable both you and me to do it with joy! So prays,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's dutiful son and servant.

---

DCCCXCI.—*To the Bishop of —.*

MY LORD,

SEVERAL years ago, the Churchwardens of St. Bartholomew's informed Dr. Gibson, then Lord Bishop of London, "My Lord, Mr. Bateman, our Rector, invites Mr. Wesley very frequently to preach in his church." The Bishop replied, "And what would you have me do? I have no

\* Concerning the burning of heretics.—EDIT.

right to hinder him. Mr. Wesley is a Clergyman, regularly ordained, and under no ecclesiastical censure."

I am, my Lord,

Your Lordship's obedient servant.

DCCCXCII.—*To Sir Harry Trelawney.*

FOR a long time I have had a desire to see you, but could not find an opportunity: And indeed I had reason to believe my company would not be agreeable; as you were intimate with those who think they do God service by painting me in the most frightful colours. It gives me much satisfaction to find that you have escaped out of the hands of those warm men. It is not at all surprising that they should speak a little unkindly of you too in their turn. It gave me no small satisfaction to learn, from your own lips, the falsehood of their allegation. I believed it false before, but could not affirm it so positively as I can now.

Indeed, it would not have been without precedent, if from one extreme you had run into another. This was the case with that great man, Dr. Taylor, of Norwich. For some years he was an earnest Calvinist; but afterwards, judging he could not get far enough from that melancholy system, he ran, not only into Arianism, but into the very dregs of Socinianism. I have reason, indeed, to believe he was convinced of his mistake some years before he died. But to acknowledge this publicly was too hard a task for one who had lived above eighty years.

You have need to be thankful on another account likewise; that is, that your prejudices against the Church of England are removing. Having had an opportunity of seeing several of the Churches abroad, and having deeply considered the several sorts of Dissenters at home, I am fully convinced that our own Church, with all her blemishes, is nearer the scriptural plan than any other in Europe.

I sincerely wish you may retain your former zeal for God; only, that it may be a "zeal according to knowledge." But there certainly will be a danger of your sinking into a careless, lukewarm state, without any zeal or spirit at all. As you were surfeited with an irrational, unscriptural religion, you may easily slide into no religion at all; or into a dead

form, that will never make you happy, either in this world, or in that which is to come. Wishing every scriptural blessing, both to Lady Trelawney and you,

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate servant.

DCCCXCIII.—*To Mr. —.*

You give five reasons why the Rev. Mr. P. will come no more amongst us: 1. Because we despise the Ministers of the Church of England.—This I flatly deny. I am answering letters, this very post, which bitterly blame me for just the contrary. 2. Because so much backbiting and evil-speaking is suffered amongst our people.—It is not suffered: All possible means are used, both to prevent and remove it. 3. Because I, who have written so much against hoarding up money, have put out seven hundred pounds to interest.—I never put sixpence out to interest since I was born; nor had I ever one hundred pounds together, my own; since I came into the world. 4. Because our lay Preachers have told many stories of my brother and me.—If they did, I am sorry for them: When I hear the particulars, I can answer, and, perhaps, make those ashamed who believed them. 5. Because we did not help a friend in distress.—We did help him as far as we were able.—But we might have made his case known to Mr. G., Lady H., &c.—So we did, more than once; but we could not pull money from them, whether they would or no. Therefore, these reasons are of no weight. You conclude with praying that God would remove pride and malice from amongst us.—Of pride, I have too much; of malice, I have none: However, the prayer is good, and I thank you for it.

DCCCXCIV.—*To Mr. —.*

SOME time since I was considering what you said, concerning the want of a plan in our societies. There is a good deal of truth in this remark. For though we have a plan, as to our spiritual economy, (the several branches of which are particularly recited in the "Plain Account of the

People called Methodists,") yet it is certain, we have barely the first outlines of a plan with regard to our temporal concerns. The reason is, I had no design for several years to concern myself with temporals at all; and when I began to do this, it was wholly and solely with a view to relieve, not employ, the poor; except now and then, with respect to a small number; and even this I found was too great a burden for me, as requiring more money, more time, and more thought, than I could possibly spare. I say "than I could possibly spare;" for the whole weight lay on me. If I left it to others, it surely came to nothing. They wanted either understanding, or industry, or love, or patience, to bring anything to perfection.

Thus far I thought it needful to explain myself, with regard to the economy of our society. I am still to speak of your case, of my own, and of some who are dependent upon me.

I do not recollect, for I kept no copy of my last, that I charged you with want of humility or meekness. Doubtless, these may be found in the most splendid palaces. But did they ever move a man to build a splendid palace? Upon what motive you did this, I know not; but you are to answer it to God, not to me.

If your soul is as much alive to God, if your thirst after pardon and holiness is as strong, if you are as dead to the desire of the eye, and the pride of life, as you were six or seven years ago, I rejoice: If not, I pray God you may; and then you will know how to value a real friend.

With regard to myself, you do well to warn me against popularity, a thirst of power, and of applause, against envy, producing a seeming contempt for the conveniences or grandeur of this life; against an affected humility; against sparing from myself to give to others, from no other motive than ostentation. I am not conscious to myself that this is my case. However, the warning is always friendly; and it is always seasonable, considering how deceitful my heart is, and how many the enemies that surround me. What follows I do not understand: "You behold me in the ditch, wherein you helped, though innocently, to cast me, and with a Levitical pity, passing by on the other side. He and you, Sir, have not any merit, though Providence should permit all these sufferings to work together for my good."

I do not comprehend one line of this, and therefore cannot plead either Guilty or Not Guilty.—I presume, they are some that are dependent on me, “who,” you say, “keep not the commandments of God; who show a repugnance to serve and obey; who are as full of pride and arrogance, as of filth and nastiness; who do not pay lawful debts, nor comply with civil obligations; who make the waiting on the offices of religion a plea for sloth and idleness; who, after I had strongly recommended them, did not perform their moral duty, but increased the number of those incumbrances which they forced on you against your will.” To this, I can only say, 1. I know not whom you mean: I am not certain that I can so much as guess at one of them. 2. Whoever they are, had they followed my instructions, they would have acted in a quite different manner. 3. If you will tell me them by name, I will renounce all fellowship with them.

---

DCCCXCV.—*To Lady* —.

MY DEAR LADY,

LONDON, *September 30, 1788.*

FOR many years a great person professed, and I believe had, a great regard for me. I therefore believed it my duty to speak with all freedom, which I did in a long letter. But she was so displeased, that she said to a friend, “I hate Mr. Wesley above all the creatures upon earth.”

I now believe it my duty to write freely to you: Will it have the same effect? Certainly I would not run the hazard, did I not regard your happiness more than your favour. Therefore, I will speak. May God enable you not only to pardon it, but to profit thereby! Indeed, unless you profit by it, I do not expect you to forgive.

Be pleased to observe, I do not affirm anything; I only beg you calmly to consider, Would it be right for me to propagate a doctrine which I believed to be false? particularly if it were not only false, but dangerous to the souls of men; frequently hindering their growth in grace; stopping their pursuit of holiness?

And is it right in you to do this? You believe the doctrine of absolute predestination is false. Is it then right for you to propagate this doctrine, in any kind or degree? particularly as it is not only false, but a very dangerous

doctrine, as we have seen a thousand times? Does it not hinder the work of God in the soul? feed all evil, and weaken all good, tempers? turn many quite out of the way of life, and drive them back to perdition?

Is not Calvinism the very antidote of Methodism? the most deadly and successful enemy which it ever had. "But my friend desired that I would propagate it, and lodged money with me for this very purpose." What then? May I destroy souls because my friend desired it? Ought you not rather to throw that money into the sea? O let not any money, or any friend, move you to propagate a lie! to strike at the root of Methodism! to grieve the holiest of your friends, and to endanger your own soul!

Living or dying, I shall always be,

My dear Lady,

Your most affectionate servant.

---

DCCCXCVI.—*To Lord* —.

MY LORD,

1782.

IF I wrong your Lordship, I am sorry for it: But I really believe your Lordship fears God; and I hope your Lordship has no unfavourable opinion of the Christian revelation. This encourages me to trouble your Lordship with a few lines, which otherwise I should not take upon me to do.

Above thirty years ago, a motion was made in Parliament, for raising and embodying the militia, and for exercising them, to save time, on Sunday. When the motion was like to pass, an old gentleman stood up, and said, "Mr. Speaker, I have one objection to this: I believe an old book, called the Bible." The Members looked at one another, and the motion was dropped.

Must not all others, who believe the Bible, have the very same objection? And, from what I have seen, I cannot but think, these are still three-fourths of the nation. Now, setting religion out of the question, is it expedient to give such a shock to so many millions of people at once? And certainly it would shock them extremely: It would wound them in a very tender part. For would not they, would not all England, would not all Europe, consider this as a

virtual repeal of the Bible? And would not all serious persons say, "We have little religion in the land now; but by this step, we shall have less still? For wherever this pretty show is to be seen, the people will flock together; and will lounge away so much time before and after it, that the churches will be emptier than they are already!"

My Lord, I am concerned for this on a double account: First, because I have personal obligations to your Lordship, and would fain, even for this reason, recommend your Lordship to the love and esteem of all over whom I have any influence. Secondly, because I now reverence your Lordship for your office' sake; and believe it to be my bounden duty to do all that is in my little power, to advance your Lordship's influence and reputation.

Will your Lordship permit me to add a word in my old-fashioned way? I pray Him that has all power in heaven and earth, to prosper all your endeavours for the public good; and am,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's willing servant.

---

DCCCXCVII.—*To a Member of Parliament.*

LAST month a few people met together in Lincolnshire, to pray, and praise God, in a friend's house: There was no preaching at all. Two neighbouring Justices fined the man of the house twenty pounds. I suppose he was not worth twenty shillings. Upon this, his household goods were distrained and sold, to pay the fine. He appealed to the Quarter-Sessions; but all the Justices averred, the Methodists could have no relief from the Act of Toleration, because they went to church; and that, so long as they did so, the Conventicle Act should be executed upon them.

Last Sunday, when one of our Preachers was beginning to speak to a quiet congregation, a neighbouring Justice sent a constable to seize him, though he was licensed; and would not release him till he had paid twenty pounds; telling him, his license was good for nothing, because he was a Churchman.

Now, Sir, what can the Methodists do? They are liable to be ruined by the Conventicle Act, and they have no



relief from the Act of Toleration! If this is not oppression, what is? Where then is English liberty? the liberty of Christians? yea, of every rational creature, who, as such, has a right to worship God according to his own conscience? But, waving the question of right and wrong, what prudence is there in oppressing such a body of loyal subjects? If these good Magistrates could drive them, not only out of Lincolnshire, but out of England, who would be gainers thereby? Not His Majesty, whom we honour and love; not his Ministers, whom we love and serve for his sake. Do they wish to throw away so many thousand friends, who are now bound to them by stronger ties than that of interest? If you will speak a word to Mr. Pitt on that head, you will oblige, &c.

---

DCCCXCVIII.—*To the Rev. E. C., of Philadelphia.*

Near LONDON, *February 1, 1791.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

THOSE that desire to write or say anything to me, have no time to lose; for time has shaken me by the hand, and death is not far behind. But I have reason to be thankful for the time that is past: I felt few of the infirmities of old age for fourscore and six years. It was not till a year and a half ago that my strength and my sight failed. And still I am enabled to scrawl a little, and to creep, though I cannot run. Probably I should not be able to do so much, did not many of you assist me by your prayers. I have given a distinct account of the work of God, which has been wrought in Britain and Ireland, for more than half a century. We want some of you to give us a connected relation of what our Lord has been doing in America, from the time that Richard Boardman accepted the invitation, and left his country to serve you. See that you never give place to one thought of separating from your brethren in Europe. Lose no opportunity of declaring to all men, that the Methodists are one people in all the world; and that it is their full determination so to continue,

Though mountains rise, and oceans roll,  
To sever us in vain.

To the care of our common Lord I commit you; and am  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCXCIX.—*To a Friend.*

DEAR SIR,

LONDON, *February 26, 1791.*

UNLESS the divine power has raised you up to be as *Athanasius contra mundum*,\* I see not how you can go through your glorious enterprise, in opposing that execrable villany, which is the scandal of religion, of England, and of human nature. Unless God has raised you up for this very thing, you will be worn out by the opposition of men and devils. But, “if God be for you, who can be against you?” Are all of them together stronger than God? O “be not weary in well doing!” Go on, in the name of God and in the power of his might, till even American slavery (the vilest that ever saw the sun) shall vanish away before it.

Reading this morning a tract, wrote by a poor African, I was particularly struck by that circumstance,—that a man who has a black skin, being wronged or outraged by a white man, can have no redress; it being a law, in all our colonies, that the oath of a black against a white goes for nothing. What villany is this!

That He who has guided you from your youth up, may continue to strengthen you in this and all things, is the prayer of

Dear Sir,

Your affectionate servant.†

\* *Athanasius against the world.*—EDIT.

† This letter, which is supposed to have been addressed to Mr. Wilberforce, and which, as its date shows, was written by Mr. Wesley only four days before his death, evinces the deep and unabated interest which he took in the abolition of Negro slavery. Against that most iniquitous system he published a very able pamphlet in the year 1774, which has been often reprinted. The following remarks on his correspondence with Mr. Clarkson are also worthy of notice. They are extracted from that gentleman’s “*History of the Abolition of the Slave-Trade*,” vol. i., page 447. The date referred to is the year 1787, when the Abolition Committee was formed.

“Mr. Wesley, whose letter was read next, informed the Committee of the great satisfaction which he also had experienced when he heard of their formation. He conceived that their design, while it would destroy the slave-trade, would also strike at the root of the shocking abomination of slavery. He desired to forewarn them, that they must expect difficulties and great opposition from those who were interested in the system; that these were a powerful body; and that they would raise all their forces when they perceived their craft to be in danger. They would employ hireling writers, who would have neither justice nor mercy. But the Committee were not to be dismayed by such treatment, nor even if some of those who professed good-will toward them should turn against

DCCCC.—*To Mr. John Booth.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *January 29, 1791.*

You give me a very agreeable account of the progress of the work of God in your Circuit. As to the poor self-conceited enthusiasts in Keighley, it seems best that you should never name them in public; but, when occasion offers, strike at the root of their errors, by clearly proving the truth which they deny. And whenever you meet with any of them in private, then speak and spare not. Whenever you have opportunity of speaking to believers, urge them to go on to perfection. Spare no pains; and God, our own God, still give you his blessing!

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCCI.—*To Mr. York, of Stourport.*

DEAR SIR, LONDON, *February 6, 1791.*

ON Wednesday, March 17, I purpose, if God permit, to come from Gloucester to Worcester; and on Thursday, the 18th, to Stourport. If our friends at Worcester are displeased, we cannot help it. Wishing you and yours all happiness,

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate servant.

*February 28.* This morning I found this in my bureau.\*

them. As to himself, he would do all he could to promote the object of their institution. He would reprint a new, large edition of his 'Thoughts upon Slavery,' and circulate it among his friends in England and Ireland, to whom he would add a few words in favour of their design. And then he concluded in these words: 'I commend you to Him who is able to carry you through all opposition, and support you under all discouragements.'

"On the 30th of October, 1787, a second letter was read from Mr. John Wesley. He said that he had now read the publications which the Committee had sent him, and that he took, if possible, a still deeper interest in their cause. He exhorted them to more than ordinary diligence and perseverance; to be prepared for opposition; to be cautious about the manner of procuring information and evidence, that no stain might fall upon their character; and to take care that the question should be argued as well upon the consideration of interest, as of humanity and justice; the former of which, he feared, would have more weight than the latter: And he recommended them and their glorious concern, as before, to the protection of Him who was able to support them."—EDIT.

\* The memorandum at the bottom of this letter, in all probability, was the last line Mr. Wesley ever wrote. It bears the date of February 28, and he died

## SUPPLEMENTARY LETTERS.

---

DCCCCII.—*To Dr. Koker, of Rotterdam.*

1738.

My desire and prayer to God is, that the glorious Gospel of his Son may run and be glorified among you, as it doth among us; and much more abundantly. I should rejoice to hear what our Lord hath done for you also. Is the number of believers multiplied? Do they love one another? Are they all of one heart and one soul? Do they build up one another in the knowledge and love of our Lord Jesus Christ? May He multiply your little flock a thousand fold, how many soever they be! May He fill you with all peace and joy in believing! May He preserve you in all lowliness of spirit! And may He enable you to use great plainness of speech, both towards each other, and toward all men; and, by manifestation of the truth, to commend yourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God!

Even to this hour I have not had one day's leisure to transcribe for you the papers I brought from Hernhuth: The harvest here also is so plenteous, and the labourers so few; and it increases upon us daily. Verily the Spirit of the Lord hath lifted up his standard against the iniquity which hath overspread our land as a flood. O pray ye for us, that He would send more labourers into His harvest; and that He would enable us, whom He hath already sent, to approve ourselves faithful Ministers of the new covenant, by honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report! In particular, let all the brethren and sisters who are with you pray that God would warm with His love the cold heart of,

Dear Sir,

Your much obliged and very affectionate brother in Christ.

on the 2d of March; only two days afterwards. The original letter, as a curiosity, was bequeathed to the late Rev. Samuel Bradburn; and is now in the possession of his daughter, Miss Eliza Weaver Bradburn, by whose permission it has been transcribed.—ED:R.

DCCCCIII.—*To Mr. Viney, of Ysselstein.*

1738.

AFTER a long sleep, there seems now to be a great awakening in this place also. The Spirit of the Lord hath already shaken the dry bones; and some of them stand up, and live. But I am still dead and cold; having peace indeed, but no love or joy in the Holy Ghost. O pray for me, that I may see and feel myself a sinner, and have a full interest in the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world!

---

DCCCCIV.—*To Isaac Le Long, at Amsterdam.*

1738

Do not think, my dear brother, that I have forgotten you. I cannot forget you, because I love you: Though I cannot love any one yet as I ought; because I cannot love our blessed Lord as I ought. My heart is cold and senseless. It is indeed a heart of stone. Pray for me; and let all your household pray for me; yea, and all the brethren also, that our God would give me a broken heart, a loving heart, a heart wherein his Spirit may delight to dwell.

May our good Lord repay you all a thousand fold for the love you showed to us! How does His Gospel prosper at Amsterdam? Are believers multiplied? And is His grace mighty among you? Is your name yet cast out as evil? (For that must be the next.) And do men despitefully use you, and persecute you? I want you to say a great deal to me of it. But, above all, I want you to pray a great deal for

Your poor weak brother.

---

DCCCCV.—*To Mr. Nathanael Price, of Cardiff.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, BRISTOL, December 6, 1739.

OUR sincere thanks attend you for your seasonable assistance. I have writ to our dear brother Howell Harris, and sent him a short account of the design which we are carrying on in Kingswood also: Which perhaps may be agreeable to them who are with you too; for which reason, I have sent you a copy of it: Namely,

“ Few persons have lived long in the west of England, who have not heard of the colliers of Kingswood : A people famous from the beginning hitherto, for neither fearing God, nor regarding man ; so ignorant of the things of God, that they could only be compared to the beasts that perish ; and therefore utterly without desire of instruction, as well as without the means of it.

“ To this people Mr. Whitefield, last spring, began to preach the Gospel of Christ ; and as there were thousands of them who went to no place of public worship, he went out into their own wilderness, ‘ to seek and to save that which was lost.’ When he was called away, others went ‘ into the highways and hedges to compel them to come in.’ And by the grace of God, their labour was not in vain. The scene was entirely changed. Kingswood does not now, as a year ago, resound with cursing and blasphemy. It is no longer the seat of drunkenness, uncleanness, and all idle diversions that lead thereto. It is no longer filled with wars and fightings, with clamour and bitterness, with strife and envying. Peace and love are now there : The people in general are become mild, gentle, and easy to be entreated : They do not cry, neither strive, and hardly is their voice heard in the streets ; or indeed in their own wood, unless when they are at their usual evening diversions, singing praise unto God their Saviour. That their children also might know the things that make for their peace, it was proposed, some months since, to build a school in Kingswood ; and, after many difficulties, the foundation of it was laid in June last, in the middle of the wood, on a place called Two-mile-hill, between the London and Bath roads, about three measured miles from Bristol. A large room was begun there for a school, having four small rooms at each end for the schoolmasters (and hereafter, if it should please God, some poor children) to lodge in it. Two persons are ready to teach, so soon as the house is fit to receive them, the shell of which is nearly finished. It is proposed, in the usual hours of the day, to teach chiefly the poorer children to read, write, and cast accounts ; but more especially, by God’s assistance, ‘ to know God, and Jesus Christ whom he hath sent :’ The elder people, being not so proper to be mixed with children, (for we expect scholars of all ages, some of them grey-headed,) will be taught in the inner

room, either early in the morning, or late at night, so as their work may not be hindered.

“It is true, although the masters will not take any pay, (for the love of Christ constrains them, as they have freely received, freely to give,) yet this undertaking is attended with great expense. But let Him that feedeth the young ravens see to that. If He puts it into your heart, or the hearts of any of your friends, to assist us in bringing this work to perfection, in this world look for no recompense; but it shall be remembered in that day, when our Lord shall say unto you, ‘Inasmuch as ye did it unto the least of these my brethren, ye did it unto me.’”

My love and service attends all our brethren at Cardiff, especially Mr. Glascott. I am, in haste,

My dear brother,

Yours affectionately.

DCCCCVI.—*To Mr. Howell Harris, of Trevecka.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *July 29, 1740.*

Is the devil a fool? Or has he forgot his old maxim, “Divide and conquer?” Beware you forget not the royal law, “Love thinketh no evil.” I have no time myself now, so I have desired our brother Purdy to transcribe a paragraph or two of my Journal for you.

“In the evening, (after I had explained, ‘We wrestle not with flesh and blood,’ &c.,) Mr. Acourt complained, that Mr. Nowers had hindered his going into our society. Mr. Nowers answered, ‘It was by Mr. C. Wesley’s order.’ ‘What,’ said Mr. Acourt, ‘do you refuse admitting a person into your society, only because he differs from you in opinion?’ I answered, ‘No; but what opinion do you mean?’ He said, ‘That of election. I hold, A certain number is elected from eternity. And these must and shall be saved. And the rest of mankind must and shall be damned. And many of your society hold the same.’ I replied, ‘I never asked, whether they hold it or no. Only let them not trouble others by disputing about it.’ He said, ‘Nay, but I will dispute about it.’ ‘What, wherever you come?’ ‘Yes, wherever I come.’ ‘Why then would you come among us, who you know are of another mind?’

‘Because you are all wrong, and I am resolved to set you all right.’ ‘I fear your coming with this view would neither profit you nor us.’ He concluded, ‘Then I will go and tell all the world, that you and your brother are false prophets. And I tell you, in one fortnight, you will all be in confusion.’” I say, So be it, if we do not preach the truth as it is in Jesus.

You see, my brother, that the reason why Mr. Acourt was not admitted into our society was, not holding election separate from reprobation, but openly declaring his fixed purpose to introduce and carry on the dispute concerning reprobation wherever he came.

I am, my dear brother,  
Ever yours.

DCCCCVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *August 6, 1742.*

I MUST write, though where my letter will find you, that I know not; only that it will be under the shadow of the Almighty, yea, in the arms of Him that loveth you. Now, let Him cover your head in the day of battle! Let His faithfulness and truth be thy shield and buckler! Let Him comfort thy heart, and after thou hast suffered awhile, make thee perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle thee!

I have just read yours, dated at Trevecka, October 19, 1741. And what is it that we contend about? Allow such a perfection as you have there described, and all further dispute I account vain jangling and mere strife of words. As to the other point, we agree, 1. That no man can have any power except it be given him from above. 2. That no man can merit anything but hell, seeing all other merit is in the blood of the Lamb. For those two fundamental points, both you and I earnestly contend. Why then, if we both disclaim all power and all merit in man, what need of this great gulf to be fixed between us? Brother, is thy heart with mine, as my heart is with thy heart? If it be, give me thy hand. I am indeed a poor, foolish, sinful worm; and how long my Lord will use me, I know not. I sometimes think, the time is coming when He will lay me aside. For surely, never before did He send such a labourer into such a harvest. But, so long as I am continued in the work, let us rise up together against the evil doers. Let us



not weaken, but (if it be our Lord's will) strengthen one another's hands in God. My brother, my soul is gone forth to meet thee; let us fall upon one another's neck. The good Lord blot out all that is past, and let there henceforward be peace between me and thee!

I am, my dear brother,

Ever yours.

P. S. On Friday last my mother went home with the voice of praise and thanksgiving.

DCCCCVIII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,      HOLYHEAD, *February 28, 1748.*

I PRESUME you know how bitter Mr. Ellis, the Minister here, used to be against the Methodists. On Friday he came to hear me preach, I believe with no friendly intention. Brother Swindells spoke a few words to him, whereupon he invited him to his house. Since then, they have spent several hours together; and I believe his views of things are greatly changed. He commends you much for bringing the Methodists back to the Church; and at his request I have wrote a little thing to the same effect. He will translate it into Welch, and then I design to print it, both in Welch and English: I will send you some as soon as I can, that you may disperse them when you see occasion. I thought it good to apprise you of this before. I know your heart is herein as my heart. O my brother, let us join hand in hand, and fight our way through! I want all your prayers. I believe God has detained us here for the sake both of the Minister and the people. Grace and peace be with you and yours.

I am, my dear brother,

Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCCCIX.—*To Mr. John Nelson.\**

WELL, my brother, is the God whom you serve able to deliver you; and do you find Him faithful to His word? Is His grace still sufficient for you? I doubt it not. He will not suffer you to be weary or faint in your mind. But He had work for you to do that you knew not of, and thus

\* Addressed to him when he was pressed for a soldier. The particulars of his case are detailed in his very interesting and edifying Journal.—EDIT

His counsel was to be fulfilled. O lose no time! Who knows how many souls God may by this means deliver into your hands? Shall not all these things be for the furtherance of the Gospel? And is not the time coming when we shall cry out together, "Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that hath loved us?"

---

DCCCCX.—*To Mr. John Haime.\**

It is a great blessing whereof God has already made you a partaker: But if you continue waiting upon Him, you shall see greater things than these. This is only the beginning of the kingdom of heaven, which He will set up in your heart. There is yet behind the fulness of the mind that was in Christ; "righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost." It is but a little thing that men should be against you, while you know that God is on your side. If He give you any companion in the narrow way, it is well; and it is well if He do not. So much the more will He teach and strengthen you by Himself: He will strengthen you in the secret of your heart; and, by and by, He will raise up, as it were, out of the dust, those who shall say, "Come, and let us magnify His name together." But, by all means, miss no opportunity. Speak, and spare not. Declare what God has done for your soul; regard not worldly prudence; be not ashamed of Christ, or of His word, or of His servants. Speak the truth in love, even in the midst of a crooked generation; and all things shall work together for good, until the work of God is perfect in your soul.

DCCCCXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *June 21, 1748.*

THINK it not strange concerning the fiery trial which God hath seen good to try you with. Indeed the chastisement, for the present, is not joyous, but grievous; nevertheless it will, by and by, bring forth the peaceable fruits of righteousness. It is good for you to be in the fiery furnace:

\* Addressed to him about the year 1744, when Mr. Haime was abroad in the army. An account of his very remarkable life and experience was written by himself, and is well known.—EDIT.

Though the flesh be weary to bear it, you shall be purified therein, but not consumed; for there is one with you, whose form is as the Son of God. O look up! Take knowledge of Him who spreads underneath you His everlasting arms! Lean upon Him with the whole weight of your soul. He is yours: Lay hold upon Him.

Away let grief and sighing flee;  
Jesus hath died for thee, for thee!

Mercy and peace shall not forsake you. Through every threatening cloud look up; and wait for happy days.

DCCCCXII.—*To the Rev. James Erskine.*

DEAR SIR, NEWCASTLE, *March 16, 1744-5.*

I SINCERELY thank you for the transcript you send me from Mr. Robe's letter. It shows a truly Christian spirit. I should be glad to have also the note you mention, touching the proposal for prayer and praise. Might it not be practicable to have the concurrence of Mr. Edwards in New-England, if not of Mr. Tennent also, herein? It is evidently one work with what we have seen here. Why should we not all praise God with one heart?

Whoever agrees with us in that account of practical religion, given in "The Character of a Methodist," I regard not what his other opinions are; the same is my brother, and sister, and mother. I am more assured that love is of God, than that any opinion whatsoever is so. Herein may we increase more and more.

I am, dear Sir,  
Your most affectionate servant.

DCCCCXIII.—*To Mr. Thomas Bigg, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LEEDS, *October 7, 1749.*

A LOVING husband is a very amiable character: A fond one I think is not so. But if I had a wife, I believe I should be the latter; and perhaps you may lean to the same extreme. To you, therefore, I can freely speak my mind.

Since I was six years old, I never met with such a severe

trial as for some days past. For ten years God has been preparing a fellow-labourer for me, by a wonderful train of providences. Last year I was convinced of it; therefore, I delayed not, but, as I thought, made all sure beyond a danger of disappointment. But we were soon afterwards torn asunder by a whirlwind. In a few months the storm was over: I then used more precaution than before, and fondly told myself that the day of evil would return no more. But it too soon returned. The waves arose again since I came out of London. I fasted and prayed, and strove all I could; but the sons of Zeruiah were too hard for me. The whole world fought against me; but above all, my own familiar friend. Then was the word fulfilled, "Son of man, behold! I take from thee the desire of thine eyes at a stroke; yet shalt thou not lament, neither shall thy tears run down."

The fatal, irrecoverable stroke was struck on Thursday last. Yesterday I saw my friend, (that was,) and him to whom she is sacrificed. I believe you never saw such a scene. But "why should a living man complain? a man for the punishment of his sins?"

I am

Yours affectionately.

DCCCCXIV.—*To Mr. Thomas Rankin.*

DEAR TOMMY,

BRISTOL, *October 9, 1766.*

I AM persuaded, good will be done in Lincolnshire. They are, in general, a simple, teachable people. And Billy Brammah will do much good, if he continues to sleep early, and rise early, and denies himself with regard to tobacco, and eating flesh-suppers.

One or other of the remedies against an ague, in the "Primitive Physic," will hardly fail. I depend most on, 1. The pills. If these fail, 2. On the *sal prunellæ*. If that fail, 3. On the spirits of hartshorn.

Cornwall, in general, is in a good way. Most of the large societies there have subscribed for the Notes, for the use of the Preachers. I know not why the society at Epworth should not follow their example.

Perhaps those advices may be printed separate by and

by. Be calm and steady. Be clothed with firmness and humility.

I am, dear Tommy,  
Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCCCXV.—*To Mr. John Valton.*

MY DEAR BROTHER, LONDON, *June 18, 1782.*

I HAVE received the two first sheets of your Life. Be not afraid of writing too much: I can easily leave out what can be spared. It pleased God to lead John Haime and you a long way through the wilderness. Others He leads through a shorter and smoother way; and yet to the same point: For we must not imagine that such a degree of suffering is necessary to any degree of holiness. In this, God does certainly act as a Sovereign; giving what He pleases, and by what means He pleases. I believe the holiest man that ever lived was the Apostle John; yet he seems to have suffered very little.

You should take care never to write long at a time, and always to write standing; never on any account leaning on your stomach. God gives me just the strength I had thirty years ago. I cannot allow J. S. to be any longer a Leader; and if he will lead the class, whether I will or no, I require you to put him out of our society. If twenty of his class will leave the society too, they must. The first loss is the best. Better forty members should be lost, than our discipline lost. They are no Methodists that will bear no restraints. Explain this at large to the society.

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

---

DCCCCXVI.—*To Miss Bolton, of Witney.*

MY DEAR SISTER, LONDON, *November 16, 1770.*

To see even the superscription of a letter from you always gives me pleasure. I am glad you are still waiting for the kingdom of God; although as yet you are rather in the state of a servant than a child. But it is a blessed thing to be even a servant of God! You shall never have cause to be ashamed of His service. What I peculiarly

advise is, that you will never omit private duties, whatever hurry you may be in, and however dull and dry your soul may be: Still they shall not be without a blessing. And therein you will receive power against that temptation, which to your tender spirit may be the most dangerous of any.

On Sunday, I am to preach a funeral sermon for that blessed man, Mr. Whitefield, at the Tabernacle, and at Tottenham-court chapel.

If it is a help or comfort to you, write often to,

My dear Nancy,

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCCXVII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR NANCY,

LONDON, *January 12, 1791.*

I THANK you for your welcome present, and rejoice to hear that your health is better. What is it which is good for us, that our Lord will not give, if we can but trust in Him? These four last days I have had better health than I had for several months before. Only my sight continues much as it was. But good is the will of the Lord!

I am, my dear Nancy,

Affectionately yours.

DCCCCXVIII.—*To Miss Newman, Cheltenham.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

*October 23, 1772.*

I AM glad to hear that you found benefit by your little journey to Bristol. I did not doubt, but the conversation of those experienced Christians would be of service to you; and would enable you to be of more service to the little flock at Cheltenham. In one point only our friends at Bristol have been once and again in some danger. They have been in danger of being a little hurt, by reading those that are called Mystic authors. These (Madam Guion in particular) have abundance of excellent sayings. They have many fine and elegant observations; but, in the mean time, they are immeasurably wise above that is written. They continually refine upon plain Christianity. But to refine religion is to spoil it. It is the most simple thing that can

be conceived: It is only humble, gentle, patient love. It is nothing less, and nothing more, than this; as it is described in the thirteenth chapter to the Corinthians. O keep to this! Aim at nothing higher, at nothing else! Let your heart continually burn with humble love. If you have an opportunity to be electrified, that would remove the pain in your eye, should it return. I am glad my dear sisters did not suffer in your absence. This is another token that your journey was pleasing to God. I was much delighted, when I saw you, with your artless, simple love; and love you the more on that account. As freely as you would talk to me if we were together, so freely write to,

My dear Penny,

Yours affectionately.

From time to time, you should tell me just what God works in you, and by you.

DCCCCXIX.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

BRISTOL, *October 1, 1788.*

I HAVE often been concerned at your being cooped up in a corner: Now you are likely to have a wider field of action. Only the danger will be, lest, when you have more opportunity, you should have less desire, of doing good. This is the case of many pious persons when they marry; and I do not wonder at it. I should rather wonder it is not the case of all.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCCXX.—*To Mr. Walter Churchey.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*Near LONDON, July 23, 1788.*

I AM glad you spoke to Mr. Cooper. What pity is it that such talents as his should be employed in so useless a manner!

Mr. Bradburn delivered your papers to me, a few days ago. But this is so busy a time, that I had not time to go through them till to-day. In the translation of the Art of Painting, there are many very good lines: But there are some that want a good deal of filing; and many that are

obscure. This is the general fault. The sense is so much wounded, that it is not easy to be understood. For many years I have not had any bookseller, but Mr. —, and my Assistants. I doubt whether any bookseller will buy Fresnoy. Some of the shorter copies are good sense, and good poetry. My brother has left a translation of the book of Psalms; and verses enough to make up, at least, six volumes in duodecimo. I could but ill spare him, now I am myself so far declined into the vale of years. But it is the Lord: Let Him do what seemeth Him good. Our time is now short. Let my dear sister Churchey, and you, and I, make the best of it.

I am

Your affectionate brother.

DCCCCXXI.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

LONDON, *August 8, 1788.*

I THINK you know that I love you, and that I should rejoice to do anything for you that is in my power. And one allowed proof of love, is plain dealing. Therefore I will speak to you without any reserve. There are many good lines, and some very good, both in the ode, and in the translation of —. And I really think you improve in versifying: You write a good deal better than you did some years ago. You express your sense with more perspicuity than you used to do; and appear to have greater variety of words, as well as more strength. But there is nothing (to use the modern cant word) sentimental, in either the ode or the translation. There is nothing of tender or pathetic, nothing that touches the passions. Therefore, no bookseller would venture to buy them; as knowing they will not sell. And they lie utterly out of the way of the Methodists, who do not care to buy, or even to read, (at least the generality of them,) any but religious books. I do not believe all my influence would induce them to buy as many copies as would suffice to pay for the printing.

I have not yet seen my brother's translation of the Psalms. Neither, indeed, could I as yet have time to read it, were it put into my hands.

If any had asked my advice, they would not have thrust out the account of George Lukins into the world



so prematurely. It should have been fully authenticated first.

I am, with love to sister Churchey,  
Your affectionate brother.

I expect to be at Brecon on Sunday se'night.

DCCCCXXII.—*To the Same.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

May 25, 1789

I AM afraid of delay: I doubt we shall not be able to be as good as our word, although, in the last proposals, I have protracted the time of delivery till the 1st of August. As you are not a stripling, I wonder you have not yet learned the difference between promise and performance. I allow at least five-and-twenty per cent.; and from this conviction, I say to each of my subscribers, (which indeed you cannot so decently say to yours,) "Sir, down with your money." I know Dr. — well: He is a lovely man, and an excellent poet.

I commend you for inoculating the children. I believe the hand of God is in our present work: Therefore it must prosper.

Indeed, I love sister Churchey; and am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

DCCCCXXIII.—*To Mr. Jasper Winscom.*

DEAR JASPER,

BRISTOL, August 28, 1790.

I DO not see how you can be spared from your own Circuit till another is procured to take your place. Neither do I conceive how Sarum Circuit can bear the expense of another Preacher. I am well nigh tired of it. I have had more trouble with this Circuit than with ten Circuits besides.

You did exceeding well in adjusting matters at Whitchurch; but I am sorry for poor sister Haime. I am sure she was a good woman once.

I do not understand what you mean as to Winton. How did William Thom raise them eight pounds? And on what account did you pay six pounds?

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother.

# MODERN CHRISTIANITY,

## EXEMPLIFIED AT WEDNESBURY,

AND

## OTHER ADJACENT PLACES IN STAFFORDSHIRE.

---

*Tua res agitur paries quum proximus ardet.\**

---

### ADVERTISEMENT.

It was our desire and design, that the following accounts, drawn up long since, should have slept for ever; but the gross misrepresentations of these facts, which are still spread abroad from day to day, constrain us at length to speak the naked truth, in as plain a manner as we are able: And now let any man of common humanity judge whether these things ought to be so.

1. "I, JOHN EATON, of Wednesbury, in Staffordshire, heard the Rev. Mr. Charles Wesley, in the latter end of the year 1742, preach salvation by faith, in the Coal-pit-Field. I and many others rejoiced to hear it, particularly many of the poor people at Darlaston, some of whom soon after began to meet together in the evenings, to sing, and pray, and read the Bible.

"Some at Wednesbury used to go and meet with them; but one evening the mob at Darlaston rose, pelted them with clods and stones, and broke all the windows of the house where they had been.

"On the 30th of May, 1743, John Adams (whose house it was) fetched a warrant, to carry some of the rioters before Justice P., of Walsal. He desired some of us of Wednesbury to go with him; so four or five of us went: But the mob at Walsal immediately rose upon us; so that we were obliged to take shelter in a public-house. Here we were kept close

\* This quotation from Horace is thus translated by Francis:—

"When flames your neighbour's dwelling seize,  
Your own with instant rage shall blaze."—EDIT.

prisoners till it was dark, several of us having been much hurt and abused. When it was night, we escaped one or two at a time. Francis Ward and I went last.

“On the 21st of June, 1743, a large mob came to my house at Wednesbury: I was then Constable; so I went to the door with my Constable’s staff, and began reading the Act of Parliament against riots; but the stones flew so thick about my head, that I was forced to leave off reading and retire; so they broke about half my windows, and went away: But some hours after, they came again, and broke all the rest, and the door of my house, and the clock, to pieces. This is a short account of the first damage that was done to me.  
JOHN EATON.”

2. “On the 30th of May, I, James Jones, went with John Eaton and some others to Walsal. As we were going to and from the Justice’s house, the mob pelted us with dirt and stones. They raged more and more, till Francis Ward desired the Justice, who was present, to quiet them: But instead of that, he swung his hat round his head twice, and cried, ‘Huzza!’ On which encouragement, they grew so outrageous, that we were forced to take shelter in a public-house, and to stay there till it was dark.

“On the 21st of June, a great multitude gathered together in Wednesbury churchyard; among them was Harvey Walklet of Wednesbury, and Richard Dorset of Darlaston. Harvey said to Richard Dorset, ‘Methinks they are not so well armed as I would have them.’ Richard answered, ‘There are many pretty fellows from Darlaston; I know them to be good blood.’ Harvey replied, ‘There is John Baker with the oak-bough in his hat; he will break the first pane of Mr. Eaton’s windows.’ Accordingly, they went to Mr. Eaton’s first, and from thence to other houses. Here are above fourscore houses in and about Wednesbury, in many of which there are not three panes of glass left.

“*Wednesbury, June 29.* JAMES JONES.”

3. “I, Jonathan Jones, in the county of Stafford, farmer, am willing to pay the King and country their due, might I be at peace, and go about my lawful occasions, as I ought to do.

“On the 20th of June, at my neighbour Adams’s house, two or three were singing a hymn, and a parcel of apprentices and others, in a very rude manner, came and threw many

stones through the windows; in particular Mr. Richard Taylor's apprentice. So my neighbour John Adams goes to Squire P., and brings a warrant for him; but Mr. Taylor goes to Walsal, to the Justice, before the offenders were brought; and he was with Squire P. when we came, who would not act at his own hall, but sent us down into the town, where a great mob was waiting for our coming.

"So the Constable gave him the warrant; and he said, 'What! I understand you are Methodists! I will not act for you.' Then he went to the door, and told a great mob, they might do what they would; and took off his hat and swung it about, and went away. They gave a great shout, and some of them swore bitterly they would murder us all. We sent for the Constable to help us out of town, but he was not to be found. So we stayed in the house about two hours, till we thought the mob was gone; but as soon as we came out, some began to halloo, and the street was quickly full. They beat and bruised us very much; but, through God's mercy, we escaped with our lives.

"About a week after there arose a great mob at Darlaston, and broke me nine large windows, and many of my goods. The same day my man was coming home with my team; and they met him, and beat him, and much abused my horses. At night they came to break the rest of my goods; but I gave them money, and they went away.

"So I was at Richard Dorset's our Churchwarden, and many of the mob came in and said, 'Come now, d—n you, Dorset, we have done our work: Pay us our wages.' And I saw the drink come in, in large jugs; and every one drank what he would.

"What I have here said, I am ready to make oath of.

"JONATHAN JONES."

4. "I, Francis Ward, of Wednesbury, went to Walsal, May 30, with John Eaton, to see if we could have justice done to the rioters, who had abused our neighbours at Darlaston. We went to Benjamin Westley's, at the sign of the George, when one Mr. Taylor, Curate of Walsal, came with the mob to the house, and, in our hearing, encouraged them to insult us. Accordingly they pelted us with dirt and stones, all the way we went to the Justice's gate. The Justice came out, and said we must go down into the town, and then he would hear our complaint. But as we went, the mob continued to

pelt us, though the Justice was with us. I desired he would be pleased to read the Act of Parliament against riots; but he would not. When we came to Benjamin Westley's, the Justice would have had a hearing in the streets, among the mob; but at last he was prevailed with to go into the house. Then he called for John Adams, or his wife, and, without hearing them speak, said, 'What, you are Methodists!' or words to that purpose, and immediately went out to the mob. We stayed in the house a considerable time, hoping they would disperse; but as soon as ever we came out, they gathered round us again, and beat and pelted us with whatever they could find. One of them came to me, and struck me on the eye, and cut it so, that I expected to lose my sight. I got into a shop, and had my eye dressed, and then returned to my friends. The mob pursued me again, fetched me out of the house, and beat me very much; but, with much difficulty, I got from among them again, and escaped a second time into the house. They fetched me out again, and dragged me along the street, and through the kennel, to and fro, till I had quite lost my strength, and was so weak I was not able to get up. There came a poor woman, and said to the mob, 'Will ye kill the man?' and lifted me up. With much ado I got home; but the abuse I there received threw me into a fever."

5. "About Whitsuntide, I, Joshua Constable, of Darlston, had all my windows broke by the mob, and many of my goods damaged and spoiled, and so had many of my neighbours; in particular, John Cotterel, smith, Thomas Butler, Thomas Wilkinson, Aaron Longmore, William Powel, Anne Evans, Walter Carter, Samuel Foster, and Thomas Wilkes, had their windows all broke.

"Edward Martin, Anne Low, Joan Fletcher, Edward Hoxton, Mumford Wilks, Jos. Yardly, and Robert Deacon, had all their windows broke twice.

"James Foster, nailer, Sarah Hires, widow, and Jonathan Jones, had their windows broke, and money extorted, to save their houses.

"John Foster, nailer, and Joice Wood, had their windows broke, and their goods broken and spoiled.

"Jos. Spittle, collier, had his windows broke, his house broke open, some goods taken, and some lost.

"William Woods, brick-maker, had his windows broke twice, and was compelled to go along with the rioters.

“Elizabeth Lingham, a widow with five children, had her goods spoiled, her spinning-wheel (the support of her family) broke, and her parish-allowance reduced from 2*s.* 6*d.* to 1*s.* 6*d.* a week.

“Valentine Ambersly, collier, had his windows broke twice, his wife, big with child, abused and beat with clubs.

“George Wynn had his windows and goods broke, and, to save his house, was forced to give them drink.

“Thomas Day had his windows and goods broke, and was forced to remove from the town.

“Jos. Stubs had his windows broke twice, and his wife so frightened that she miscarried.”

6. “On June 20, John Baker, Thomas Griffiths, and Daniel Oniens, at the head of a large mob, came to my house, Jonas Turner by name, at West-Bromwich, near Wednesbury, and asked whether I would keep from these men, and go to the church. I answered, ‘I go to the church very often, but I never see any of you there.’ Presently, Daniel Oniens, with a great club, broke great part of my windows at one blow. Others laid hold of me, and said, ‘You shall go along with us.’ I told them I would not. They dragged me by force about sixty yards, and then I got loose from them. Afterwards they broke all my windows, and threw into my house three baskets-full of stones, to break my goods.”

7. “Some time in June, about four in the afternoon, a mob came to my house at West-Bromwich; I was within, and my two daughters without. They threw in stones and bricks so fast that I thought I should have been knocked on the head. Whereupon I opened the door, and ran out amongst them. One of my daughters cried out, ‘My mother will be killed.’ On which they fell to throwing stones at her. She ran into a neighbour’s house; but before she could shut the door, they broke the bottom off with a brick-end. They followed my other daughter with stones, and one with a great stake. She ran into another house, much frightened, expecting to be murdered. I asked them how they could come and abuse us thus: Upon which one came with a large club, and swore, if I spoke another word, he would knock me on the head and bury me in the ditch. Then he went to the window, and broke two or three panes of glass, which were all that were left. A woman then came

with a club, and broke to pieces part of the tiling of the house.

“Of this I am ready to make oath.

“MARY TURNER.”

8. “On the 19th of June, James Yeoman, of Walsal, saw me in my father’s house at Wednesbury, and swore, ‘By G—, you are there now, but we will break the windows and kill you to-morrow.’ Accordingly, he came with a mob the next day; and after they had broke all the windows, he took up a stone, and said, ‘Now, by G—, I will kill you.’ He threw it, and struck me on the side of the head. The blood gushed out, and I dropped down immediately.

“MARY BIRD.”

9. “June 20, the mob came to the house of me, John Bird, and demanded five shillings of my wife, or they would break all the windows. She offered them some money, which they snatched out of her hand, and then broke ten windows in front, the sash-frames, shutters, cases, chest of drawers, and hanging-press, and damaged the ceiling, doors, dresser, and many other things.

“JOHN BIRD.”

10. “On the 20th of June, the mob came to my house. John Baker by name came first. They threw in stones and bricks as fast as they could throw them; so that we within were afraid of our lives. They broke all the windows I had in my house, and likewise the casement and the ceiling; and when there was no more damage for them to do, one of them cried out, ‘I suppose now you will go to your dear Jesus’s wounds, and see them opened for you.’

“JOHN TURNER.”

11. “June 20, 1743, one Daliston, my neighbour at Wednesbury, after some words, took me by the throat, swore he would be the death of me, gave me a great swing, and threw me on the ground. As soon as I arose, Equal Baker, a collier, gave me a blow on the eye, and knocked me down again. When I got up, he came after me to my house, and said, ‘You dog, I will kill you.’ I went in, got a proper application to my eye, and lay down on the bed. In about half an hour, there came a large mob to my house, and broke all the windows except about twenty panes. The kitchen-windows they cleared, lead, bars, and all, and broke the window-posts, and threw them into the house. My shop

was shut up ; but they soon broke it open, broke all my pots and bottles, and destroyed almost all my medicines. They broke also the shelves and drawers in the shop to pieces, and many of my household goods.

“That day and the next, they broke the windows and goods in more than fourscore houses.

“HUMPHREY HANDS.”

12. “In the latter end of June, 1743, I, John Griffiths, of Wednesbury, with Francis Ward, went to Mr. D., Justice of the Peace. We told him what condition we and our neighbours were in, our houses broken, and our goods spoiled. He replied, ‘I suppose you follow these Parsons that come about.’ So he talked to us very roughly, refused us a warrant, and said, ‘I will neither meddle nor make.’ And after he and some gentlewomen that were with him had made as much game at us as they thought fit, we came away without any justice at all.”

13. “I, Mumford Wilks, heard the Rev. Mr. E. say to the mob at Darlaston, (after they had committed these outrages,) ‘Well, my lads ! He that has done it out of pure zeal for the Church, I do not blame him. My lads, I hope you will let us settle our affairs in our own parish ourselves ; but if these men should come, and they should follow them, then your help will be needful.’ ”

14. “Line and Mare’s Green have been long noted for wickedness of every kind ; for cursing and swearing, Sabbath-breaking, idleness, and all manner of debauchery. Few thereabouts used to go to church, or trouble themselves about religion, till some of them heard Mr. John and Charles Wesley, who then had a desire to flee from the wrath to come. In order to this, they set apart one evening in a week to meet and encourage one another, by reading a chapter, singing a psalm or hymn, and praying and conversing together.

“The revellers, finding their old companions had forsaken them, were enraged at them more and more ; insomuch that they came one evening when they were met, in November, 1743, and unroofed the shop that was aside the house, and thrust down the walls.

“The next time we met, they came in more fury than before, threw great stones, broke the windows and looking-glass, and made the roof of the house to crack and sink, and



seem every moment as if it would break in upon us ; inso-much that we were obliged to press out in the dark, in the midst of a shower of stones.

“ We thought it would be best afterwards to meet in the day, and accordingly we did. Immediately they blew a horn to gather their company together. When they had gathered fifty or sixty, they went from one house to another, threatening to kill those who would not go along with them. They went together to a house, where were things of value, with a great shout, swearing they would plunder. The woman of the house went out, and asked what they wanted. They did not make much reply ; but part of them immediately went into the garden, and dashed in pieces things which cost several pounds.

“ We made complaint hereof to a Justice, Mr. W. G. He took a warrant to fill up, and asked us what number there was in all. We told him, about sixty. He then said, ‘ What, you are Methodists ! Get about your business ; you shall have no warrant ! I am informed you are the vilest men that live.’

“ GEORGE HADLEY.

“ SAMUEL HADLEY.

“ JOS. MOORE.”

15. “ Upon January 13, 1744, I, Jonathan Jones, of Darlaston, about eight or nine at night, met in the street a great company of rioters, who told me they were going to destroy the rest of my goods, and pull my house down, as they had done Joshua Constable’s. So I asked for Thomas Tunks, who was called the captain of the mob, and gave him many good words, and he took of me 2s. 6d., and some others I treated with ale ; so they persuaded the rest to let me alone for that time.

“ The next day came John Stokes, with a great club, and wanted some money, or he said he would break my windows ; but I put him away for the present with some drink. The same night, about six o’clock, came John Bagot and John Linyard, with each a great club, and said, ‘ You have given money to others, and we will have some too ; or else we will call the rest of our company, and serve you as we have done your neighbours.’ So I gave them some money, and they went off about nine or ten o’clock. About six or eight with clubs and staves came after, and John Wilks with a short

gun; but my neighbours and I, with giving them some drink, persuaded them to go away.

“It was some time before, just after the great mob had broken all our windows, that the Rev. Mr. —, with others, met at Thomas Foreshaw’s, at the sign of the Crown, and made a writing, and the mob was sent to bring as many as they had a mind to sign it. They declared, whoever did not come and sign this, they would immediately pull his house down. It was to this effect: ‘That they would never read, or sing, or pray together again, nor hear Mr. Wesley preach.’”

16. “In the month of January, I, Sarah Longmore, late of Darlaston, was coming to Wednesbury, with my brother and sister-in-law, and about thirty men stopped us in the fields, and asked where we were going. We said, ‘About our business.’ Without any more to do, they began to throw dirt and stones at us, and then went before us and stopped us at the stile. Seeing a gap in the hedge, we offered to go through there; but they would not let us. I was knocked down only once, but was bruised in many places.

“Some time before this happened, the mob rose at Darlaston, to near a thousand people. They took me by force out of my mother’s house, gave me a club in my hand, and said, if I did not go with them, and pull down Joseph Spittle’s house, they would murder me. William Caulfield was the man who put the club in my hand, and haled me along the street. I threw down the club, and when I came to the place, saw them break open the house, and bring out some of the goods, the people belonging to it being fled for their lives.

“The same day the Rev. Mr. E. came to Darlaston; and Nicholas Winspur, the common crier of the town, gave notice, ringing his bell, that all the people belonging to the society must come to Mr. Foreshaw’s house, and there set their hands to a paper, signifying that they would not hear these men any more; but if they did not come and set their hands, they must expect to have their houses pulled down.

“When I came, Mr. Foreshaw asked me if I could write. I said, ‘No.’ Then he bid me make my mark; so, through fear, I did. I then laid down a penny, which they made every one of us do, to make the mob drink.”

17. "About Candlemas, my wife was going to Wednesbury, and a mob met her in the road, and threw her down several times, and abused her sadly."

(The manner is too horrible to write. The nearest parallel case, is that of the woman abused by the men of Gibeah; although in this case are many circumstances exceeding that.)

"I got a warrant for some of them from Justice G. As soon as this was known, the mob rose and broke all my windows again. All who were served with the warrant escaped, but one the Constable took, and brought before the Justice; who came back and told his companions, that the Justice bid them go home about their business. So they went home and told the mob; and then they came to my house, broke some goods, and went away for a little time; but when they came again, they broke and destroyed all the necessary goods we had in the house. They likewise broke and spoiled all my shop-tools; threw the tiles off the roof of the house, pulled down one room, the joists of which they carried away with them. Many things they took away, particularly all my gun-locks, both them that were filed, and them that were in the rough. They tore to pieces all my wife's linen, cut the bed and bedstead, so that it was good for nothing; broke her box into little bits, and tore her Bible and Common Prayer-Book all to pieces. We retired to a friend's house; but one telling them we were there, they swore they would tear it down, if he let us stay any longer. So we went out in the frost and snow, not knowing where to lay our head."

18. "John Allen, of Wednesbury, in the county of Stafford; John Darby, of Brerely, in the said county; and James Constable, of Wednesbury aforesaid, jointly and severally make oath and say: And first, John Allen for himself saith, that on Monday, the 6th day of this instant February, being informed that the mob would come the next day to plunder several of his friends and acquaintance, he went to the house of one Francis Ward, of Wednesbury, and assisted in removing goods and furniture; and that on Tuesday morning, (being Shrove-Tuesday,) this deponent, hearing the mob was to come to the town, assisted in removing divers other goods; and that afterwards, on the same day, he met about three hundred persons, assembled together in

a riotous manner; and that presently after, one George Winapur, of Darlaston, and divers others, broke and entered the house of Francis Ward, broke down the fire-grate fixed therein, and then pulled down, took, and carried away all such goods as were left there, and which they were able to carry. After which, one John Baker, of Wednesbury, and a great number of other riotous persons, came to the house of Francis Ward, and broke the windows; and then the said Baker, with divers others, entered the same, and broke to pieces and destroyed the bedsteads, and other goods and furniture.

“The said riotous company then went to another village, called West-Bromwich, and returned back again to Wednesbury, where this deponent saw one Thomas Horton, of Darlaston, with divers others, go in a riotous manner to the house of John Griffiths, of Wednesbury; and saw Thomas Horton, with a sledge hammer, break open the door of that house, which he, with others, entered, and destroyed and broke to pieces divers of the household goods, and carried away the remainder, or the greatest part thereof.

19. “And the said John Darby for himself saith, that on the said 6th day of February, he heard a great many people making a noise; that he went thereupon into his own house, and locked the door; that in about a quarter of an hour, about seven-score persons came up to this deponent's house; nine or ten of whom bade him give them money, else they would break the door; that John Hammersley, of Darlaston, and several others, with a great rail of wood, broke down the door, and entered the house, and caught up a large axe, and broke to pieces and destroyed this deponent's goods and windows. After which they destroyed five stalls of bees, and killed and took away his hens, and threw the hay out of his barn; and, carrying away what they thought proper, went to the house of Samuel Smith, a quarter of a mile further, and broke his windows. Thence they went in a riotous manner to Bilston, and in the morning to Wednesbury.

20. “James Constable saith, that on Monday, the 6th instant, Henry Old, Thomas Adams, and Francis Longmore, all of Darlaston, came to Wednesbury, and, with oaths and curses, in this deponent's hearing, protested, that they would come the next day, and pull down the house of one Benja-

min Constable, and have his heart and his liver out; that accordingly, the next day, about ten in the morning, he heard a great huzza in the town street, and went to see what was the matter, when he, this deponent, was immediately, by one Samuel Cotterel, of Darlaston, and three others, seized by the collar, and forced to go into a great concourse of people, (about three hundred persons,) who had just broke into the house of one John Bird, and were throwing the goods of the said John Bird out of the windows of his house; that those who held this deponent, then letting him go, and running to get their share of the plunder, he went to the house of Benjamin Constable; and about two or three o'clock the same day, the said riotous persons came up to the house, which was locked and bolted; and as this deponent stood on the outside, he saw Thomas Horton with a large hammer strike at the door, in order to break it open; which he not being able to do, Joseph Page, of Darlaston, broke the window, and forced out the iron bars of the said window with a pike, and afterwards broke and entered the same, and, unbolting the door, let the other rioters in; that Thomas Tonks, of Darlaston, and divers others, with an axe, wrenched and forced open the door of Benjamin Coustable's warehouse, riotously entered the same, and broke to pieces and destroyed the goods therein, spilled the liquors therein placed, plundered and destroyed such goods as they could not carry away, both household goods and grocery goods, and also chandler's ware; that afterwards they went to this deponent's house, broke to pieces all the windows of his house, plundered the same from top to bottom, broke to pieces many of his goods, and carried a great part of them away; that thence they went to the house of Daniel Constable, broke open and plundered it in the like manner, and from thence to the house of Thomas Atherly, which they also damaged and plundered.

"All three sworn at Serjeants' } JOHN ALLEN.

Inn, London, on Feb. 24, 1743, } JOHN DARBY.

before William Chapple. } JAMES CONSTABLE."

21. "Monday, February 6, we kept as a fast. Sixty or more of us met at one, and joined in prayer. About eight we heard the mob was at John Griffiths', the elder, breaking the house and spoiling his goods. This put some of us on removing our most portable goods. When I came home, my wife had awakened my youngest girls, and carried them

to a neighbour's house. We then laid down, and committed our own souls to God.

“Next morning, February 7, (Shrove-Tuesday,) all things were pretty still till ten. We were all very cheerful. The greatest fear we had was, lest we should deny our Master; for they had got a paper, which if any one would subscribe, his house was not to be plundered: But the far greater part, by the grace of God, chose rather the loss of all things.

“About half an hour after ten, great numbers of men were gathered together on the Church-hill. We could see them march down, some armed with swords, some with clubs, and some with axes. They first fell upon Benjamin Watson's house, and broke many of the tiles, and all the windows. Next they came to Mr. Addingbrook's, broke a fine clock, with many of his goods, and stole all the things they could carry away; among which were writings of importance, and papers relating to the land-tax. The next house was Jane Smith's, whose windows they broke, with what little goods she had. The next was Mr. Bird's, where they destroyed everything they found, except what they carried away, cutting the beds in pieces, as they did all the beds they could anywhere find. Thence they went to Mr. Edge's house: He was ill of a fever; so, for a sum of money, they passed it over. The next house was mine: They were going by it; but one who used to be my familiar friend called them back. They broke my counter, boxes, and drawers, to chips, and all that axe or hammer could break, except my bedsteads. They spilled all my drugs and chemical medicines, and stole everything they could carry, even all my wife's wearing apparel and mine, besides what we had on.

“Mr. Eaton's house was next. They broke all his windows, and all his inside doors in pieces, cut the lead off his house, destroyed or stole whatever they could lay their hands on. The gentlemen offered to stop them, if he would set his hand to the recantation paper. But he told them, he had felt already what a wounded conscience was; and, by the grace of God, he would wound his conscience no more.

“The next day they came with another mob, and said, if he did not sign it, they would level his house to the ground. He told them, they might do as they pleased; but he would not sign it, if they tore him bit from bit.

"The mob on Tuesday, after they had done at Mr. Eaton's, plundered several other houses in Wednesbury, and several in West-Bromwich. It is impossible to describe the outrages they have committed. We keep meeting together morning and evening, are in great peace and love with each other, and are nothing terrified by our adversaries. God grant we may endure to the end !

"February 26.

HUMPHREY HANDS."

22. "On Tuesday, January 31, 1743, Henry Old came to John Griffiths senior's house, saying, if they did not leave following 'this way,' he had a hundred men at his command, who should come and pull the house down. Soon after, he brought seven or eight men with him, swearing what he would do unless they gave him a guinea. They said, a guinea was not so soon shaken out of poor folk's sleeves. Then he said he would go and fetch the mob ; but the neighbours gave him money, and sent him away for that time.

"Monday, February 6, between seven and eight at night, came part of the company. Hearing them afar off, John and his wife fastened the door, and left the house. Some of the neighbours going in soon after, found them destroying all they could. Two chairs and several bundles of linen were laid upon the fire. They did not dare to touch them, but persuaded the men all they could to go home. After they had destroyed what they could, they loaded themselves with clothes and meat, and went their way.

"JOHN GRIFFITHS, SEN."

23. "My father sending me word, that the mob had been at his house, and broke many of his goods, and stole many, I removed as many as I could of mine, before they plundered my house. And, hearing they would force me to go with them, I sent my wife and children before, and then followed them to her father's ; but he did not care to receive us. My wife wept : I was full of love, and not at all moved. At last, their hearts relented, and they took us in. This indeed was the case with many of us. We were driven out of our own houses, and our friends did not dare to receive us into theirs. The reason for which my old companions have the greatest spite to me is, because I will not drink and game, and break the Sabbath with them, as I used to do.

"JOHN GRIFFITHS, JUN."

24. "I, Edward Smith, of Wednesbury, standing by my own door, on Shrove-Tuesday, there came a great mob, and broke into and plundered Benjamin Constable's house; then they came to my house, and the foremost of them, Thomas Horton, with a great hammer, broke open the door. I begged them to let me unlock the door; but he swore, if I did not get away, he would knock me down. At the same time Richard Adams, with a large iron bar, broke the house window, and got through. A great number of them followed both ways, and plundered the house, breaking some goods, and stealing others; several neighbours endeavouring to save them, but to no purpose."

25. "I, Edward Slater, of Wednesbury, was informed the night before, that the mob designed to plunder my house the next day. And between ten and eleven on Tuesday, standing in the fields, I saw them come down the town, with clubs and other weapons, to Mr. Eaton's house. Then the colliers, by themselves, swinging their clubs round their hands, gave a great shout and jump together. Then they began breaking his windows; and those who first broke into the house and went up stairs, threw the goods out of the chamber windows, which Henry Old cut to pieces with an axe. I saw some come out, with their pockets, and waistcoats, and breeches, loaded with goods. I went down the field towards my own house, got into a valley, read part of a chapter, and prayed for them. Then I got up, and saw the light through my own house, both doors and windows being knocked to pieces. After they had plundered some other houses, I saw them go up the street, laden with brass, pewter, and linen."

26. "According to your request, I send you some account of what the mob did on Shrove-Tuesday. When I heard they were in town, and broke and stole all before them, I got out our beds and wearing apparel, and hid them in the hedges, and went and stood beside a hedge, about sixty yards off my own house.

"When the mob came, they began with breaking the windows. They then broke and stole all they could lay hands on. They searched, and found the beds and linen which I had hid, and took all they thought worth carrying away. I waded through the brook, to try if I could save some of my goods, which a man was pulling out of the ditch



where I had hid them : His name was David Garrington. He told me it would be the same here as it was in Ireland ; for there would be a massacre very quickly, and he wished it was now.

“ When they were gone, my wife, and I, and two children, came home. Our house was all laid open ; for both the doors were gone, and all the windows and the middle posts were broke out. Being wet and very cold, we gathered up some of the chips, (for our goods were mostly broke into chips and strewed about the rooms,) and made a fire ; but the wind blew the smoke so about, that we could not bear to sit by it. We knew not what to do, till one of our neighbours sent us word we might come to his house. But one went to Walsal the next day, and told the landlord, who came and told them that received us, they must turn out ; and we expected there would not be a house to receive a Methodist in the whole country.

“ On Ash-Wednesday I was helping Mr. Eaton to remove some corn, which they had not found the day before ; when Mr. William Horton came with a paper in his hand, and about a hundred persons with him. He pressed Mr. Eaton to sign it, who refused. Then they laid hold of me, and swore I should. I told them I would not. They caught hold of my collar, shook me, tore my shirt and waistcoat, pushed me from one to another, and asked again, ‘ Will you sign the paper yet ? ’ I told them, No. They then got a cord, put it about my neck, and swore they would hang me out of hand. Others cried out, ‘ Draw him through the brook.’ But one of them snatched away the cord, and said, if I would not set my hand, I might go about my business. They followed me, however, with many stones ; but, by the providence of God, I was not hurt.

“ *March 5, 1743.*

JOHN TURNER.”

27. “ Having notice that the mob was coming, I, William Sitch, of West-Bromwich, and my wife, (who had been delivered but a fortnight,) thought it best to go out of the house and leave it to them. My wife, with her young child, was forced to stay in the fields, none daring to take her into their house. At length one man did ; but he was, in a little time, persuaded to turn her out again.

“ The rioters plundered my house three several times, and did all the mischief they could : But, blessed be God, I

could rejoice therein. He has said, 'As thy day is, so thy strength shall be.' And never did I find his promise fulfilled more than at that time.

"WILLIAM SITCH."

28. "On Shrove-Tuesday, after two large mobs were passed by, came four or five men to my next neighbour, Jonas Turner's house. I and another woman followed them, to see what they would do. They first broke the windows, then broke down the door, and went into the house. Soon after they were in, they flung out a box at the chamber window, and swore, if any touched it they would murder them. Soon after they flung out a Bible, and one of them came out, and in great rage cut it into pieces with his axe.

"MARY TURNER, of West-Bromwich."

29. "The first that came to my house (Thomas Parks, of West-Bromwich) on Tuesday, February 7, were five with great clubs, whom I met at the door. They demanded whether I would deny hearing these Parsons. I told them, No; for I believed they spoke the truth as it is in Jesus; and if I were to deny them, I should deny Him that sent them. They told me, if I would not, they would plunder my house. I replied, they must answer it at God's bar, and I would meet them there. I asked, whether I had done them any harm. They said, No; but they would have me keep to the Church. I told them, 'Some of you may know that I worship among the Dissenters; but I love a good man, let him go where he will; for there is but one church of Christ; and if you do not belong to that church, you had better never have been born.'

"I told them, 'God has allowed me liberty of conscience, and so have the King and Parliament, and hope my neighbours will too; but if not, a day is coming, when the persecuted and the persecutor shall stand together; and if you wrong me now, God will right me then.'

"While I was speaking, I caught hold of their clubs, and the words seemed to have some influence on them: But by this time there was a great body of them gathered together; so they broke my windows, and then the door, and flocked into my house, and began to break my goods. But here the Lord suffered them not to go so far as they had done in other places; for they soon fell to plundering, and looting

themselves with the things I had for myself, a wife, and seven children.

“However, in a while, I had prevailed with some of them to stop. But they then said I must set my hand to their paper. I told them they were cloaked over with the name of Protestants; but none but a Popish spirit would tie men’s consciences. So I committed my cause to God, and withdrew from my house and them.

“As I went along, one, who thinks herself a Christian, said, now I might see God was against me. I told her I did now feel that God was for me, and that He loved me never the less for this; for God loved Job on the dunghill with only a potsherd, as well as He did in all his plenty. I thought she, in effect, bid me curse God and die. May the Lord make her a Christian indeed!

“When I returned to my house, and saw it in ruins, I found nothing in my heart towards my persecutors but love. Neither could I doubt of God’s love to my soul. All that is within me bless His holy name!

“One day, six or eight of the mob got me amongst them, and said they were going to make a law, and we should all set our hands to it. I told them I would submit to the laws of God and my Prince, but I could not to the laws of the devil. One of them swore he would break my windows again. I asked him if ever he heard of Jesus Christ doing so; and how he durst, when he must answer it at His bar: At which he stood silent.”

30. On Shrove-Tuesday, about eleven o’clock, Sarah, the wife of John Sheldon, of West-Bromwich, being told the mob was coming to her house, went and met them at the gate. Mr. S—, Mr. J—, and Mr. S—L—, Cornet, were at the head of them. She asked John Baker, who was captain of the mob, what they were come here for. He answered, if she would have nothing more to do with these people, not a penny-worth of her goods should be hurt. She made no reply. Then they broke the door open, and began breaking and plundering the goods. One coming out with a fire-shovel, she begged him not to take it away. He swore, if she spoke another word he would beat her brains out.

After they had rifled the house, they went to search the barn. Some goods were hid there, which she thought

would now go with the rest; so she went and sat contentedly down in the ruined house: But a man of their own, as bitter as the rest till then, desired they would not pull up the cow-stakes; so they looked no further; but seeing a calf, they beat and lamed it in such a manner, that they were obliged to kill it.

John Sheldon was at this time helping Thomas Parkes to hide his goods, though he knew, by the noise, they were breaking his own in pieces. Between two and three he came to his house with William Sitch. William asked Sarah how she did; saying, for his part, he took joyfully the spoiling of his goods. She answered that, seeing so much wickedness, she could not rejoice; but she blessed God she could bear it patiently, and found not the least anger in her. John Sheldon, seeing the spoil they had made, smiled, and said, "Here is strange work." His wife told him, if she had complied with their terms, not one penny-worth would have been hurt. He replied, that if she complied to deny the truth, and he had found his goods whole on that account, he should never have been easy as long as he lived; but he blessed God that she had rather chose to suffer wrong.

31. The mob continued to rise for six days together. The damage they did in and about Wednesbury, at the very lowest computation, is as follows:—

	£.	s.	d.
Benjamin Constable . . . . .	103	0	0
Humphrey Hands . . . . .	44	6	7
John Eaton . . . . .	43	11	0
John Bird . . . . .	43	0	0
Richard Bolton . . . . .	40	0	0
Francis Ward . . . . .	22	14	6
Godfrey Ward . . . . .	22	6	4
Johu Turner . . . . .	20	0	0
William Mason . . . . .	19	0	4
Thomas Parkes . . . . .	14	0	0
John Sheldon . . . . .	9	6	6
John Griffiths . . . . .	8	15	8
Lydia Partridge . . . . .	2	0	0
Joseph Perry . . . . .	1	10	0
John Darby . . . . .	8	13	6
Jonas Turner . . . . .	8	12	0

	£.	s.	d.
Richard Spittle . . . . .	2	17	0
Joseph Spittle . . . . .	1	5	0
Edward Holdbury . . . . .	4	10	0
Humphrey Hadley . . . . .	13	11	9
John Griffiths . . . . .	6	6	0
Benjamin Watson . . . . .	2	11	0
Thomas Smith . . . . .	7	15	6
Edward Smith . . . . .	2	5	0
William Sitch . . . . .	5	6	0
Daniel Constable . . . . .	2	13	5
Henry Addinbrook . . . . .	15	14	4
Joshua Constable . . . . .	14	11	0
Joseph Stubbs, and Robert Dakin . . . . .	2	0	0
Jonathan Jones . . . . .	3	0	0
William Small . . . . .	4	12	7
Thomas Edwardly . . . . .	5	0	0
Edward Slater . . . . .	9	12	10
	<hr/>		
	£504	7	10
	<hr/>		

32. "I, Benjamin Constable, was induced to go to a Justice of Peace, on account of a warrant fetched by the wife of Joshua Constable, for abuse done to her, as she went over the field betwixt Wednesbury and Darlaston. She swore against five men, before Mr. G. The warrant was executed upon one of them; but the Justice would not act anything against him, unless the other four were brought before him. The man, returning home, raised a mob the same evening, went to the house of Joshua Constable, pulled part of it down, and destroyed his goods. This I thought proper to acquaint the Justice of.

"A second thing which induced me was, that, on the last day of January, there came to my house Henry Old, Francis Longmore, and Thomas Baylis, and demanded money, else, they said, they would break my goods. But it being day-time, and their strength small, (though they had large clubs in their hands,) I refused.

"I sent to the Constable's, at Darlaston, to know if he would execute his warrant on the other four. He sent me word, he durst not do it, for fear of having his house pulled down.

“ I went, on February 2, to Mr. G., and gave him the foregoing account; and withal told him, that, on the Tuesday following, February 7, they threatened to rise and pull down our houses. He answered me in a rough manner, and asked what I would have him to do: He could do no more than give out his warrant; and if the Constable would not, or could not, execute it, he could not help it. I desired that he would write a line to the officers of Wednesbury and Darlaston, to exert themselves for the discouraging of any rising on Tuesday; but he refused, and told me, if we could not agree among one another, we must go to the devil which way we would.”

33. “ John Bird, of Wednesbury, in the county of Stafford, carpenter, is ready to make oath, that he, together with William Mumford and Mary Bird, on the 10th day of this instant April, went to the house of W— G—, Esq., Justice of Peace, in order to have a warrant for some of the principal rioters, who had lately done great damage to this deponent, and divers other persons; but the said Justice refused to grant any warrant against them: That William Mumford then demanded a warrant against some of the said rioters, who had done damage to him; to which the said Justice said they were Methodists; and, after several other words, refused to grant it: That on the 13th instant, this deponent, together with Mary Mumford and Mary Bird, went to the house of J— D—, Esq., a Justice of the Peace in the said county, and requested the said Justice to grant him a warrant to take up some of the rioters, which the said Justice refused to do; so that on the 17th instant, this deponent, together with Mary Bird, went to the house of W— P—, Esq., a Justice of the Peace for the said county, and requested a warrant to take up some of the rioters; to which the said Justice answered him roughly, that he, and the rest of the Justices in the neighbourhood, had concluded and agreed to grant us no warrant. And this deponent further saith, that he himself hath sustained damage by the rioters to the value of fifty pounds and upwards; and that neither he nor any other person who hath sustained damage by them are able to bring the said rioters to justice, because not any of the above-mentioned Justices of the Peace will grant any warrant to apprehend them.”

Such is the liberty of conscience which Protestants grant

one another! Does not He that is higher than the highest regard it?

34. Wednesday, October 19, 1743, I, John Wesley, came to Birmingham, in my way to Newcastle. Thursday, October 20, several persons from Wednesbury earnestly desired me to call there. I yielded to their importunity, and went. I was sitting writing at Francis Ward's, in the afternoon, when the cry arose, that the Darlaston mob had beset the house. I called together those that were in the house, and prayed that God would "scatter the people that delight in war." And it was so: One went one way, and one another; so that in half an hour the house was clear on every side. But before five they returned with greater numbers. The cry of all was, "Bring out the Minister."

I desired one to bring the captain of the mob into the house. After a few words interchanged, the lion was as a lamb. I then desired him to bring in one or two more of the most angry of his companions. He did so; and in two minutes their minds were changed too. I then bade them who were in the room make way, that I might go out among the people. As soon as I was in the midst of them, I said, "Here I am; what do you want with me?" Many cried out, "We want you to go with us to the Justice." I told them, "That I will with all my heart." So I walked before, and two or three hundred of them followed, to Bentley-hall, two miles from Wednesbury; but a servant came out and told them Justice Lane was not to be spoken with. Here they were at a stand, till one advised to go to Justice Persehouse, at Walsal. About seven we came to his house; but he also sent word that he was in bed, and could not be spoken with.

All the company were now pretty well agreed to make the best of their way home; but we had not gone a hundred yards, when the mob of Walsal came pouring in like a flood. The Darlaston mob stood against them for a while; but in a short time, some being knocked down, and others much hurt, the rest ran away, and left me in their hands.

To attempt to speak was vain, the noise being like that of taking a city by storm; so they dragged me along till we came to the town, at a few hundred yards' distance; where, seeing the door of a large house open, I endeavoured to go in; but a man, catching me by the hair, (my hat having been

caught away at the beginning,) pulled me back into the middle of the mob, who were as so many ramping and roaring lions. They hurried me from thence, through the main street, from one end of the town to the other. I continued speaking all the time to those within hearing, feeling no pain or weariness. At the west end of the town, seeing a door half open, I made towards it, and would have gone in; but a gentleman in the shop would not suffer me, saying, they would pull the house down if I did. However, here I stood, and asked, "Are you willing to hear me speak?" Many cried out, "No, no; knock his brains out." Others said, "Nay, but we will hear him speak first." I began asking, "What hurt have I done to you? Whom among you have I wronged in word or deed?" and continued speaking till my voice failed. Then the floods lifted up their voice again, many crying out, "Bring him away, bring him away!"

Feeling my strength renewed, I spoke again, and broke out aloud into prayer. And now one of the men who had headed the mob before, turned and said, "Sir, follow me: Not a man shall touch a hair of your head." Two or three more confirmed his words. At the same time the Mayor (for it was he that stood in the shop) cried out, "For shame, for shame! Let him go!" An honest butcher spoke to the same effect; and seconded his words by laying hold of four or five, one after another, who were running on the most fiercely. The people then dividing to the right and left, those three or four men who had spoken before took me between them, and carried me through the midst; bitterly protesting, "they would knock down any that touched him." But on the bridge the mob rallied again; we therefore went on one side, over a milldam, and thence through the meadows, till, a little after ten, God brought me safe to Wednesbury, having lost only a part of my waistcoat, and a little skin from one of my hands.

I never saw such a chain of providences before; so many convincing proofs, that the hand of God is on every person and thing, overruling him as it seemeth Him good.

Among these I cannot but reckon the circumstances that follow: 1. That they endeavoured, abundance of times, to trip me up, as we went down hill, over the wet, slippery grass, to the town; as well judging, that if I was once on



the ground, I should hardly rise again : But I made no slip, nor the least stumble at all, till I was entirely out of their hands. 2. That although many strove to lay hold on my collar, or clothes, they could not fasten at all ; their fingers, I cannot tell how, slipping along, without fixing once : Only one man seized the flap of my waistcoat, and took it away with him ; the other flap, in the pocket of which was a twenty-pound bank note, was torn but half off. 3. That a lusty man, just behind, struck at me many times with a large oaken stick ; with which if he had struck me on the back of the head, I should probably have preached no more ; but every time the blow was turned aside, I know not how, for I could not move to the right hand or left. 4. That another man came rushing through the press, raised his arm to strike, let it sink again, and, stroking my head, said, " What soft hair he has ! I cannot find in my heart to hurt him." 5. That I went as straight to the Mayor's door, when I was a little loosed for a few moments, as if I had known it, (which they probably thought I did,) and found him standing in the shop ; which gave the first check to the fury of the people. 6. That no creature (at least within my hearing) laid anything to my charge, either true or false ; having in the hurry, it seems, forgot to provide themselves with an accusation of any kind. And, lastly, that they were equally at a loss to know what to do with me, none proposing any determinate thing. The cry of most was, " Away with him, away with him ! " of others, " Kill him at once ! " But none so much as once mentioned how ; only one or two (I almost tremble to relate it) screamed out, (with what meaning I cannot tell,) " Crucify the dog ! crucify him ! "

By how gentle degrees does God prepare us either for doing or suffering His will ! Two years since, one threw at me a piece of brick, which grazed on my shoulder, but hurt me not. It was a year after, that another threw a stone, which struck me between the eyes ; but the hurt was soon healed, and still no man had power to lay a hand upon me. At St. Ives, last month, I received one blow, the first I ever had, on the side of the head ; and this night two, one before we came into the town, and one after I was gone out into the meadows. But though one man struck me on the breast with all his might, and the other on the mouth so that the blood gushed out, I felt no more pain from

either of the blows, than if they had touched me with a straw.

*October 22, 1743.*

“‘Lo, I come,’ if this soul and body may be useful to anything, ‘to do thy will, O God.’ And if it please thee to use the power thou hast over dust and ashes, over weak flesh and blood, over a brittle vessel of clay, over the work of thine own hands; lo, here they are, to suffer also thy good pleasure. If thou please to visit me either with pain or dishonour, I will ‘humble myself’ under it, and, through thy grace, be ‘obedient unto death, even the death upon the cross.’ Whatsoever may befall me, either from neighbours or strangers, since it is thou employest them, though they know it not, (unless thou help me to some lawful means of redressing the wrong,) I will not ‘open my mouth before the Lord,’ who smiteth me, except only to ‘bless the Lord.’ Hereafter no man can take away anything from me, no life, no honour, no estate; since I am ready to lay them down, as soon as I perceive thou requirest them at my hands. Nevertheless, ‘O Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me; but if not, thy will be done.’ Whatever sufferings hereafter may trouble my flesh, or whatever agonies may trouble my spirit, ‘O Father, into thy hands will I commend’ my life, and all that concerneth it. And if thou be pleased, either that I live yet awhile, or not, I will, with my Saviour, ‘bow down my head;’ I will humble myself under thy hand; I will give up all thou art pleased to ask, until at last I ‘give up the ghost.’”

---

## A LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. WALKER.

---

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

BRISTOL, *September 24, 1755.*

1. You greatly oblige me by speaking your thoughts so freely; and the more by giving me hopes of seeing your

further sentiments on so nice and important an affair. I did not delay one day to follow your advice with regard to Mr. Adams, but sent him, by the very next post, a copy of those papers; although I am satisfied already as to the publishing them, and have laid aside that design; the reasons you urge against the expediency of it being abundantly sufficient. But you seem a little to misapprehend what we speak of hearing Predestinarian Preachers. We find, by long experience, that this is deadly poison, not in itself, but to the members of our societies. This we know to be an unquestionable truth; and it was a truth necessary to be observed; nay, and strongly insisted on, (though without any design of bearing hard on any particular person,) when many were enlarging on the poisonous doctrines which they heard at many of their parish churches.

2. All that you say concerning the inexpediency of a separation from the Church, I readily allow; as likewise, that the first and main question must be, "Is it lawful to separate?" Accordingly, this was debated first, and that at large, in seven or eight long conversations. And it was then only, when we could not agree concerning this, that we proceeded to weigh the expediency of it.

3. As to the grounds on which those who plead for a separation from the Church proceed, some of them have weighed the point long and deeply. They have very particularly, and with earnest and continued prayer, considered the lawfulness of it. And they allow, "If it be lawful to abide therein, then it is not lawful to separate." But they aver, "It is not lawful to abide therein;" and that for the following reasons:—

First. With regard to the Liturgy itself: Though they allow it is, in the general, one of the most excellent human compositions that ever was, yet they think it is both absurd and sinful to declare such an assent and consent as is required, to any merely human composition. Again: Though they do not object to the use of forms, yet they dare not confine themselves to them. And in this form (the Book of Common Prayer) there are several things which they apprehend to be contrary to Scripture.

Secondly. As to the laws of the Church, if they include the Canons and Decretals, both which are received as such in our Courts, they think "the latter are the very dregs

of Popery, and that many of the former, the Canons of 1603, are as grossly wicked as absurd." And, over and above the objections which they have to several particular ones, they think, "1. That the spirit which they breathe is throughout truly Popish and antichristian. 2. That nothing can be more diabolical than the *ipso facto* excommunication so often denounced therein. 3. That the whole method of executing these Canons, the process used in our Spiritual Courts, is too bad to be tolerated (not in a Christian, but) in a Mahometan or Pagan nation."

Thirdly. With respect to the Ministers, they doubt "whether there are not many of them whom God hath not sent; inasmuch as they neither live the Gospel nor teach it; neither indeed can, seeing they do not know it." They doubt the more, "because themselves disclaim that inward call to the ministry, which is at least as necessary as the outward." And they are not clear, "whether it be lawful to attend the ministrations of those whom God has not sent to minister."

Fourthly. The doctrines actually taught by these, and indeed by a great majority of the Church Ministers, they think "are not only wrong, but fundamentally so, and subversive of the whole Gospel." They therefore doubt "whether it be lawful to bid them God speed, or to have any fellowship with them."

I will freely acknowledge that I cannot answer these arguments to my own satisfaction. So that my conclusion, which I cannot yet give up,—that it is lawful to continue in the Church,—stands, I know not how, almost without any premises that are to bear its weight.

My difficulty is very much increased by one of your observations. I know the original doctrines of the Church are sound; I know her worship is in the main pure and scriptural. But if "the essence of the Church of England, considered as such, consists in her orders and laws," (many of which I myself can say nothing for,) "and not in her worship and doctrines," those who separate from her have a far stronger plea than I was ever sensible of.

4. At present I apprehend those, and those only, to separate from the Church, who either renounce her fundamental doctrines, or refuse to join in her public worship. As yet we have done neither; nor have we taken one step

further than we were convinced was our bounden duty. It is from a full conviction of this, that we have, (1.) Preached abroad: (2.) Prayed extempore: (3.) Formed societies: And, (4.) Permitted Preachers who were not Episcopally ordained. And were we pushed on this side, were there no alternative allowed, we should judge it our bounden duty, rather wholly to separate from the Church, than to give up any one of these points. Therefore, if we cannot stop a separation without stopping lay-Preachers, the case is clear,—we cannot stop it at all.

5. “But if we permit them, should we not do more? Should we not appoint them rather? since the bare permission puts the matter quite out of our hands, and deprives us of all our influence.” In great measure, it does; therefore, to appoint them is far more expedient, if it be lawful. But is it lawful for Presbyters, circumstanced as we are, to appoint other Ministers? This is the very point wherein we desire advice; being afraid of leaning to our own understanding.

It is undoubtedly “needful,” as you observe, “to come to some resolution in this point;” and the sooner the better. I therefore rejoice to hear that you think “this matter may be better and more inoffensively ordered; and that a method may be found, which, conducted with prudence and patience, will reduce the constitution of Methodism to due order, and render the Methodists, under God, more instrumental to the ends of practical religion.”

This, Sir, is the very thing I want. I must therefore beg your sentiments on this head; and that as particularly as your other engagements will allow. Wishing you more and more of the wisdom from above,

I remain, Rev. and dear Sir,

Your obliged and affectionate brother and servant,  
**JOHN WESLEY.**

## SECOND LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. WALKER.

---

REV. AND DEAR SIR, . . . KINGSWOOD, *September 3, 1756.*

I HAVE one point in view,—to promote, so far as I am able, vital, practical religion; and by the grace of God to beget, preserve, and increase the life of God in the souls of men. On this single principle I have hitherto proceeded, and taken no step but in subserviency to it. With this view, when I found it to be absolutely necessary for the continuance of the work which God had begun in many souls, (which their regular Pastors generally used all possible means to destroy,) I permitted several of their brethren, whom I believe God had called thereto, and qualified for the work, to comfort, exhort, and instruct those who were athirst for God, or who walked in the light of his countenance. But as the persons so qualified were few, and those who wanted their assistance very many, it followed, that most of these were obliged to travel continually from place to place; and this occasioned several regulations from time to time, which were chiefly made in our Conferences.

So great a blessing has, from the beginning, attended the labours of these Itinerants, that we have been more and more convinced every year, of the more than lawfulness of this proceeding. And the inconveniences, most of which we foresaw from the very first, have been both fewer and smaller than were expected. Rarely two in one year, out of the whole number of Preachers, have either separated themselves or been rejected by us. A great majority have all along behaved as becometh the Gospel of Christ, and, I am clearly persuaded, still desire nothing more than to spend and be spent for their brethren.

But the question is, "How may these be settled on such

a footing, as one would wish they might be after my death?" It is a weighty point, and has taken up many of my thoughts for several years: But I know nothing yet. The steps I am *now* to take are plain. I see broad light shining upon them. But the other part of the prospect I cannot see: Clouds and darkness rest upon it.

Your general advice on this head,—to follow my own conscience, without any regard to consequences, or prudence, so called, is unquestionably right; and it is a rule which I have closely followed for many years, and hope to follow to my life's end. The first of your particular advices is "to keep in full view the interests of Christ's church in general, and of practical religion; not considering the Church of England, or the cause of Methodism, but as subordinate thereto." This advice I have punctually observed from the beginning, as well as at our late Conference. You advise, secondly, "to keep in view also the unlawfulness of a separation from the Church of England." To this likewise I agree. It cannot be lawful to separate from it, unless it be unlawful to continue in it. You advise, thirdly, "fully to declare myself on this head, and to suffer no dispute concerning it." The very same thing I wrote to my brother from Ireland; and we have declared ourselves without reserve. Nor was there any at the Conference otherwise minded. Those who would have aimed at dispute had left us before. Fourthly, All our Preachers, as well as ourselves, purpose to continue in the Church of England. Nor did they ever before so freely and explicitly declare themselves on this subject.

Your last advice is, "That as many of our Preachers as are fit for it, be ordained; and that the others be fixed to certain societies, not as Preachers, but as readers or inspectors."

You oblige me by speaking your sentiments so plainly: With the same plainness I will answer. So far as I know myself, I have no more concern for the reputation of Methodism, or my own, than for the reputation of Prester John. I have the same point in view as when I set out,—the promoting, as I am able, vital, practical religion: And in all our discipline I still aim at the continuance of the work which God has already begun in so many souls. With this view, and this only, I permitted those whom I believed God had called thereto, to comfort, exhort, and instruct their

brethren. And if this end can be better answered some other way, I shall subscribe to it without delay.

But is that which you propose a better way? This should be coolly and calmly considered.

If I mistake not, there are now in the county of Cornwall about four-and-thirty of these little societies, part of whom now experience the love of God; part are more or less earnestly seeking it. Four Preachers, Peter Jaco, Thomas Johnson, W. Crabb, and William Alwood, design for the ensuing year, partly to call other sinners to repentance, but chiefly to feed and guide those few feeble sheep; to forward them, as of the ability which God giveth, in vital, practical religion.

Now, suppose we can effect, that Peter Jaco and Thomas Johnson be ordained and settled in the curacies of Buryan and St. Just; and suppose William Crabb and William Alwood fix at Launceston and Plymouth-dock, as readers and exhorters; will this answer the end which I have in view so well as travelling through the county?

It will not answer it so well even with regard to those societies with whom Peter Jaco and Thomas Johnson have settled. Be their talents ever so great, they will ere long grow dead themselves, and so will most of those that hear them. I know, were I myself to preach one whole year in one place, I should preach both myself and most of my congregation asleep. Nor can I believe it was ever the will of our Lord that any congregation should have one Teacher only. We have found by long and constant experience, that a frequent change of Teachers is best. This Preacher has one talent; that, another. No one whom I ever yet knew has all the talents which are needful for beginning, continuing, and perfecting the work of grace in a whole congregation.

But suppose this would better answer the end with regard to those two societies, would it answer in those where W. Alwood and W. Crabb were settled as inspectors or readers? First, Who shall feed them with the milk of the word? The Ministers of their parishes? Alas, they cannot! they themselves neither know, nor live, nor teach the Gospel. These readers? Can then either they, or I, or you, always find something to read to our congregation, which will be as exactly adapted to their wants, and as much blessed to



them, as our preaching? And here is another difficulty still: What authority have I to forbid their doing what I believe God has called them to do? I apprehend indeed that there ought, if possible, to be both an outward and inward call to this work; yet, if one of the two be supposed wanting, I had rather want the outward than the inward call. I rejoice that I am called to preach the Gospel both by God and man. Yet I acknowledge, I had rather have the divine without the human, than the human without the divine, call.

But, waving this, and supposing these four societies to be better provided for than they were before; what becomes of the other thirty? Will they prosper as well when they are left as sheep without a shepherd? The experiment has been tried again and again; and always with the same event: Even the strong in faith grew weak and faint; many of the weak made shipwreck of the faith; the awakened fell asleep; sinners, changed for a while, returned as a dog to the vomit. And so, by our lack of service, many of the souls perished for whom Christ died. Now, had we willingly withdrawn our service from them, by voluntarily settling in one place, what account of this could we have given to the great Shepherd of all our souls?

I cannot therefore see, how any of those four Preachers, or any others in like circumstances, can ever, while they have health and strength, ordained or unordained, fix in one place, without a grievous wound to their own conscience, and damage to the general work of God. Yet I trust I am open to conviction; and your farther thoughts on this, or any subject, will be always acceptable to,

Rev. and dear Sir,

Your very affectionate brother and fellow-labourer,

**JOHN WESLEY.**

## THIRD LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. WALKER

---

REV. AND DEAR SIR,      HELSTONE, *September 16, 1757.*

NOTHING can be more kind than the mentioning to me whatever you think is amiss in my conduct: And the more freedom you use in doing this, the more I am indebted to you. I am throughly persuaded that you "wish me well;" and that it is this, together with a "concern for the common interests of religion," which obliges you to speak with more plainness than otherwise you would. The same motives induce me to lay aside all reserve, and tell you the naked sentiments of my heart.

Two years since, eleven or twelve persons of Falmouth were members of our society. Last year I was informed that a young man there had begun to teach them new opinions; and that, soon after, offence and prejudice crept in, and increased till they were all torn asunder. What they have done since, I know not; for they have no connexion with us. I do "exert myself" so far as to separate from us those that separate from the Church. But in a thousand other instances I feel the want of more resolution and firmness of spirit. Yet sometimes that may appear irresolution which is not so. I exercise as little authority as possible, because I am afraid of people's depending upon me too much, and paying me more reverence than they ought.

But I proceed to the substance of your letter. You say, 1. "If you still hold the essence of justifying faith to be in assurance, why did you encourage J. H. to believe his state good?"

Assurance is a word I do not use, because it is not scriptural. But I hold, that a divine evidence or conviction that Christ loved me, and gave himself for me, is essential to, if not the very essence of, justifying faith. J. H. told me he had more than this; even a clear conviction that his sins

were forgiven; although he said that conviction was not so clear now as it had been in times past.

2. "If you believed Mr. V. to be a gracious person, and a Gospel Minister, why did you not, in justice to your people, leave them to him?"

J. H. assured me that Mr. V. also had a clear conviction of his being reconciled to God. If so, I could not deny his being a gracious person; and I heard him preach the true, though not the whole, Gospel. But had it been the whole, there are several reasons still, why I did not give up the people to him. (1.) No one mentioned or intimated any such thing, nor did it once enter into my thoughts. But if it had, (2.) I do not know that every one who preaches the truth has wisdom and experience to guide and govern a flock. I do not know that Mr. V. in particular has. He may, or he may not. (3.) I do not know whether he would or could give that flock all the advantages for holiness which they now enjoy: And to leave them to him, before I was assured of this, would be neither justice nor mercy. (4.) Unless they were also assured of this, they could not in conscience give up themselves to him; and I have neither right nor power to dispose of them contrary to their conscience.

"But they are his already by legal establishment." If they receive the sacrament from him thrice a year, and attend his ministrations on the Lord's day, I see no more which the law requires. But, to go a little deeper into this matter of legal establishment: Does Mr. Conon or you think that the King and Parliament have a right to prescribe to me what Pastor I shall use? If they prescribe one which I know God never sent, am I obliged to receive him? If he be sent of God, can I receive him with a clear conscience till I know he is? And even when I do, if I believe my former Pastor is more profitable to my soul, can I leave him without sin? Or has any man living a right to require this of me?

I "extend this to every Gospel Minister in England." Before I could with a clear conscience leave the Methodist society even to such an one, all these considerations must come in.

And with regard to the people: Far from thinking that "the withdrawing our Preachers" from such a society with-

out their consent, would prevent a separation from the Church, I think it would be the direct way to cause it. While we are with them, our advice has weight, and keeps them to the Church: But were we totally to withdraw, it would be of little or no weight. Nay, perhaps resentment of our unkindness (as it would appear to them) would prompt them to act in flat opposition to it. "And will it not be the same at your death?" I believe not; for I believe there will be no resentment in this case; and the last advice of a dying friend is not likely to be so soon forgotten.

3. But "was there no inconsistency in your visiting Mr. V., as a Minister of the Gospel, when you do not give up your people to him?" My visiting him as a Gospel Minister did not imply any obligation so to do.

4. "If that was not the design of the visit, you should not have visited him at all." Does that follow? I visited him as a brother and a fellow-labourer, because he desired it.

5. "Does not this conduct, on the whole, savour of a party spirit, and show a desire to please the Methodists, as Methodists?"

I am not conscious of any such spirit, or of any desire but that of pleasing all men for their good to edification. And I have as great a desire thus to please you as any Methodist under heaven.

You add one thing more, which is of deep importance, and deserves a particular consideration. "You spake to Mr. Vowler of your being as one man. Nothing is so desirable: But really, before it can be effected, something must be done on your part more than paying us visits; which, as far as I can see, can serve no other purpose, in the present circumstances, than to bring us under needless difficulties."

I did indeed speak to Mr. V. of our being as one man; and not to him only, but to several others; for it lay much upon my heart. Accordingly, I proposed that question to all who met at our late Conference, "What can be done in order to a close union with the Clergy who preach the truth?" We all agreed that nothing could be more desirable. I, in particular, have long desired it; not from any view to my own ease, or honour, or temporal convenience in any kind; but because I was deeply convinced it might

be a blessing to my own soul, and a means of increasing the general work of God.

But you say, "Really, before it can be effected, something must be done on your part." Tell me what, and I will do it without delay, however contrary it may be to my ease or natural inclination; provided only that it consists with my keeping a conscience void of offence toward God and toward man. It would not consist with this, to give up the flock under my care to any other Minister, till I and they were convinced they would have the same advantages for holiness under him which they now enjoy. But "paying us visits can serve no other purpose than to bring us under needless difficulties." I will speak very freely on this head. Can our conversing together serve no other purpose? You seem, then, not to have the least conception of your own wanting any such thing. But whether you do or not, I feel I do. I am not *in memet totus teres atque rotundus*.\* I want more light, more strength, for my personal walking with God; and I know not but He may give it me through you. And whether you do or no, I want more light and strength for guiding the flock committed to my charge. May not the Lord send this also by whom he will send? and by you, as probably as by any other? It is not improbable that he may by you give me clearer light, either as to doctrine or discipline. And even hereby, how much comfort and profit might redound to thousands of those for whom Christ hath died! which, I apprehend, would abundantly compensate any difficulties that might arise from such conversation.

But what difficulties are those? All that are the necessary consequence of sharing our reproach. And what reproach is it which we bear? Is it the reproach of Christ, or not? It arose first while my brother and I were at Oxford, from our endeavouring to be real Christians. It was increased abundantly when we began to preach repentance and remission of sins, and insisted that we are justified by faith. For this cause were we excluded from preaching in the churches. (I say, for this: As yet there was no field-preaching.) And this exclusion occasioned our preaching

\* This quotation from Horace is thus freely rendered by Francis:—

"Firm in himself, who on himself relies;

Polish'd and round who runs his proper course."—EDIT.

elsewhere, with the other irregularities that followed. Therefore, all the reproach consequent thereon is no other than the reproach of Christ.

And what are we worse for this? It is not pleasing to flesh and blood; but is it any hinderance to the work of God? Did He work more by us when we were honourable men? By no means. God never used us to any purpose till we were a proverb of reproach. Nor have we now a jot more of dishonour, of evil report, than we know is necessary both for us and for the people, to balance that honour and good report which otherwise could not be borne.

You need not, therefore, be so much afraid of, or so careful to avoid, this. It is a precious balm: It will not break your head, neither lessen your usefulness. And, indeed, you cannot avoid it any otherwise than by departing from the work. You do not avoid it by standing aloof from us; which you call Christian, I worldly, prudence.

I speak as a fool: Bear with me. I am clearly satisfied that you have far more faith, more love, and more of the mind which was in Christ, than I have. But have you more gifts for the work of God, or more fruit of your labour? Has God owned you more? I would He had a thousand-fold! I pray God that He may. Have you at present more experience of the wisdom of the world and the devices of Satan, or of the manner and method wherein it pleases God to counterwork them in this period of His providence? Are you sure God would add nothing to you by me, beside what He might add to me by you? Perhaps when the time has slipped out of your hands, when I am no more seen, you may wish you had not rejected the assistance of even

Your affectionate brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

## FOURTH LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. WALKER.

---

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

*October, 1758.*

I RETURN you many thanks for the welcome letter from Mr. Adams, as well as for your own. I have answered his, (which is written in a truly Christian spirit,) and now proceed to consider yours. After having observed that two of our Preachers are gone from us, and none of these remaining (to my knowledge) have at present any desire or design of separating from the Church, yet I observe,

1. Those Ministers who truly feared God near a hundred years ago, had undoubtedly much the same objections to the Liturgy which some (who never read their Works) have now. And I myself so far allow the force of several of those objections, that I should not dare to declare my assent and consent to that book in the terms prescribed. Indeed, they are so strong, that I think they cannot safely be used with regard to any book but the Bible. Neither dare I confine myself wholly to forms of prayer, not even in the church. I use, indeed, all the forms; but I frequently add extemporary prayer, either before or after sermon.

2. In behalf of many of the Canons, I can say little; of the Spiritual Courts, nothing at all. I dare not, therefore, allow the authority of the former, or the jurisdiction of the latter. But I am not yet required to do it. So that difficulty does not lie in my way yet.

3. "Whether it be lawful to attend the ministrations of one whom I know God has not sent to minister, seeing he expressly disclaims that call of God which is, at least, as necessary as the call of man," is really a question which (as I said before) I cannot answer to my own satisfaction. Neither can I tell,

4. How far that command of our Lord, "Beware of false prophets," obliges me to refrain from hearing such as put

darkness for light, and light for darkness. I am still in doubt whether quietly attending them while they do this, be not, in effect, the bidding them God speed, the strengthening their hands in 'evil, and encouraging others to hear them till they fall into hell together.

I am still desirous of knowing in what particular manner you think the present work of God could be carried on, without the assistance of lay Preachers. This I will fairly weigh, and give you my thoughts upon it.

Some little things occurred to me in reading over your Sermons, which I had a desire to communicate to you. In the great points I cannot observe any difference between us. We both contend for the inward kingdom, the mind that was in Christ Jesus, the image of God to be new stamped upon the heart. I am sometimes much discouraged at finding so little of this in myself. Assist, both with your advice and prayers,

Dear Sir,

Your very affectionate brother and servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## A LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND THOMAS ADAMS.

---

REVEREND SIR,

LONDON, *October 31, 1755.*

ONE good effect, at least, has arisen already, from the moving of the present question: It has been the occasion of my having some little acquaintance with Mr. Walker and you; which, I doubt not, would be enlarged, were it not for what you probably think to be Christian, I think to be worldly, prudence.

You have much obliged me by your clear and friendly answer; with the main of which I fully agree; for I am still in my former sentiment, "We will not go out; If



we are thrust out, well." And of the same judgment are, I believe, at least nineteen in twenty of our Preachers, and an equal majority of the people. We are fully convinced that to separate from an established Church is never lawful but when it is of absolute necessity; and we do not see any such necessity yet. Therefore, we have at present no thoughts of separation.

With regard to the steps we have hitherto taken, we have used all the caution which was possible. We have done nothing rashly, nothing without deep and long consideration, hearing and weighing all objections, and much prayer. Nor have we taken one deliberate step, of which we, as yet, see reason to repent. It is true, in some things we vary from the rules of our Church; but no further than we apprehend is our bounden duty. It is from a full conviction of this, that we preach abroad, use extemporary prayer, form those who appear to be awakened into societies, and permit laymen, whom we believe God has called, to preach.

I say, permit, because we ourselves have hitherto viewed it in no other light. This we are clearly satisfied we may do: That we may do more, we are not satisfied. It is not clear to us, that Presbyters, so circumstanced as we are, may appoint or ordain others; but it is, that we may direct, as well as suffer, them to do what we conceive they are moved to by the Holy Ghost. It is true, that, in ordinary cases, both an inward and an outward call are requisite. But we apprehend there is something far from ordinary in the present case. And upon the calmest view of things, we think, they who are only called of God, and not of man, have more right to preach, than they who are only called of man, and not of God. Now, that many of the Clergy, though called of man, are not called of God, to preach his Gospel, is undeniable, 1. Because they themselves utterly disclaim, nay, and ridicule, the inward call. 2. Because they do not know what the Gospel is; of consequence, they do not and cannot preach it.

Dear Sir, coolly and impartially consider this, and you will see on which side the difficulty lies. I do assure you, this at present is my chief embarrassment. That I have not gone too far yet, I know; but whether I have gone far enough, I am extremely doubtful. I see those running whom God hath not sent; destroying their own souls, and

those that hear them; perverting the right ways of the Lord, and blaspheming the truth as it is in Jesus. I see the blind leading the blind, and both falling into the ditch. Unless I warn, in all the ways I can, these perishing souls of their danger, am I clear of the blood of these men? Soul-damning Clergymen lay me under more difficulties than soul-saving laymen!

Those among ourselves who have been in doubt whether they ought so to beware of these false prophets, as not to hear them at all, are not men of a "forward, uncharitable zeal;" but of a calm, loving, temperate spirit. They are perfectly easy as to their own call to preach; but they are troubled for these poor, uncalled, blind guides; and they are sometimes afraid that the countenancing these is a dead weight even on those Clergymen who are really called of God. "Why else," say they, "does not God bless their labours? Why do they still stretch forth their hands in vain?" We know several regular Clergymen who do preach the genuine Gospel; but to no effect at all. There is one exception in England,—Mr. Walker, at Truro. We do not know one more who has converted one soul in his own parish. If it be said, "Has not Mr. Grimshaw and Mr. Baddiley?" No, not one, till they were irregular; till both the one and the other formed irregular societies, and took in laymen to assist them. Can there be a stronger proof that God is pleased with irregular, even more than with regular, preaching?

"But might not the Methodists in general serve the interests of Christ better, as witnesses and examples of a living faith, by returning to a closer union with the Church, than by separating still further?" We have no design at present of separating further, if we have yet separated at all. Neither dare we return to a closer union, if that means either prohibiting lay Preachers, or ceasing to watch over each other in love, and regularly meeting for that purpose.

If there be any further advices, whether with regard to doctrines or practice, which you judge might be of service to us, they would be thankfully received and considered by,

Rev. and dear Sir,

Your obliged and affectionate brother and servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

## A LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. CLARKE.

---

REV. SIR,

CASTLEBAR, *July 3, 1756.*

I AM obliged to you for the openness and candour with which you write, and will endeavour to follow the pattern which you have set me. I sent that sermon with no particular view, but as a testimony of love to a fellow-labourer in the Gospel.

From the text of that sermon, I do not infer that Christians are not to inquire into each other's opinions. Indeed, from that text I do not infer anything. I use it to illustrate, not to prove. I am very sensible, "Jehu had more regard to state policy than to religion;" (page 5;) and have no objection at all to the very fair explication which you have given of his words. Accordingly, I say, (page 13,) "What is implied in the question? I do not mean, what did Jehu imply therein, but what should a follower of Christ understand thereby, when he proposes it to any of his brethren?"

Of these only I speak. My general proposition, you may please to remember, is this: "All the children of God may unite in love, notwithstanding difference in opinions or modes of worship."

From this persuasion, whenever I meet with any whom I have reason to believe children of God, I do not ask of him with whom I would unite in love, (never at the entrance upon our conversation, seldom till we are a little acquainted,) "Do you agree with my opinions and mode of worship? particularly with regard to church government, baptism, and the Lord's supper?" I "let all these stand by," till we begin to know, and have confirmed our love to, each other. Then may come "a more convenient season" for entering into controversy. My only question at present is, "Is thy heart right?" (Page 13.)

At present, I say, keep your own opinion; I mine. I

do not desire you to dispute these points. Whether we shall dispute them hereafter, is another question: Perhaps we may, perhaps we may not. This will depend on a great variety of circumstances; particularly on a probability of success; for I am determined never to dispute at all, if I have no hope of convincing my opponent.

As to my own judgment, I still believe "the Episcopal form of church government to be scriptural and apostolical." I mean, well agreeing with the practice and writings of the Apostles. But that it is prescribed in Scripture, I do not believe. This opinion, which I once zealously espoused, I have been heartily ashamed of ever since I read Bishop Stillingfleet's "Irenicon." I think he has unanswerably proved, that "neither Christ nor his Apostles prescribe any particular form of church government; and that the plea of divine right for diocesan Episcopacy was never heard of in the primitive church."

But, were it otherwise, I should still call these "smaller points" than the "loving God and all mankind." (Page 18.) And could any man answer those questions, "Dost thou believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, God over all, blessed for ever?" (which indeed no Arian or semi-Arian, and much less Socinian, can do:) "Is God the centre of thy soul? the sum of all thy desires? Art thou more afraid of displeasing God, than either of death or hell?" (page 15;) which no wicked man can possibly do; none who is not a real child of God: If, I say, a man could answer these in the affirmative, I would then gladly give him my hand.

This is certainly a principle held by those who are in derision termed Methodists; and to whom a Popish Priest in Dublin gave the still more unmeaning title of Swaddlers. They all desire to be of a catholic spirit; meaning thereby, not "an indifference to all opinions;" not "indifference as to the manner of public worship:" This they know to be quite another thing. "Love, they judge, gives a title to this character. Catholic love is a catholic spirit." (Page 25.)

As to heresy and schism, I cannot find one text in the Bible where they are taken in the modern sense. I remember no one scripture wherein heresy signifies "error in opinion," whether fundamental or not; nor any wherein schism signifies a "separation from the Church," whether

with cause or without. I wish, Sir, you would re-consider this point, and review the scriptures wherein those terms occur.

Yet I would take some pains to recover any one from error, or to reconcile him to our Church: I mean, to the Church of England; from which I do not separate yet, and probably never shall. The little church, in the vulgar sense of the word, which I occasionally mentioned at Holy-Mount, is that wherein I read prayers, and preach, and administer the sacrament, every Sunday when I am in London. But I would take much more pains to recover any one from sin. One who lives and dies in error, or in dissent from our Church, may yet be saved; but one who lives and dies in sin must perish. O Sir, let us bend our main force against this! against all sin both in ourselves and them that hear us! I would to God we could all agree both in opinions and outward worship. But if this cannot be, may we not agree in holiness? May we not all agree in being holy, as He that hath called us is holy, both in heart, and in all manner of conversation? This is the great desire of,

Rev. Sir,

Your very humble servant,

JOHN WESLEY

## SECOND LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. CLARKE.

REV. SIR,

LONDON, *September 10, 1756.*

YESTERDAY I received your favour of July 9. As you therein speak freely and openly, I will endeavour to do the same; at which I am persuaded you will not be displeased.

1. Of the words imputed to Mr. Langston, I said nothing, because he denied the charge: And I had not an opportunity of hearing the accused and the accuser face to face.

2. That there are enthusiasts among the Methodists, I doubt not; and among every other people under heaven: But that they are "made such either by our doctrine or discipline," still remains to be proved. If they are such in spite of our doctrine and discipline, their madness will not be laid to our charge.

I know nothing of that anonymous pamphlet on inspiration. How does it appear to be wrote by a disciple of mine? Be it good, bad, or indifferent, I am not concerned or anyway accountable for it.

3. I believe several who are not Episcopally ordained are called of God to preach the Gospel. Yet I have no objection to the Twenty-third Article, though I judge there are exempt cases.

That the seven Deacons were outwardly ordained, even to that low office, cannot be denied. But when Paul and Barnabas were separated for the work to which they were called, this was not ordaining them. St. Paul was ordained long before, and that not of man, nor by man. It was only inducting him to the province for which our Lord had appointed him from the beginning. For this end the Prophets and Teachers fasted, prayed, and "laid their hands upon them;" a rite which was used, not in ordination only, but in blessing, and on many other occasions.

4. Concerning diocesan Episcopacy, there are several questions I should be glad to have answered: (1.) Where is it prescribed in Scripture? (2.) How does it appear that the Apostles "settled it in all the churches they planted?" (3.) How does it appear that they so settled it in any, as to make it of perpetual obligation? It is allowed, "Christ and his Apostles did put the churches under some form of government or other." But, (1.) Did they put all churches under the same precise form? If they did, (2.) Can we prove this to have been the very same which now remains in the Church of England?

5. How Favorinus and many more may define both heresy and schism, I am not concerned to know. I well know, heresy is vulgarly defined, "a false opinion, touching some necessary article of faith;" and schism, "a causeless separation from a true church." But I keep to my Bible, as our Church in her Sixth Article teaches me to do. Therefore, I cannot take schism for a separation from a church, true or

false ; because I cannot find it is ever so taken in Scripture. The first time I read the term there, is 1 Cor. i.: I meet with it again, chap. xi. 18. But it is plain, by schisms in both places is meant, not any separation from the church, but uncharitable divisions in it. For the Corinthians continued to be one church ; and, notwithstanding all their strife and contention, there was no separation of any one party from the rest, with regard to external communion. It is in the same sense the word is used chap. xii. 25. And these are the only places in the New Testament where it occurs. Therefore, the indulging any unkind temper toward our fellow-Christians is the true scriptural schism.

Indeed, both heresies (which are also works of the flesh, and consequently damnable, if not repented of) and schisms are here mentioned by the Apostle, in very near the same sense ; unless by schisms he meant those inward animosities which occasioned heresies, that is, outward divisions and parties. So that while one said, "I am of Paul ; another, I am of Apollos ;" this implied both schism and heresy. So wonderfully have later ages distorted the words heresy and schism from their scriptural meaning ! Heresy is not in all the Bible taken for "an error in fundamentals," or in anything else ; nor schism for any separation made from the outward communion of others. Therefore, both heresy and schism, in the modern sense of the words, are sins that the Scripture knows nothing of.

6. But though I aver this, am I "quite indifferent as to any man's opinion in religion ?" Far, very far from it ; as I have declared again and again in the very sermon under consideration, in the "Character of a Methodist," in the "Plain Account," and twenty tracts besides. Neither do I "conceal my sentiments : " Few men less. I have written severally, and printed, against Deists, Papists, Mystics, Quakers, Anabaptists, Presbyterians, Calvinists, and Antinomians. An odd way of ingratiating myself with them, to strike at the apple of their eye ! Nevertheless, in all things indifferent, (but not at the expense of truth,) I rejoice to "please all men for their good to edification ;" if haply I may "gain more proselytes" to genuine, scriptural Christianity ; if I may prevail upon the more to love God and their neighbour, and to walk as Christ walked.

So far as I find them obstructive of this, I oppose wrong

opinions with my might; though even then, rather by guarding those who are yet free, than by disputing with those who are deeply infected. I need not dispute with many of these, to know there is no probability of convincing them. A thousand times have I found my father's words true: "You may have peace with the Dissenters, if you do not so humour them as to dispute with them. But if you do, they will outface and outlung you; and at the end you will be where you were at the beginning."

I have now, Sir, humoured you, so as to dispute with you a little. But with what probability of success? Suppose you have a single eye in this debate; suppose you aim, not at victory, but at truth only; yet what man of threescore (unless perchance one in an age) was ever convinced of anything? Is not an old man's motto, *Non persuadebis etiamsi persuaseris*?\* When we are past middle age, does not a kind of stiffness and inflexibility steal upon the mind as well as the body? And how does this bar the gate against all conviction! even before the eye of the soul too grows dim, and so less and less capable of discerning things which we are not already well acquainted with!

7. Yet on one point I must add a few words, because it is of the last importance: I said, "Orthodoxy, or right opinions, is never more than a slender part of religion; sometimes no part of it at all." And this I explained thus: "In a child of God, it is but a slender part of religion: It is no part at all in a child of the devil." The religion of a child of God is righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. Now, if orthodoxy be any part of this, (which itself might admit of a question,) it is a very slender part; though it is a considerable help both of love, peace, and joy. Religion is, in other words, the love of God and man, producing all holiness of conversation. Now, are right opinions any more (if they are so much) than a very slender part of this? Once more: Religion is the mind that was in Christ, and the walking as Christ walked. But how very slender a part of this are opinions, how right soever!

By a child of the devil, I mean, one who has no true religion at all; one who neither loves, nor fears, nor serves God. But it is certain, such a man may still be orthodox,

\* I will not be persuaded, even though you should convince me. — EDITOR.



may entertain right opinions; and yet, it is equally certain, these are no part of religion in him that has no religion at all.

Permit me, Sir, to speak exceeding plainly. Are you not an orthodox man? Perhaps there is none more so in the diocese. And yet possibly you may have no religion at all. If it be true that you frequently drink to excess, you may have orthodoxy, but you can have no religion. If, when you are in a passion, you call your brother, "Thou fool," you have no religion at all. If you even curse, and take the name of God in vain, you can have no other religion than orthodoxy; a religion of which the devil and his angels may have full as much as you.

O Sir, what an idle thing is it for you to dispute about lay Preachers! Is not a lay Preacher preferable to a drunken Preacher? to a cursing, swearing Preacher? "Unto the ungodly saith God, Why takest thou my covenant in thy mouth, whereas thou hatest to be reformed, and hast cast my words behind thee?" In tender compassion I speak this. May God apply it to your heart! Then you will not receive this as an affront, but as the highest instance of brotherly love from,

Rev. Sir,

Your truly affectionate servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

## A LETTER TO A FRIEND.

DEAR SIR,

*September 20, 1757.*

THE longer I am absent from London, and the more I attend the service of the Church in other places, the more I am convinced of the unspeakable advantage which the people called Methodists enjoy. I mean, even with regard to public worship, particularly on the Lord's day. The church where they assemble is not gay or splendid, which might be a hinderance on the one hand; nor sordid or dirty, which might give distaste on the other; but plain as well as clean. The persons who assemble there are not a

gay, giddy crowd, who come chiefly to see and be seen; nor a company of goodly, formal, outside Christians, whose religion lies in a dull round of duties; but a people most of whom do, and the rest earnestly seek to, worship God in spirit and in truth. Accordingly, they do not spend their time there in bowing and courtesying, or in staring about them; but in looking upward and looking inward, in hearkening to the voice of God, and pouring out their hearts before him.

It is also no small advantage that the person who reads Prayers (though not always the same, yet) is always one who may be supposed to speak from his heart, one whose life is no reproach to his profession; and one who performs that solemn part of divine service, not in a careless, hurrying, slovenly manner; but seriously and slowly, as becomes him who is transacting so high an affair between God and man.

Nor are their solemn addresses to God interrupted either by the formal drawl of a parish clerk, the screaming of boys, who bawl out what they neither feel nor understand, or the unseasonable and unmeaning impertinence of a voluntary on the organ. When it is seasonable to sing praise to God, they do it with the spirit, and with the understanding also; not in the miserable, scandalous doggerel of Hopkins and Sternhold, but in psalms and hymns which are both sense and poetry; such as would sooner provoke a critic to turn Christian, than a Christian to turn critic. What they sing is therefore a proper continuation of the spiritual and reasonable service; being selected for that end (not by a poor humdrum wretch who can scarce read what he drones out with such an air of importance, but) by one who knows what he is about, and how to connect the preceding with the following part of the service. Nor does he take just "two staves," but more or less, as may best raise the soul to God; especially when sung in well-composed and well-adapted tunes, not by a handful of wild, unawakened striplings, but by a whole serious congregation; and these, not lolling at ease, or in the indecent posture of sitting, drawling out one word after another, but all standing before God, and praising him lustily and with a good courage.

Nor is it a little advantage as to the next part of the

service, to hear a Preacher whom you know to live as he speaks, speaking the genuine Gospel of present salvation through faith, wrought in the heart by the Holy Ghost; declaring present, free, full justification, and enforcing every branch of inward and outward holiness. And this you hear done in the most clear, plain, simple, unaffected language; yet with an earnestness becoming the importance of the subject, and with the demonstration of the Spirit.

With regard to the last and most awful part of divine service, the celebration of the Lord's supper, although we cannot say that either the unworthiness of the Minister, or the unholiness of some of the communicants, deprives the rest of a blessing from God; yet do they greatly lessen the comfort of receiving. But these discouragements are removed from you: You have proof that he who administers fears God; and you have no reason to believe, that any of your fellow-communicants walk unworthy of their profession. Add to this, that the whole service is performed in a decent and solemn manner, is enlivened by hymns suitable to the occasion, and concluded with prayer that comes not out of feigned lips.

Surely then, of all the people in Great Britain, the Methodists would be the most inexcusable, should they let any opportunity slip of attending that worship, which has so many advantages, should they prefer any before it, or not continually improve by the advantages they enjoy! What can be pleaded for them, if they do not worship God in spirit and in truth; if they are still outward worshippers only, approaching God with their lips while their hearts are far from him? Yea, if, having known Him, they do not daily grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ!

---

## LETTER TO MR. N.

---

MY DEAR BROTHER,                      KINGSWOOD, *September 3, 1756.*

IN your letters of July, and August 27, you charge me, first, with self-inconsistency, in tolerating lay preaching, and not lay administering; and, secondly, with showing a spirit

of persecution, in denying my brethren the liberty of acting (as well as thinking) according to their own conscience.

As to the former charge, the fact alleged is true: I do tolerate unordained persons in preaching the Gospel; whereas I do not tolerate them in administering the sacraments. But it is not true, that I am self-inconsistent in so doing. I act on one and the same principle still. My principle (frequently declared) is this, "I submit to every ordinance of man, wherever I do not conceive there is an absolute necessity for acting contrary to it." Consistently with this, I do tolerate lay preaching, because I conceive there is an absolute necessity for it; inasmuch as were it not, thousands of souls would perish everlastingly. Yet I do not tolerate lay administering, because I do not conceive there is any such necessity for it; seeing it does not appear, that, if this is not at all, one soul will perish for want of it.

I am therefore so far from self-inconsistency in tolerating the former, and not the latter, that I really should be self-inconsistent were I to act otherwise: Were I to break, or allow others to break, an ordinance of man, where there is no necessity, I should contradict my own principle, as much as if I did not allow it to be broken where there is.

As to the latter charge, that "I deny my brethren the liberty of acting according to their own conscience, and therefore show a spirit of persecution;" I again allow the fact, but deny the consequence. I mean, I allow the fact thus far: Some of our Preachers, who are not ordained, think it quite right to administer the Lord's supper, and believe it would do much good. I think it quite wrong, and believe it would do much hurt. Hereupon I say, "I have no right over your conscience, nor you over mine: Therefore, both you and I must follow our own conscience. You believe, it is a duty to administer: Do so; and therein follow your own conscience. I verily believe it is a sin; which, consequently, I dare not tolerate; and herein I follow mine." Yet this is no persecution, were I to separate from our society (which I have not done yet) those who practise what I believe is contrary to the word, and destructive of the work, of God.

Last week I had a long letter from William Darney, who likewise wonders we should be of so persecuting a spirit as to deny him the liberty of thinking and speaking in our

societies according to his own conscience. How will you answer him, and excuse Ted and Charles Perronet from the charge of persecuting their brother? They then said, (as did all,) "Let him preach Calvinism elsewhere; (we have no right to hinder him;) but not among us, because we are persuaded it would do much hurt." Take the answer back: If it was good in one case, so was it in the other likewise.

If John Jones, my brother, or any other Preacher, has preached sharply on this head, I certainly am a stranger to it, and therefore not answerable for it. I persecute no man on this account, or any other; and yet I cannot consent, that any of our lay Preachers should either preach predestination, or administer the sacraments, to those who are under my care.

But is it immoral? It is immoral to think, speak, or act, contrary to the love which "thinketh no evil." Now of this, both Charles and you are palpably guilty, in thinking the body of the Methodists (either Preachers or people) are fallen from the simplicity and uprightness of the Gospel. Whatever seven or eight of the Preachers may be, who have warmly debated this point with you; whatever two or three hundred of the people may be, who have been hurt by the disputants on either side; the main body of the Methodists never were more simple or upright than at this day. Therefore your thinking so ill of both Preachers and people is a manifest breach of the law of love. And whoever is, or is not, fallen from the spirit of the Gospel, it is certain, you are, for one.

But after all this pother, what is this persecution, concerning which you make so loud an outcry? Why, some of our lay Preachers did what we thought was both ill in itself, and likely to do much harm among the people. Of this, complaint was made to me. And what did I do? Did I expel those Preachers out of our community? Not so. Did I forbid them to preach any more? Not so, neither. Did I degrade them from Itinerant to Local Preachers? Not so much as this. I told them, I thought the thing was wrong, and would do hurt, and therefore advised them to do it no more. Certainly this is a new species of persecution! I cannot but think you might as well call it murder.

"O, but you would have done more, if they had per-

sisted." That is, I would have persecuted. Whatever I would have done if things had been which were not, I have not done it yet. I have used no arbitrary, no coercive power; nay, no power at all in this matter, but that of love. I have given no man an ill word or an ill look on the account. I have not withdrawn my confidence or my conversation from any. I have dealt with every man, as, if the tables were turned, I should desire he would deal with me.

"But I would not dispute with you." Not for a time: Not till your spirits were a little evaporated. But you argue too fast, when you infer from hence, that I myself cannot confute your favourite notion. You are not sure of that. But come what will, you are resolved to try. Well then, move fair and softly. You and Charles Perronet aver, that you have a right to administer the Lord's supper; and that therefore you ought to administer it among the Methodists, or to separate from them. If the assertion were proved, I should deny the consequence. But first, I desire proof of the assertion.

Let him or you give the proof, only without any flourish or rhetorical amplifications, (which exceedingly abound in all C. P.'s letters to my brother on this subject,) and I will give you an answer, though we are not on even ground; for you have no business, and I have no leisure. And if you continue instant in prayer, particularly for a lowly and teachable spirit, I do not despair of your finding both that life and love which you have not lately enjoyed.

I am

Your affectionate brother,  
JOHN WESLEY.

I shall add a few remarks on C. P.'s letters, though the substance of them is contained in yours. "Some of the fundamentals of your constitution are wrong." Our fundamentals are laid down in the "Plain Account." Which of these is wrong, and yet "borne by you for eight years?"

"O inconsistency! O excuseless tyranny!" &c. Flourish. Set that down for nothing. "These very men who themselves break the laws of the State, deny us liberty of conscience." In plain terms, These very men who preach the Gospel contrary to law, do not approve of our administering the sacraments. They do not. They greatly dis-

approve of it; and that without any inconsistency at all: Because the case is not parallel. The one is absolutely necessary to the salvation of thousands; the other not.

“Your brother has to the last refused me liberty of conscience.” Under what penalty? This heavy charge amounts in reality to this: I still think you have no right to administer the Lord’s supper; in consequence of which, I advise you not to do it. Can I do less? Or have I done more?

“I wish I could say, that anything of wicked lewdness would have met with the same opposition!” Is not this pretty, brother Norton? Do you subscribe to this? I think you know us better. Do we not so much as advise our Preachers and people to abstain from wicked lewdness? “Can it be denied that known wantonness, that deceit and knavery, have been among us, and that little notice has been taken of it?” I totally deny it. Much notice has been taken, by me in particular, of what evil has been done by any Preacher. I have constantly examined all the parties; and have, in every instance, so far animadverted on the delinquent as justice joined with mercy required.

“My crime is, that I would worship Christ, as his word, his Spirit, and my own conscience teach me. Let God and man be witness that we part for this and nothing else.” Namely, because I am of a different judgment, and cannot approve of what I judge to be wrong. So says W. Darney, “My crime is, that I would preach Christ, as His word, His Spirit, and my own conscience teach me.” But he has far more ground for complaint than you: For we ourselves separated him from us; whereas you call God and man to witness, that you separate yourself for this and nothing else, that I cannot approve what I judge to be wrong.

But this is not all your crime: You have also drank into the spirit of James Wheatley; and you have adopted his very language: You are become, like him, an accuser of your brethren. O Charles, it was time you should separate from them; for your heart was gone from them before!

“Whatever motives of another kind might be blended with those that really belonged to conscience, in your rejecting what I laid before you,” (not consenting that I should administer,) “God knows.” I know of none. I have no other motive of acting, than the glory of God and

the good of souls. Here again you are become not only an accuser, but a false accuser, and an unjust judge, of your brother.

“You grant more to others. To my certain knowledge, both of you have been told for more than two years, that James Morris administered.” You may as well say, “To my certain knowledge, black is white.” I never was told it to this day, unless by C. Perronet. But whether he does or no, it is nothing to me. He never was in close connexion with us: He is now in no connexion at all. We have totally renounced him. So here is another instance of accusing, yea, falsely accusing, your brethren.

“A man may be circumcised, count his beads, or adore a cross, and still be a member of your society.” That is, may be a Papist or a Jew. I know no such instance in England or Ireland. We have many members in Ireland, that were Papists; but not one that continues so.

“Other reasons than those that could possibly relate to conscience have borne too much share in the late affair.” I say as before, I am not conscious of it. And who art thou that judgest another’s servant?

“You have allowed, we are called to this by the Holy Ghost, and that God was with us in what we did.” I allow! No more than I allow you to be archangels. I allow neither the one nor the other. I believe you felt joy, or power, so called; but I do not know that it was from God; and I said, “Supposing you were called of God to this,” (which is exceeding far from granting it,) “still you ought to wave that privilege out of tenderness to your brethren.” I do not grant, either that God calls you to do this, or that he ever blessed you in it.

That Methodism, (so called,) that is, vital religion, loving faith, in the hearts of those who are vulgarly termed Methodists, should seem to you, sitting snug at London or Bristol, to be “very much in its decline,” is no wonder. But I, who see things in every place with my own eyes, know it is very much in its increase. Many are daily added to them that believe; many more are continually awakened; so that the societies from east to west, from north to south, in both kingdoms, increase in grace, as well as number.

“I wish the argument” (which is no argument at all, as being grounded on a palpable mistake) “be not too home to



bear a dispute among honest men." Very well! Another clear proof of the love that thinketh no evil.

"If you had consented." This is the very point. I could not consent (which implies some degree of approbation) to what I judged to be totally wrong. Yet neither did I persecute. I inflicted no penalty of any kind on those whom I judged to have done wrong; because I believed they acted from conscience, though erroneous: I only mildly advised them to desist.

"I never will be again united with any who will not let others choose their own religion." Then you will never unite with any but knaves; for no honest men who preside over any community will let the members of it do what they judge to be wrong, and hurtful to that community, without endeavouring to prevent it, at least, by mild, loving, friendly advice.

"I go away, not of choice, but of necessity." So you must think, till God opens your eyes. "Your kindness at our first acquaintance, the Providence that brought us together, and the keeping up that acquaintance after so many snares of the enemy to destroy it, make it sacred, as well as dear, to me." And yet for such a reason as this,—because I advise you to abstain from doing what I think you have no right to do; what I judge to be both evil in itself, and productive of ill consequences; for this reason you burst all the bonds asunder, and cast away the cords from you.

The Lord God enlighten the eyes of your understanding, and soften and enlarge your heart!

JOHN WESLEY.

# REASONS

AGAINST

## A SEPARATION FROM THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

WRITTEN IN THE YEAR 1758.

---

1. WHETHER it be lawful or no, (which itself may be disputed, being not so clear a point as some may imagine,) it is by no means expedient, for us to separate from the established Church :—

(1.) Because it would be a contradiction to the solemn and repeated declarations which we have made in all manner of ways, in preaching, in print, and in private conversation.

(2.) Because (on this as well as on many other accounts) it would give huge occasion of offence to those who seek and desire occasion, to all the enemies of God and his truth.

(3.) Because it would exceedingly prejudice against us many who fear, yea, who love, God, and thereby hinder their receiving so much, perhaps any farther, benefit from our preaching.

(4.) Because it would hinder multitudes of those who neither love nor fear God from hearing us at all.

(5.) Because it would occasion many hundreds, if not some thousands, of those who are now united with us, to separate from us; yea, and some of those who have a deep work of grace in their souls.

(6.) Because it would be throwing balls of wild-fire among them that are now quiet in the land. We are now sweetly united together in love. We mostly think and speak the same thing. But this would occasion inconceivable strife and contention, between those who left, and those who remained in, the Church; as well as between those who left us, and those who remained with us; nay, and between those very persons who remained, as they were variously inclined one way or the other.

(7.) Because, whereas controversy is now asleep, and we in great measure live peaceably with all men, so that we are strangely at leisure to spend our whole time and strength in

enforcing plain, practical, vital religion, (O what would many of our forefathers have given, to have enjoyed so blessed a calm!) this would utterly banish peace from among us, and that without hope of its return. It would engage me, for one, in a thousand controversies, both in public and private; (for I should be in conscience obliged to give the reasons of my conduct, and to defend those reasons against all opposers;) and so take me off from those more useful labours which might otherwise employ the short remainder of my life.

(8.) Because to form the plan of a new church would require infinite time and care, (which might be far more profitably bestowed,) with much more wisdom and greater depth and extensiveness of thought than any of us are masters of.

(9.) Because from some having barely entertained a distant thought of this, evil fruits have already followed; such as prejudice against the Clergy in general, and aptness to believe ill of them; contempt (not without a degree of bitterness) of Clergymen, as such; and a sharpness of language toward the whole order, utterly unbecoming either gentlemen or Christians.

(10.) Because the experiment has been so frequently tried already, and the success never answered the expectation. God has since the Reformation raised up from time to time many witnesses of pure religion. If these lived and died (like John Arndt, Robert Bolton, and many others) in the churches to which they belonged, notwithstanding the wickedness which overflowed both the Teachers and people therein, they spread the leaven of true religion far and wide, and were more and more useful, till they went to paradise. But if, upon any provocation or consideration whatever, they separated, and founded distinct parties, their influence was more and more confined; they grew less and less useful to others, and generally lost the spirit of religion themselves in the spirit of controversy.

(11.) Because we have melancholy instances of this, even now before our eyes. Many have in our memory left the Church, and formed themselves into distinct bodies. And certainly some of them from a real persuasion that they should do God more service. But have any separated themselves and prospered? Have they been either more holy, or more useful, than they were before?

(12.) Because by such a separation we should not only

throw away the peculiar glorying which God has given us, that we do and will suffer all things for our brethren's sake, though the more we love them, the less we be loved; but should act in direct contradiction to that very end for which we believe God hath raised us up. The chief design of His providence in sending us out is, undoubtedly, to quicken our brethren. And the first message of all our Preachers is, to the lost sheep of the Church of England. Now, would it not be a flat contradiction to this design, to separate from the Church? These things being considered, we cannot apprehend (whether it be lawful in itself or no) that it is lawful for us; were it only on this ground, that it is by no means expedient.

2. It has indeed been objected, that till we do separate, we cannot be a compact, united body.

It is true, we cannot till then be "a compact, united body," if you mean by that expression, a body distinct from all others. And we have no desire so to be.

It has been objected, secondly, "It is mere cowardice and fear of persecution which makes you desire to remain united with them."

This cannot be proved. Let every one examine his own heart, and not judge his brother.

It is not probable. We never yet, for any persecution, when we were in the midst of it, either turned back from the work, or even slackened our pace.

But this is certain; that although persecution many times proves an unspeakable blessing to them that suffer it, yet we ought not wilfully to bring it upon ourselves. Nay, we ought to do whatever can lawfully be done, in order to prevent it. We ought to avoid it so far as we lawfully can; when persecuted in one city, to flee into another. If God should suffer a general persecution, who would be able to abide it we know not. Perhaps those who talk loudest might flee first. Remember the case of Dr. Pendleton.

3. Upon the whole, one cannot but observe how desirable it is, that all of us who are engaged in the same work should think and speak the same thing, be united in one judgment, and use one and the same language.

Do we not all now see ourselves, the Methodists (so called) in general, the Church and the Clergy, in a clear light?

We look upon ourselves, not as the authors or ringleaders

of a particular sect or party; (it is the farthest thing from our thoughts;) but as messengers of God to those who are Christians in name, but Heathens in heart and in life, to call them back to that from which they are fallen, to real genuine Christianity. We are therefore debtors to all these, of whatever opinion or denomination; and are consequently to do all that in us lies, to please all for their good, to edification.

We look upon the Methodists (so called) in general, not as any particular party; (this would exceedingly obstruct the grand design, for which we conceive God has raised them up;) but as living witnesses, in and to every party, of that Christianity which we preach; which is hereby demonstrated to be a real thing, and visibly held out to all the world.

We look upon England as that part of the world, and the Church as that part of England, to which all we who are born and have been brought up therein, owe our first and chief regard. We feel in ourselves a strong *σοφγη*, a kind of natural affection for our country, which we apprehend Christianity was never designed either to root out or to impair. We have a more peculiar concern for our brethren, for that part of our countrymen to whom we have been joined from our youth up, by ties of a religious as well as a civil nature. True it is, that they are, in general, "without God in the world:" So much the more do our bowels yearn over them. They do lie "in darkness and the shadow of death:" The more tender is our compassion for them. And when we have the fullest conviction of that complicated wickedness which covers them as a flood, then do we feel the most (and we desire to feel yet more) of that inexpressible emotion with which our blessed Lord beheld Jerusalem, and wept and lamented over it. Then are we the most willing "to spend and to be spent" for them; yea, to "lay down our lives for our brethren."

We look upon the Clergy, not only as a part of these our brethren, but as that part whom God by His adorable providence has called to be watchmen over the rest, for whom therefore they are to give a strict account. If these then neglect their important charge, if they do not watch over them with all their power, they will be of all most miserable, and so are entitled to our deepest compassion. So that to feel, and much more to express, either contempt or bitterness

towards them, betrays an utter ignorance of ourselves and of the spirit which we especially should be of.

Because this is a point of uncommon concern, let us consider it a little farther.

(1.) The Clergy, wherever we are, are either friends to the truth, or neuters, or enemies to it.

If they are friends to it, certainly we should do everything, and omit everything, we can with a safe conscience, in order to continue, and, if it be possible, increase, their good-will to it.

If they neither further nor hinder it, we should do all that in us lies, both for their sakes and for the sake of their several flocks, to give their neutrality the right turn, that it may change into love rather than hatred.

If they are enemies, still we should not despair of lessening, if not removing, their prejudice. We should try every means again and again; we should employ all our care, labour, prudence, joined with fervent prayer, to overcome evil with good, to melt their hardness into love.

It is true, that when any of these openly wrest the Scriptures, and deny the grand truths of the Gospel, we cannot but declare and defend, at convenient opportunities, the important truths which they deny. But in this case especially we have need of all gentleness and meekness of wisdom. Contempt, sharpness, bitterness, can do no good. "The wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God." Harsh methods have been tried again and again (by two or three unsettled railers) at Wednesbury, St. Ives, Cork, Canterbury. And how did they succeed? They always occasioned numberless evils; often wholly stopped the course of the Gospel. Therefore, were it only on a prudential account, were conscience unconcerned therein, it should be a sacred rule to all our Preachers,— "No contempt, no bitterness, to the Clergy."

(2.) Might it not be another (at least, prudential) rule for every Methodist Preacher, not to frequent any Dissenting meeting? (Though we blame none who have been always accustomed to it.) But if we do this, certainly our people will. Now, this is actually separating from the Church. If, therefore, it is (at least) not expedient to separate, neither is this expedient. Indeed, we may attend our assemblies, and the church too; because they are at different hours. But

we cannot attend both the meeting and the church, because they are at the same hours.

If it be said, "But at the church we are fed with chaff, whereas at the meeting we have wholesome food;" we answer, (i.) The prayers of the Church are not chaff; they are substantial food for any who are alive to God. (ii.) The Lord's supper is not chaff, but pure and wholesome for all who receive it with upright hearts. Yea, (iii.) In almost all the sermons we hear there, we hear many great and important truths: And whoever has a spiritual discernment, may easily separate the chaff from the wheat therein. (iv.) How little is the case mended at the meeting! Either the Teachers are "new light" men, denying the Lord that bought them, and overturning His Gospel from the very foundations; or they are Predestinarians, and so preach predestination and final perseverance, more or less. Now, whatever this may be to them who were educated therein, yet to those of our brethren who have lately embraced it, repeated experience shows it is not wholesome food; rather, to them it has the effect of deadly poison. In a short time it destroys all their zeal for God. They grow fond of opinions, and strife of words; they despise self-denial and the daily cross; and, to complete all, wholly separate from their brethren.

(3.) Nor is it expedient for any Methodist Preacher to imitate the Dissenters in their manner of praying; either in his tone,—all particular tones both in prayer and preaching should be avoided with the utmost care; nor in his language,—all his words should be plain and simple, such as the lowest of his hearers both use and understand; or in the length of his prayer, which should not usually exceed four or five minutes, either before or after sermon. One might add, neither should we sing like them, in a slow, drawling manner: We sing swift, both because it saves time, and because it tends to awake and enliven the soul.

(4.) If we continue in the Church, not by chance, or for want of thought, but upon solid and well-weighed reasons, then we should never speak contemptuously of the Church, or anything pertaining to it. In some sense it is the mother of us all, who have been brought up therein. We ought never to make her blemishes matter of diversion, but rather of solemn sorrow before God. We ought never to talk

ludicrously of them ; no, not at all, without clear necessity. Rather, we should conceal them, as far as ever we can, without bringing guilt upon our own conscience. And we should all use every rational and scriptural means, to bring others to the same temper and behaviour. I say, "all;" for if some of us are thus minded, and others of an opposite spirit and behaviour, this will breed a real schism among ourselves. It will of course divide us into two parties ; each of which will be liable to perpetual jealousies, suspicions, and animosities against the other. Therefore, on this account likewise, it is expedient, in the highest degree, that we should be tender of the Church to which we belong.

(5.) In order to secure this end, to cut off all jealousy and suspicion from our friends, and hope from our enemies, of our having any design to separate from the Church, it would be well for every Methodist Preacher, who has no scruple concerning it, to attend the service of the Church as often as conveniently he can. And the more we attend it, the more we love it, as constant experience shows. On the contrary, the longer we abstain from it, the less desire we have to attend it at all.

(6.) Lastly. Whereas we are surrounded on every side by those who are equally enemies to us and to the Church of England ; and whereas these are long practised in this war, and skilled in all the objections against it ; while our brethren, on the other hand, are quite strangers to them all, and so, on a sudden, know not how to answer them ; it is highly expedient for every Preacher to be provided with sound answers to those objections, and then to instruct the societies where he labours, how to defend themselves against those assaults. It would be therefore well for you carefully to read over the "Preservative against unsettled Notions in Religion," together with "Serious Thoughts concerning Perseverance," and "Predestination calmly considered." And when you are masters of them yourselves, it will be easy for you to recommend and explain them to our societies ; that they may "no more be tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine;" but, being settled in one mind and one judgment by solid scriptural and rational arguments, "may grow up in all things into Him who is our Head, even Jesus Christ."



I THINK myself bound in duty to add my testimony to my brother's. His twelve reasons against our ever separating from the Church of England are mine also. I subscribe to them with all my heart. Only, with regard to the first, I am quite clear that it is neither expedient nor lawful for me to separate; and I never had the least inclination or temptation so to do. My affection for the Church is as strong as ever; and I clearly see my calling; which is, to live and to die in her communion. This, therefore, I am determined to do, the Lord being my Helper.

I have subjoined the Hymns for the lay Preachers; \* still farther to secure this end, to cut off all jealousy and suspicion from our friends, or hope from our enemies, of our having any design of ever separating from the Church. I have no secret reserve, or distant thought of it. I never had. Would to God all the Methodist Preachers were, in this respect, like-minded with

CHARLES WESLEY.

---

## A LETTER TO A FRIEND.

---

DEAR SIR,

*April 10, 1761.*

I. IN order to answer the question more clearly, which Mr. — has proposed to you, it may be well to look a little backward. Some years since, two or three Clergymen of the Church of England, who were above measure zealous for all her rules and orders, were convinced that religion is not an external thing, but "righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost;" and that this righteousness, and peace, and joy, are given only to those who are justified by faith. As soon as they were convinced of these great truths, they preached them; and multitudes flocked to hear. For these

\* The Hymns here referred to are seven in number, and most of them of considerable length. They were appended to Mr. Wesley's "Reasons" when published in a separate pamphlet; and are strongly descriptive of the fallen state of the Established Church, with regard to doctrine, discipline, and morals, and of that spirit of zeal, devotion, and self-denial by which the early Methodist Preachers were distinguished.—EDIT.

reasons, and no others, real or pretended, (for as yet they were strictly regular,) because they preached such doctrine, and because such multitudes followed them, they were forbid to preach in the churches. Not daring to be silent, they preached elsewhere, in a school, by a river-side, or upon a mountain; and more and more sinners forsook their sins, and were filled with peace and joy in believing.

2. But, at the same time, huge offence was taken at their "gathering congregations" in so irregular a manner: And it was asked,

(1.) "Do you judge that the Church, with the authority of the State, has power to enact laws for her own government?" I answer, If a dispensation of the Gospel is committed to me, no Church has power to enjoin me silence. Neither has the State; though it may abuse its power, and enact laws whereby I suffer for preaching the Gospel.

(2.) "Do you judge it your duty to submit to the laws of the Church and State, as far as they are consistent with a good conscience?"

I do: But "woe is me, if I preach not the Gospel." This is not consistent with a good conscience.

(3.) "Is it a law of the Church and State, that none of her Ministers shall gather congregations, but by the appointment of the Bishop? If any do, does not she forbid her people to attend them? Are they not subversive of the good order of the Church? Do you judge there is anything sinful in such a law?"

I answer, (i.) If there is a law, that a Minister of Christ who is not suffered to preach the Gospel in the church should not preach it elsewhere, I do judge that law to be absolutely sinful. (ii.) If that law forbids Christian people to hear the Gospel of Christ out of their parish church, when they cannot hear it therein, I judge it would be sinful for them to obey it. (iii.) This preaching is not subversive of any good order whatever. It is only subversive of that vile abuse of the good order of our Church, whereby men who neither preach nor live the Gospel are suffered publicly to overturn it from the foundation; and, in the room of it, to palm upon their congregations a wretched mixture of dead form and maimed morality.

(4.) "If these premises be allowed"—They cannot be allowed. So from nothing, nothing follows.

3. It was objected farther,

(1.) "In every nation there must be some settled order of government, ecclesiastical and civil."

There must: But put civil out of the question. It only tends to puzzle the cause.

(2.) "The Scriptures likewise enjoin this." They do, that all things in the church be done in order.

(3.) "There is an ecclesiastical order established in England, and it is a lawful one."

I believe it is, in general, not only lawful, but highly commendable.

(4.) "But Mr. ——— tells you, 'You are born under this Establishment. Your ancestors supported it, and were ennobled on that account.' These points, I think, are not very material; but that which follows is. 'You have, by deliberate and repeated acts of your own, engaged yourself to defend it. Your very rank and station constitute you a formal and eminent guardian of it.'"

A guardian of what? What is it that you have "deliberately engaged yourself to defend?" The constitution of the Church of England. And is not her doctrine a main part of this constitution? a far more essential part thereof than any rule of external order? Of this, then, you are a formal guardian; and you have deliberately engaged yourself to defend it. But have you deliberately engaged to defend her orders to the destruction of her doctrine? Are you a guardian of this external circumstance, when it tends to destroy the substance of her constitution? And if you are engaged, at all events, to defend her order, are you also to defend the abuse of it? Surely no. Your rank, your station, your honour, your conscience, all engage you to oppose this.

(5.) "But how can it consist with the duty arising from all these, to give encouragement, countenance, and support, to principles and practices that are a direct renunciation of the established constitution; and that, in their genuine issue," (or natural tendency,) "are totally subversive of it?"

Are the principles of those Clergymen a direct renunciation of the established constitution? Are their practices so? Are either the one or the other "totally subversive of it?" Not so: Their fundamental principles are the very

principles of the Established Church. So is their practice too; save in a very few points, wherein they are constrained to deviate. Therefore it is no ways inconsistent with your duty to encourage, countenance, and support them; especially seeing they have no alternative. They must either be thus far irregular, or destroy their own souls, and let thousands of their brethren perish for lack of knowledge.

(6.) Nay, but their "principles and practices are of this character. For, (i.) They gather congregations, and exercise their ministerial office therein, in every part of this kingdom, directly contrary to the restraint laid on them at their ordination, and to the design of that parochial distribution of duty settled throughout this nation. (ii.) They maintain it lawful for men to preach who are not Episcopally ordained, and thereby contradict the Twenty-third Article. (iii.) They disclaim all right in the Bishops to control them in any of these matters, and say that, rather than be so controlled, they would renounce all communion with this Church. (iv.) These principles they industriously propagate among their followers."

I answer, First, They do gather congregations everywhere, and exercise their ministerial office therein. But this is not contrary to any restraint which was laid upon them at their ordination; for they were not ordained to serve any particular parish. And it is remarkable that Lincoln College was founded *ad propagandam Christianam fidem, et extirpandas hæreses*.\* But were it otherwise, suppose a parish Minister to be either ignorant or negligent of his duty, and one of his flock adjures me, for Christ's sake, to tell him what he must do to be saved: Was it ever the design of our Church, that I should refuse to do it, because he is not of my parish? "Secondly. They maintain it lawful for men to preach who are not Episcopally ordained." In some circumstances they do; particularly where thousands are rushing into destruction, and those who are ordained, and appointed to watch over them, neither care for nor know how to help them. "But hereby they contradict the Twenty-third Article, to which they have subscribed." They subscribed it in the simplicity of their hearts, when they firmly believed none but Episcopal ordination valid.

\* For propagating the Christ'an faith, and extirpating heresies.—EDIT.

But Bishop Stillingfleet has since fully convinced them, this was an entire mistake. "Thirdly. They disclaim all right in the Bishops to control them in any of these matters." In every point of an indifferent nature they obey the Bishops, for conscience' sake: But they think Episcopal authority cannot reverse what is fixed by Divine authority. Yet they are determined never to renounce communion with the Church, unless they are cast out headlong. If it be said, "Nay, but if I varied from the Church at all, I would throw off my gown, and be a professed Dissenter:" What! would you profess to dissent when you did not? If you would, they dare not do it. They love the Church, and therefore keep to all her doctrine and rules, as far as possibly they can: And if they vary at all, it shall not be a hair's breadth farther than they cannot help. "Fourthly. These principles they industriously propagate among their followers." Indeed they do not: The bulk of their followers know just nothing of the matter. They industriously propagate among them nothing but inward and outward holiness.

(7.) "Now these are oppositions to the most fundamental principles and essentially constituent parts of our Establishment; and not of ours only, but of every ecclesiastical Establishment that is, or ever has been, in the Christian world."

"The most fundamental principles!" No more than the tiles are the most fundamental principles of a house. Useful, doubtless, they are; yet you must take them off, if you would repair the rotten timber beneath. "Essentially constituent parts of our Establishment!" Well, we will not quarrel for a word. Perhaps the doors may be essentially constituent parts of the building we call a church. Yet, if it were on fire, we might innocently break them open, or even throw them for a time off the hinges. Now this is really the case. The timber is rotten, yea, the main beams of the house; and they want to place that firm beam, salvation by faith, in the room of salvation by works. A fire is kindled in the Church, the house of the living God; the fire of love of the world, ambition, covetousness, envy, anger, malice, bitter zeal; in one word, of ungodliness and unrighteousness. O who will come and help to quench it? Under disadvantages and discouragements of every kind, a little handful of men have made a beginning; and I trust they

will not leave off till the building is saved, or they sink in the ruins of it.

4. To sum up the whole: A few irregular men openly witness those truths of God which the regular Clergy (a few excepted) either suppress, or wholly deny.

Their word is accompanied with the power of God, convincing and converting sinners. The word of those is not accompanied with power: It neither wounds nor heals.

The former witness the truth and the power of God, by their own life and conversation: Therefore the world, men who know not God, hate them, and speak all manner of evil against them falsely. The latter are of the world: Therefore the world loves its own, and speaks honourably of them.

Which of these ought you to hear? those who declare, or those who deny, the truth of God? that word which is the power of God unto salvation, or that which lulls men on to destruction? the men who live, as well as preach, the Gospel, or those whose lives are no better than their doctrine?

“But they are irregular.” I answer,

(1.) That is not their choice. They must either preach irregularly, or not at all. (2.) Is such a circumstance of weight to turn the scale against the substance of the Gospel? If it is, if none ought to speak or hear the truth of God, unless in a regular manner, then (to mention but one consequence) there never could have been any reformation from Popery. For here the entire argument for Church order would have stood in its full force. Suppose one had asked a German nobleman to hear Martin Luther preach; might not his Priest have said, (without debating whether he preached the truth or not,) “My Lord, in every nation there must be some settled order of government, ecclesiastical and civil. There is an ecclesiastical order established in Germany. You are born under this establishment. Your ancestors supported it, and your very rank and station constitute you a formal and eminent guardian of it. How, then, can it consist with the duty arising from all these, to give encouragement, countenance, and support to principles and practices that are a direct renunciation of the established constitution?” Had the force of this reasoning been allowed, what had become of the Reformation?

Yet it was right; though it really was a subversion of the

whole ecclesiastical constitution, with regard to doctrine as well as discipline. Whereas this is no such thing. The doctrine of the Established Church, which is far the most essential part of her constitution, these Preachers manifestly confirm, in opposition to those who subvert it. And it is the opposition made to them by those subverters which constrains them, in some respects, to deviate from her discipline; to which, in all others, they conform for conscience. O what pity, that any who preach the same doctrine, and whom those subverters have not yet been able to thrust out, should join with them against their brethren in the common faith, and fellow-witnesses of the common salvation!

I am, dear Sir,  
Your willing servant for Christ's sake,  
JOHN WESLEY.

---

## A LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. VENN.

---

*Birmingham, June 22, 1765.*

REVEREND AND DEAR SIR,

HAVING at length a few hours to spare, I sit down to answer your last, which was particularly acceptable to me, because it was wrote with so great openness. I shall write with the same. And herein you and I are just fit to converse together; because we both like to speak blunt and plain, without going a great way round about. I shall likewise take this opportunity of explaining myself on some other heads. I want you to understand me inside and out. Then I say, *Sic sum: Si placeo, utere.\**

Were I allowed to boast myself a little, I would say, I want no man living; I mean, none but those who are now connected with me, and who bless God for that connexion.

\* This quotation from Terence is thus translated by Colman:—

“It is my way:

So, if you like me, use me.”—EDIT.

With these I am able to go through every part of the work to which I am called. Yet I have laboured after union with all whom I believe to be united with Christ. I have sought it again and again; but in vain. They were resolved to stand aloof. And when one and another sincere Minister of Christ has been inclined to come nearer to me, others have diligently kept them off, as though thereby they did God service.

To this poor end the doctrine of perfection has been brought in, head and shoulders. And when such concessions were made as would abundantly satisfy any fair and candid man, they were no nearer,—rather farther off; for they had no desire to be satisfied. To make this dear breach wider and wider, stories were carefully gleaned up, improved, yea, invented and retailed, both concerning me and “the perfect ones.” And when anything very bad has come to hand, some have rejoiced as though they had found great spoils.

By this means chiefly, the distance between you and me has increased ever since you came to Huddersfield; and perhaps it has not been lessened by that honest, well-meaning man, Mr. Burnet, and by others, who have talked largely of my dogmatism, love of power, errors, and irregularities. My dogmatism is neither more nor less than a custom of coming to the point at once, and telling my mind flat and plain, without any preface or ceremony. I could indeed premise something of my own imbecility, littleness of judgment, and the like; but, first, I have no time to lose, I must dispatch the matter as soon as possible. Secondly, I do not think it frank or ingenuous. I think these prefaces are mere artifice.

The power I have, I never sought. It was the undesired, unexpected result of the work God was pleased to work by me. I have a thousand times sought to devolve it on others; but as yet I cannot. I therefore suffer it till I can find any to ease me of my burden.

If any one will convince me of my errors, I will heartily thank him. I believe all the Bible, as far as I understand it, and am ready to be convinced. If I am a heretic, I became such by reading the Bible. All my notions I drew from thence; and with little help from men, unless in the single point of justification by faith. But I impose my notions upon none: I will be bold to say, there is no man



living farther from it. I make no opinion the term of union with any man: I think and let think. What I want is, holiness of heart and life. They who have this are my brother, sister, and mother.

“But you hold perfection.” True, that is, loving God with all our heart, and serving him with all our strength. I teach nothing more, nothing less, than this. And whatever infirmity, defect, *ανομια*, is consistent with this, any man may teach, and I shall not contradict him.

As to irregularity, I hope none of those who cause it do then complain of it. Will they throw a man into the dirt, and beat him because he is dirty? Of all men living, those Clergymen ought not to complain, who believe I preach the Gospel as to the substance of it. If they do not ask me to preach in their churches, they are accountable for my preaching in the fields.

I come now directly to your letter, in hopes of establishing a good understanding between us. I agreed to suspend, for a twelvemonth, our stated preaching at Huddersfield, which had been there these many years. If this answered your end, I am glad: My end it did not answer at all. Instead of coming nearer to me, you got farther off. I heard of it from every quarter, though few knew that I did; for I saw no cause to speak against you, because you did against me. I wanted you to do more, not less, good, and therefore durst not do or say anything to hinder it. And lest I should hinder it, I will make a farther trial, and suspend the preaching at Huddersfield for another year.

1. To clear the case between us a little farther. I must now adopt your words: “I, no less than you, preach justification by faith only, the absolute necessity of holiness, the increasing mortification of sin, and rejection of all past experiences and attainments. I abhor, as you do, all Antinomian abuse of the doctrine of Christ, and desire to see my people walking even as he walked. Is it then worth while, in order to gratify a few bigoted persons, or for the sake of the minute differences between us, to encourage all the train of evils which follow contention for opinions, in little matters as much as in great?”

2. If I was as strenuous with regard to perfection on one side, as you have been on the other, I should deny you to be a sufficient Preacher; but this I never did. And yet I

assure you, I can advance such reasons for all I teach as would puzzle you and all that condemn me to answer; but I am sick of disputing. Let them beat the air, and triumph without an opponent.

3. "None," you say, "preach in your houses, who do not hold the very same doctrine with you." This is not exactly the case. You are welcome to preach in any of those houses; as I know we agree in the main points; and whereinsoever we differ, you would not preach there contrary to me. "But would it not give you pain to have any other Teacher come among those committed to your charge, so as to have your plan disconcerted, your labours depreciated, and the affections of your flock alienated?" It has given me pain when I had reason to fear this was done, both at Leeds, Birstal, and elsewhere. And I was "under a temptation of speaking against you;" but I refrained even among my intimate friends. So far was I from publicly warning my people against one I firmly believed to be much better than myself.

4. Indeed I trust "the bad blood is now taken away." Let it return no more. Let us begin such a correspondence as has never been yet; and let us avow it before all mankind. Not content with not weakening each other's hands, or speaking against each other, directly or indirectly, (which may be effectually done under the notion of exposing this and that error,) let us defend each other's characters to the uttermost against either ill or well meaning evil speakers. I am not satisfied with, "Be very civil to the Methodists, but have nothing to do with them." No: I desire to have a league offensive and defensive with every soldier of Christ. We have not only one faith, one hope, one Lord, but are directly engaged in one warfare. We are carrying the war into the devil's own quarters, who therefore summons all his hosts to war. Come then, ye that love Him, to the help of the Lord, to the help of the Lord against the mighty! I am now well-nigh *miles emeritus senex, sexagenarius*;\* yet I trust to fight a little longer. Come and strengthen the hands, till you supply the place, of

Your weak, but affectionate brother,  
JOHN WESLEY.

\* A veteran warrior, who has seen his sixtieth year, and is entitled to his discharge.—EDIT.

## ADDRESS TO THE TRAVELLING PREACHERS.

---

MY DEAR BRETHREN,

*August 4, 1769.*

1. IT has long been my desire that all those Ministers of our Church who believe and preach salvation by faith might cordially agree between themselves, and not hinder but help one another. After occasionally pressing this in private conversation, wherever I had opportunity, I wrote down my thoughts upon the head, and sent them to each in a letter. Out of fifty or sixty, to whom I wrote, only three vouchsafed me an answer. So I give this up: I can do no more. They are a rope of sand; and such they will continue.

2. But it is otherwise with the Travelling Preachers in our Connexion. You are at present one body. You act in concert with each other, and by united counsels. And now is the time to consider what can be done in order to continue this union. Indeed, as long as I live, there will be no great difficulty. I am, under God, a centre of union to all our Travelling as well as Local Preachers.

They all know me, and my communication. They all love me for my work's sake; and, therefore, were it only out of regard to me, they will continue connected with each other. But by what means may this connexion be preserved when God removes me from you?

3. I take it for granted, it cannot be preserved, by any means, between those who have not a single eye. Those who aim at anything but the glory of God, and the salvation of men; who desire or seek any earthly thing, whether honour, profit, or ease; will not, cannot, continue in the Connexion: It will not answer their design. Some of them, perhaps a fourth of the whole number, will secure preferment in the Church. Others will turn Independents, and get separate congregations, like John Edwards and Charles Skelton. Lay your accounts with this, and be not surprised if some you do not suspect be of this number.

4. But what method can be taken to preserve a firm union between those who choose to remain together?

Perhaps you might take some such steps as these:—

On notice of my death, let all the Preachers in England and Ireland repair to London within six weeks.\*

Let them seek God by solemn fasting and prayer.

Let them draw up articles of agreement, to be signed by those who choose to act in concert.

Let those be dismissed who do not choose it in the most friendly manner possible.

Let them choose, by votes, a committee of three, five, or seven, each of whom is to be Moderator in his turn.

Let the Committee do what I do now; propose Preachers to be tried, admitted, or excluded; fix the place of each Preacher for the ensuing year, and the time of the next Conference.

5. Can anything be done now in order to lay a foundation for this future union? Would it not be well, for any that are willing, to sign some articles of agreement before God calls me hence? Suppose something like these:—

“We, whose names are under-written, being thoroughly convinced of the necessity of a close union between those whom God is pleased to use as instruments in this glorious work, in order to preserve this union between ourselves, are resolved, God being our Helper,—

“I. *To devote ourselves entirely to God; denying ourselves, taking up our cross daily, steadily aiming at one thing,—to save our own souls, and them that hear us.*

“II. *To preach the old Methodist doctrines, and no other, contained in the Minutes of the Conferences.*

“III. *To observe and enforce the whole Methodist discipline laid down in the said Minutes.*”

\* This proposal was afterwards superseded by the “Deed of Declaration,” which constituted one hundred of the Preachers the legal Conference.—EDIT.

# SOME THOUGHTS

UPON

## AN IMPORTANT QUESTION.

---

1. For many years I have earnestly advised, both in public and in private, all in connexion with me, who have been brought up in the Established Church, to continue therein; and of consequence to attend the public service of the church at all opportunities; and my reasons for so doing I published to all the world more than twenty years ago.

2. But a few months ago, I was favoured with a letter, which required me to review my sentiments. It is signed by several members of our society, men of a loving spirit, and of an unblamable conversation; and it is worthy of the greater regard, as they speak not only in their own name, but in the name of many who wish to have a conscience void of offence, both towards God and towards man.

3: Part of it runs thus:—

“Having read many of your books, and heard many of your Preachers, and being in connexion with you, we have from time to time been advised by them and you, constantly to attend the church. But we find that neither you nor your Preachers have given any countenance to the doctrines of Calvinism. This induces us humbly to ask the following questions:—

“First. Whether you would have us to go to that church where the doctrines of Calvinism are continually inculcated; and where the doctrines taught by you, Christian perfection in particular, are continually exploded.

“Secondly. Whether you think we shall be profited, in any degree, by hearing such preaching.

“Thirdly. Whether it is not a means of filling our hearts with prejudice either against those Preachers or against the truth.

“Fourthly. Whether hearing them does not expose us to temptation from those who continually ask, ‘How did you like the sermon to-day?’ We cannot dissemble; and if we do not, we offend them.

“If you please, you may give us your sentiments in the ‘Arminian Magazine.’

“JOHN W——,

“FRANCIS B——.

“NATHAN O——,

“JOSEPH B——.

“JOHN R——,

“BAILDON, *near* BRADFORTH,

“*July 24, 1781.*”

4. It is a delicate, as well as important, point, on which I hardly know how to answer. I cannot lay down any general rule. All I can say at present is, If it does not hurt you, hear them; if it does, refrain. Be determined by your own conscience. Let every man in particular act “as he is fully persuaded in his own mind.”

JOHN WESLEY.

*November 19, 1781.*

## ON HEARING MINISTERS WHO OPPOSE THE TRUTH.

1. LAST summer I received a letter from Yorkshire, signed by several serious men, who proposed a difficulty they were under, wherein they knew not how to act. And, indeed, I did not well know how to advise them. So I delayed giving them a determinate answer, till I could lay the matter before our brethren at the ensuing Conference.

2. Their difficulty was this: “You advise all the members of our societies constantly to attend the service of the Church. We have done so for a considerable time. But very frequently Mr. R., our Minister, preaches not only what we believe to be false, but dangerously false, doctrine. He asserts, and endeavours to prove, that we cannot be saved from our sins in this life; and that we must not hope to be

perfected in love on this side eternity. Our nature is very willing to receive this ; therefore, it is very liable to hurt us. Hence we have a doubt, whether it is our duty to hear this preaching, which experience shows to weaken our souls."

3. This letter I laid before the Conference, and we easily perceived, the difficulty therein proposed concerned not only the society at Baildon, but many others in various parts of the kingdom. It was therefore considered at large ; and all our brethren were desired to speak their sentiments freely. In the conclusion, they unanimously agreed, first, that it was highly expedient, all the Methodists (so called) who had been bred therein should attend the service of the Church as often as possible: But that, secondly, if the Minister began either to preach the absolute decrees, or to rail at and ridicule Christian perfection, they should quietly and silently go out of the church ; yet attend it again the next opportunity.

4. I have since that time revolved this matter over and over in my own mind ; and the more I consider it, the more I am convinced, this was the best answer that could be given. I still advise all our friends, when this case occurs, quietly and silently to go out. Only I must earnestly caution them not to be critical ; not to make a man an offender for a word ; no, nor for a few sentences, which any who believe the decrees may drop without design. But if such a Minister should at any time deliberately, and of set purpose, endeavour to establish absolute predestination, or to confute scriptural perfection ; then I advise all the Methodists in the congregation quietly to go away.

JOHN WESLEY.

LEWISHAM,  
*January 9, 1782.*

---

## OF ATTENDING THE CHURCH.

---

" REVEREND SIR,

" *February 13, 1782.*

" I AM, as you are, an Arminian. I am well acquainted with your religious tenets, and have read most, if not all,

of your Works ; and though I do not entirely fall in with you in every article of your creed, yet I have much respect to your character, great reverence for your principles in general, and an entire affection for your person. Depending upon the acknowledged candour of your disposition, and your uniform zeal for the truth, I expect your attention and answers to the following questions :—

“ Is it your wish that the people called Methodists should be, or become, a body entirely separate from the Church ? ”

Answer. No.

“ If not, when, that is, how often, and where, I mean, upon what description of Teachers of the Establishment, are they to attend ? ”

A. I advise them to go to church.

“ More particularly, if the fall, the corruption, and natural impotence of man, his free and full redemption in Christ Jesus, through faith working by love, should be taught and inculcated, and offered to the attention of all, at the church of the parish where they reside, are they then, in your opinion, bound in conscience to hear, or may they, at their own option, forbear ? ”

A. I do not think they are bound in conscience to attend any particular church.

“ Or, if they are at liberty to absent themselves, are they at liberty, that is, have they a Christian privilege, to censure this doctrine in the gross, to condemn such Teachers, and boldly to pronounce them ‘ blind leaders of the blind ? ’ ”

A. No ; by no means.

“ Lastly. Whenever this happens, is it through prejudice, or rational piety ? Is it through bigotry, or a catholic spirit ? Is it consistent with Christian charity ? Is it compatible with a state of justification ? Or is it even allowable in the high habit of evangelical perfection ? ”

A. I think it is a sin.

“ Your unequivocal answers to these interesting queries in the ‘ Arminian Magazine, ’ will oblige,

Reverend Sir,

“ A RESPECTFUL READER.”

I have answered simply to your questions, whether they be proposed out of good or ill will.

JOHN WESLEY.

February 23, 1782.



# THOUGHTS

UPON

## SOME LATE OCCURRENCES.

---

1. IN JUNE, 1744, I desired my brother and a few other Clergymen to meet me in London, to consider how we should proceed to save our own souls and those that heard us. After some time, I invited the lay Preachers that were in the house to meet with us. We conferred together for several days, and were much comforted and strengthened thereby.

2. The next year I not only invited most of the Travelling Preachers, but several others, to confer with me in Bristol. And from that time for some years, though I invited only a part of the Travelling Preachers, yet I permitted any that desired it, to be present, not apprehending any ill consequences therefrom.

3. But two ill consequences soon appeared : One, that the expense was too great to be borne ; the other, that many of our people were scattered while they were left without a shepherd. I therefore determined, (1.) That for the time to come, none should be present but those whom I invited ; and, (2.) That I would only invite a select number out of every Circuit.

4. This I did for many years, and all that time the term *Conference* meant not so much the conversation we had together, as the persons that conferred ; namely, those whom I invited to confer with me from time to time. So that all this time it depended on me alone, not only what persons should constitute the Conference,—but whether there should be any Conference at all : This lay wholly in my own breast ; neither the Preachers nor the people having any part or lot in the matter.

5. Some years after, it was agreed, that after the decease of my brother and me, the Preachers should be stationed by the Conference. But ere long a question arose, What does

that term mean? Who are the Conference? It appeared difficult to define the term. And the year before last all our brethren who were met at Bristol desired me to fix the determinate meaning of the word.

6. Hitherto, it had meant (not the whole body of Traveling Preachers, it never bore that meaning at all; but) those persons whom I invited yearly to confer with me. But to this there was a palpable objection,—Such a Conference would have no being after my death. And what other definition of it to give, I knew not; at least I knew none that would stand good in law. I consulted a skilful and honest Attorney; and he consulted an eminent Counsellor, who answered, “There is no way of doing this but by naming a determinate number of persons. The deed which names these must be enrolled in Chancery: Then it will stand good in law.”

7. My first thought was to name a very few, suppose ten or twelve persons. Count Zinzendorf named only six who were to preside over the community after his decease. But on second thoughts, I believed there would be more safety in a greater number of counsellors, and therefore named a hundred; as many as I judged could meet without too great an expense, and without leaving any Circuit naked of Preachers while the Conference met.

8. In naming these Preachers, as I had no adviser, so I had no respect of persons; but I simply set down those that, according to the best of my judgment, were most proper. But I am not infallible. I might mistake, and think better of some of them than they deserved. However, I did my best; and if I did wrong, it was not the error of my will, but of my judgment.

9. This was the rise, and this is the nature, of that famous Deed of Declaration,\* that vile, wicked Deed, concerning which you have heard such an outcry! And now, can any one tell me how to mend it, or how it could have been made better? “O yes. You might have inserted two hundred, as well as one hundred, Preachers.” No; for then the expense of meeting would have been double, and all the Circuits would have been without Preachers. “But you might have named other Preachers instead of these.”

\* See Vol. IV., page 503, of the present edition of Mr. Wesley's Works.—ED17.

True, if I had thought as well of them as they did of themselves. But I did not; therefore I could do no otherwise than I did, without sinning against God and my own conscience.

10. "But what need was there for any deed at all?" There was the utmost need of it: Without some authentic deed fixing the meaning of the term, the moment I died the Conference had been nothing. Therefore any of the proprietors of the land on which our preaching-houses were built might have seized them for their own use; and there would have been none to hinder them; for the Conference would have been nobody, a mere empty name.

11. You see then in all the pains I have taken about this absolutely necessary Deed, I have been labouring, not for myself, (I have no interest therein,) but for the whole body of Methodists; in order to fix them upon such a foundation as is likely to stand as long as the sun and moon endure. That is, if they continue to walk by faith, and to show forth their faith by their works; otherwise, I pray God to root out the memorial of them from the earth.

JOHN WESLEY.

*Plymouth-Dock,*  
*March 3, 1785.*

---

## LETTER TO THE METHODIST CONFERENCE.

---

MY DEAR BRETHREN,

*Chester, April 7, 1785.*

SOME of our Travelling Preachers have expressed a fear, that, after my decease, you would exclude them either from preaching in connexion with you, or from some other privileges which they now enjoy. I know no other way to prevent such inconvenience, than to leave these my last words with you.

I beseech you, by the mercies of God, that you never avail yourselves of the Deed of Declaration to assume any superiority over your brethren; but let all things go on, among those Itinerants who choose to remain together, exactly in the same manner as when I was with you, so far as circumstances will permit.

In particular, I beseech you, if you ever loved me, and if

you now love God and your brethren, to have no respect of persons in stationing the Preachers, in choosing children for Kingswood school, in disposing of the Yearly Contribution, and the Preachers' Fund, or any other public money: But do all things with a single eye, as I have done from the beginning. Go on thus, doing all things without prejudice or partiality, and God will be with you even to the end.

JOHN WESLEY.\*

---

LETTER TO DR. COKE, MR. ASBURY, AND  
OUR BRETHREN IN NORTH AMERICA.†

---

*Bristol, September 10, 1784.*

1. By a very uncommon train of providences, many of the provinces of North America are totally disjoined from their mother-country, and erected into independent States. The English Government has no authority over them, either civil or ecclesiastical, any more than over the States of Holland. A civil authority is exercised over them, partly by the Congress, partly by the provincial Assemblies. But no one either exercises or claims any ecclesiastical authority at all. In this peculiar situation some thousands of the inhabitants of these States desire my advice; and in compliance with their desire, I have drawn up a little sketch.

2. Lord King's "Account of the Primitive Church" convinced me many years ago, that Bishops and Presbyters are the same order, and consequently have the same right to ordain. For many years I have been importuned, from time to time, to exercise this right, by ordaining part of our Travelling Preachers. But I have still refused, not only for peace' sake, but because I was determined as little as possible

\* This letter was read at the first Conference after Mr. Wesley's death; when it was unanimously resolved, "That all the Preachers who are in full connexion with them shall enjoy every privilege that the members of the Conference enjoy, agreeably to the above-written letter of our venerable deceased father in the Gospel."—EDIT.

† This document is introduced by Mr. Wesley in the following manner:—"What is the state of our societies in North America? A. It may best appear by the following letter. If any one is minded to dispute concerning diocesan Episcopacy, he may: But I have better work."—EDIT. Digitized by Google

to violate the established order of the national Church to which I belonged.

3. But the case is widely different between England and North America. Here there are Bishops who have a legal jurisdiction: In America there are none, neither any parish Ministers. So that for some hundred miles together, there is none, either to baptize, or to administer the Lord's supper. Here, therefore, my scruples are at an end; and I conceive myself at full liberty, as I violate no order, and invade no man's right, by appointing and sending labourers into the harvest.

4. I have accordingly appointed Dr. Coke and Mr. Francis Asbury to be joint Superintendents over our brethren in North America; as also Richard Whatcoat and Thomas Vasey to act as Elders among them, by baptizing and administering the Lord's supper. And I have prepared a Liturgy, little differing from that of the Church of England, (I think, the best constituted national Church in the world,) which I advise all the Travelling Preachers to use on the Lord's day, in all the congregations, reading the Litany only on Wednesdays and Fridays, and praying extempore on all other days. I also advise the Elders to administer the supper of the Lord on every Lord's day.

5. If any one will point out a more rational and scriptural way of feeding and guiding those poor sheep in the wilderness, I will gladly embrace it. At present, I cannot see any better method than that I have taken.

6. It has, indeed, been proposed to desire the English Bishops to ordain part of our Preachers for America. But to this I object, (1.) I desired the Bishop of London to ordain only one; but could not prevail. (2.) If they consented, we know the slowness of their proceedings; but the matter admits of no delay. (3.) If they would ordain them now, they would likewise expect to govern them. And how grievously would this entangle us! (4.) As our American brethren are now totally disentangled both from the State, and from the English hierarchy, we dare not entangle them again, either with the one or the other. They are now at full liberty, simply to follow the Scriptures and the primitive church. And we judge it best that they should stand fast in that liberty wherewith God has so strangely made them free.

JOHN WESLEY.

## ON THE CHURCH:

IX

### A LETTER TO THE REV. ———.

---

REV. SIR,

*Plymouth-Dock, August 19, 1785.*

I WILL tell you my thoughts with all simplicity, and wait for better information. If you agree with me, well; if not, we can (as Mr. Whitefield used to say) agree to disagree.

For these forty years I have been in doubt concerning that question: "What obedience is due to heathenish Priests and mitred infidels?"

I have from time to time proposed my doubts to the most pious and sensible Clergymen I knew. But they gave me no satisfaction; rather they seemed to be puzzled as well as me. Some obedience I always paid to the Bishops, in obedience to the laws of the land. But I cannot see, that I am under any obligation to obey them farther than those laws require.

It is in obedience to those laws, that I have never exercised in England the power which I believe God has given me. I firmly believe, I am a scriptural *Επισκοπος*, as much as any man in England or in Europe. (For the uninterrupted succession I know to be a fable, which no man ever did or can prove.) But this does in nowise interfere with my remaining in the Church of England; from which I have no more desire to separate than I had fifty years ago. I still attend all the ordinances of the Church, at all opportunities. And I constantly and earnestly desire all that are connected with me so to do. When Mr. Smyth pressed us to "separate from the Church," he meant, "Go to church no more." And this was what I meant seven-and-twenty years ago, when I persuaded our brethren, "Not to separate from the Church." But here another question occurs, "What is the Church of England?" It is not "all the people of England." Papists and Dissenters are no part thereof. It is not all the people of England except Papists and Dissenters. Then we should

have a glorious Church indeed! No; according to our Twentieth Article, a particular church is “a congregation of faithful people,” (*cætus credentium*, the words in our Latin edition,) “among whom the word of God is preached, and the sacraments duly administered.” Here is a true logical definition, containing both the essence and the properties of a church. What then, according to this definition, is the Church of England? Does it mean “all the believers in England (except the Papists and Dissenters) who have the word of God and the sacraments duly administered among them?” I fear this does not come up to your idea of “the Church of England.” Well, what more do you include in that phrase? “Why, all the believers that adhere to the doctrine and discipline established by the Convocation under Queen Elizabeth.” Nay, that discipline is well nigh vanished away, and the doctrine both you and I adhere to.

All those reasons against a separation from the Church in this sense, I subscribe to still. What then are you frightened at? I no more separate from it now, than I did in the year 1758. I submit still (though sometimes with a doubting conscience) to mitred infidels. I do indeed vary from them in some points of doctrine, and in some points of discipline; by preaching abroad, for instance, by praying extempore, and by forming societies; but not a hair’s breadth further than I believe to be meet, right, and my bounden duty. I walk still by the same rule I have done for between forty and fifty years. I do nothing rashly. It is not likely I should. The high-day of my blood is over. If you will go hand in hand with me, do. But do not hinder me, if you will not help. Perhaps, if you had kept close to me, I might have done better. However, with or without help, I creep on. And as I have been hitherto, so I trust I shall always be,

Your affectionate friend and brother,  
JOHN WESLEY.

## OF SEPARATION FROM THE CHURCH.

---

1. EVER since I returned from America, it has been warmly affirmed, "You separate from the Church." I would consider how far, and in what sense, this assertion is true.

2. Whether you mean by that term the building so called, or the congregation, it is plain I do not separate from either; for wherever I am, I go to the church, and join with the congregation.

3. Yet it is true that I have in some respects varied, though not from the doctrines, yet from the discipline, of the Church of England; although not willingly, but by constraint. For instance, above forty years ago, I began preaching in the fields; and that for two reasons,—first, I was not suffered to preach in the churches; secondly, no parish-church in London or Westminster could contain the congregation.

4. About the same time, several persons who were desirous to save their souls, prayed me to meet them apart from the great congregation. These little companies (societies they were called) gradually spread through the three kingdoms. And in many places they built houses in which they met, and wherein I and my brethren preached. For a few young men, one after another, desired to serve me, as sons in the Gospel.

5. Some time after, Mr. Deleznor, a Clergyman, desired me to officiate at his chapel, in Wapping. There I read Prayers, and preached, and administered the Lord's supper to a part of the society. The rest communicated either at St. Paul's, or at their several parish-churches. Meantime, I endeavoured to watch over all their souls, as one that was to give an account; and to assign to each of my fellow-labourers the part wherein I judged he might be most useful.

6. When these were multiplied, I gave them an invitation to meet me together in my house at London; that we might consider, in what manner we could most effectually save our own souls, and them that heard us. This we called a Con-



ference ; meaning thereby, the persons, not the conversation they had. At first I desired all the Preachers to meet me ; but afterwards only a select number.

7. Some years after, we were strongly importuned by our brethren in America to go over and help them. Several Preachers willingly offered themselves for the service ; and several went from time to time. God blessed their labours in an uncommon manner. Many sinners were converted to God ; and many societies formed, under the same rules as were observed in England ; insomuch, that at present the American societies contain more than eighteen thousand members.

8. But since the late revolution in North America, these have been in great distress. The Clergy, having no sustenance, either from England, or from the American States, have been obliged almost universally to leave the country, and seek their food elsewhere. Hence those who had been members of the Church, had none either to administer the Lord's supper, or to baptize their children. They applied to England over and over ; but it was to no purpose. Judging this to be a case of real necessity, I took a step which, for peace and quietness, I had refrained from taking for many years ; I exercised that power which I am fully persuaded the great Shepherd and Bishop of the church has given me, I appointed three of our labourers to go and help them, by not only preaching the word of God, but likewise by administering the Lord's supper and baptizing their children, throughout that vast tract of land, a thousand miles long, and some hundreds broad.

9. These are the steps which, not of choice, but necessity, I have slowly and deliberately taken. If any one is pleased to call this separating from the Church, he may. But the law of England does not call it so ; nor can any one properly be said so to do, unless out of conscience he refuses to join in the service, and partake of the sacraments administered therein.

JOHN WESLEY.

CAMELFORD,  
August 30, 1785.

After Dr. Coke's return from America, many of our friends begged I would consider the case of Scotland, where

we had been labouring so many years, and had seen so little fruit of our labours. Multitudes indeed have set out well, but they were soon turned out of the way; chiefly by their Ministers either disputing against the truth, or refusing to admit them to the Lord's supper, yea, or to baptize their children, unless they would promise to have no fellowship with the Methodists. Many who did so, soon lost all they had gained, and became more the children of hell than before. To prevent this, I at length consented to take the same step with regard to Scotland, which I had done with regard to America. But this is not a separation from the Church at all. Not from the Church of Scotland; for we were never connected therewith, any further than we are now: Nor from the Church of England; for this is not concerned in the steps which are taken in Scotland. Whatever then is done, either in America or Scotland, is no separation from the Church of England. I have no thought of this: I have many objections against it. It is a totally different case. "But for all this, is it not possible there may be such a separation after you are dead?" Undoubtedly it is. But what I said at our first Conference, above forty years ago, I say still, "I dare not omit doing what good I can while I live, for fear of evils that may follow when I am dead."

BRISTOL, *July 22, 1786.*

PERHAPS there is one part of what I wrote some time since which requires a little further explanation. In what cases do we allow of service in church hours? I answer,

1. When the Minister is a notoriously wicked man.
2. When he preaches Arian, or any equally pernicious, doctrine.
3. When there are not churches in the town sufficient to contain half the people; and,
4. When there is no church at all within two or three miles. And we advise every one who preaches in the church hours to read the Psalms and Lessons, with part of the Church Prayers; because we apprehend this will endear the Church service to our brethren, who probably would be prejudiced against it, if they heard none but extemporary prayer.

## THOUGHTS UPON METHODISM.

---

1. I AM not afraid that the people called Methodists should ever cease to exist either in Europe or America. But I am afraid, lest they should only exist as a dead sect, having the form of religion without the power. And this undoubtedly will be the case, unless they hold fast both the doctrine, spirit, and discipline with which they first set out.

2. What was their fundamental doctrine? That the Bible is the whole and sole rule both of Christian faith and practice. Hence they learned, (1.) That religion is an inward principle; that it is no other than the mind that was in Christ; or, in other words, the renewal of the soul after the image of God, in righteousness and true holiness. (2.) That this can never be wrought in us, but by the power of the Holy Ghost. (3.) That we receive this, and every other blessing, merely for the sake of Christ: And, (4.) That whosoever hath the mind that was in Christ, the same is our brother, and sister, and mother.

3. In the year 1729 four young students in Oxford agreed to spend their evenings together. They were all zealous members of the Church of England, and had no peculiar opinions, but were distinguished only by their constant attendance on the church and sacrament. In 1735 they were increased to fifteen; when the chief of them embarked for America, intending to preach to the heathen Indians. Methodism then seemed to die away; but it revived again in the year 1788; especially after Mr. Wesley (not being allowed to preach in the churches) began to preach in the fields. One and another then coming to inquire what they must do to be saved, he desired them to meet him all together; which they did, and increased continually in number. In November, a large building, the Foundery, being offered him, he began preaching therein, morning and evening; at five in the morning, and seven in the evening, that the people's labour might not be hindered.

4. From the beginning the men and women sat apart, as they always did in the primitive church; and none were

suffered to call any place their own, but the first comers sat down first. They had no pews; and all the benches for rich and poor were of the same construction. Mr. Wesley began the service with a short prayer; then sung a hymn and preached, (usually about half an hour,) then sang a few verses of another hymn, and concluded with prayer. His constant doctrine was, salvation by faith, preceded by repentance, and followed by holiness.

5. But when a large number of people was joined, the great difficulty was, to keep them together. For they were continually scattering hither and thither, and we knew no way to help it. But God provided for this also, when we thought not of it. A year or two after, Mr. Wesley met the chief of the society in Bristol, and inquired, "How shall we pay the debt upon the preaching-house?" Captain Foy stood up and said, "Let every one in the society give a penny a week, and it will easily be done." "But many of them," said one, "have not a penny to give." "True," said the Captain; \* then put ten or twelve of them to me. Let each of these give what they can weekly, and I will supply what is wanting." Many others made the same offer. So Mr. Wesley divided the societies among them; assigning a class of about twelve persons to each of these, who were termed Leaders.

6. Not long after, one of these informed Mr. Wesley that, calling on such a one in his house, he found him quarrelling with his wife. Another was found in drink. It immediately struck into Mr. Wesley's mind, "This is the very thing we wanted. The Leaders are the persons who may not only receive the contributions, but also watch over the souls of their brethren." The society in London, being informed of this, willingly followed the example of that in Bristol; as did every society from that time, whether in Europe or America. By this means, it was easily found if any grew weary or faint, and help was speedily administered. And if any walked disorderly, they were quickly discovered, and either amended or dismissed.

7. For those who knew in whom they had believed, there was another help provided. Five or six, either married or single men, met together at such an hour as was convenient, according to the direction of St. James, "Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, and ye shall

be healed." And five or six of the married or single women met together for the same purpose. Innumerable blessings have attended this institution, especially in those who were going on to perfection. When any seemed to have attained this, they were allowed to meet with a select number, who appeared, so far as man could judge, to be partakers of the same "great salvation."

8. From this short sketch of Methodism, (so called,) any man of understanding may easily discern, that it is only plain, scriptural religion, guarded by a few prudential regulations. The essence of it is holiness of heart and life; the circumstantial all point to this. And as long as they are joined together in the people called Methodists, no weapon formed against them shall prosper. But if even the circumstantial parts are despised, the essential will soon be lost. And if ever the essential parts should evaporate, what remains will be dung and dross.

9. It nearly concerns us to understand how the case stands with us at present. I fear, wherever riches have increased, (exceeding few are the exceptions,) the essence of religion, the mind that was in Christ, has decreased in the same proportion. Therefore do I not see how it is possible, in the nature of things, for any revival of true religion to continue long. For religion must necessarily produce both industry and frugality; and these cannot but produce riches. But as riches increase, so will pride, anger, and love of the world in all its branches.

10. How, then, is it possible that Methodism, that is, the religion of the heart, though it flourishes now as a green bay-tree, should continue in this state? For the Methodists in every place grow diligent and frugal; consequently, they increase in goods. Hence they proportionably increase in pride, in anger, in the desire of the flesh, the desire of the eyes, and the pride of life. So, although the form of religion remains, the spirit is swiftly vanishing away.

11. Is there no way to prevent this? this continual declension of pure religion? We ought not to forbid people to be diligent and frugal: We must exhort all Christians to gain all they can, and to save all they can; that is, in effect, to grow rich! What way, then, (I ask again,) can we take, that our money may not sink us to the nethermost hell? There is one way, and there is no other under heaven. If

those who "gain all they can," and "save all they can," will likewise "give all they can;" then, the more they gain, the more they will grow in grace, and the more treasure they will lay up in heaven.

LONDON, *August 4, 1786.*

---

## AN ANSWER

TO

## AN IMPORTANT QUESTION.

---

DEAR SIR,

ARMAGH, *June 18, 1787.*

You ask, "Why do not the Clergy, whether in England or Ireland, avail themselves of the Methodist Preachers?" You say, you wonder they do not thankfully accept of their assistance, who desire no pay for their service, in repressing error and wickedness of every kind, and propagating truth and religion. You inquire, "Upon what rational principles can this be accounted for?"

To give a complete answer to this question would require a whole treatise. I have not leisure for this; but I will give as full an answer as my time will permit.

Only, before I answer, I must observe, that many both of the English and Irish Clergy are entirely out of the question. They are not only learned, but truly religious men; and, as such, are an honour to their profession. I speak only of those that are of a different character, be they many or few. Let them wear the cap whom it fits. That is no concern of mine.

This premised, I think it easy to be accounted for, even upon heathen principles. Horace observed long ago,—

*Oderunt hilarem tristes, tristemque jocosum, &c.\**

\* Thus translated by Francis :—

"The grave a gay companion shun;

Far from the sad the jovial run;

The gay, the witty, and sedate,

Are objects of each other's hate;

And they who quaff the midnight glass

Scorn them who dare the bumper pass."—EDIT. by Google

Accordingly, grave and solemn men (though too few are guilty of this fault) dislike many of the Methodist Preachers, for having nothing of that gravity or solemnity about them. Jocose Clergymen, on the other hand, cannot but dislike those who are steadily serious; and those that love to take a cheerful glass are not fond of such as are strictly temperate. You need go no farther than this consideration to have a clear answer to the question, "Why do many of the Clergy refuse to receive any assistance from the Methodist Preachers?"

But this may be more fully accounted for upon Christian principles. What says our Lord to the first Preachers of the Gospel, and in them to all their successors?—"If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me, before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love its own; but because ye are not of the world, therefore the world hateth you. These things will they do unto you, because they know not Him that sent me." (John xv. 18, *et seq.*)

Does not this give us sufficient reason to expect, that, if we are not of the world, all the world, all who know not God, whether Clergy or laity, will be so far from accepting our assistance, that they will sincerely hate us, and openly or privately persecute us, so far as God permits? We have, therefore, reason to wonder, not that they do not desire any union or coalition with us, but that they bear with, yea, and on many occasions treat us with courtesy and civility. This is a peculiar instance of the providence of God, causing, in some measure, the scandal of the cross to cease.

"But do not many Clergymen, who are not pious men, acknowledge that the Methodists do good, and encourage them to persevere therein?" They do; but observe how far they would have them go. They wish them to repress outward sin; to reclaim the people from cursing, and swearing, and drunkenness, and Sabbath-breaking, unless the Squire gains by it. They are well pleased, that their parishioners grow more diligent and honest, and are constant attendants on the church and sacrament. Nay, they are glad that they are brought to practise both justice and mercy; in a word, to be moral men.

But the truth is, the Methodists know and teach that all this is nothing before God; that whoever goes thus far and

no farther is building upon the sand; that he who would worship God to any purpose, must worship him "in spirit and in truth;" that true religion is "righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost;" even giving God our heart; the seeking and finding happiness in Him. Here, then, they divide from the Methodists, whom they judge to be going too far. They would have their parishioners moral men; that is, in plain terms, honest Heathens; but they would not have them pious men, men devoted to God, Bible Christians. If, therefore, the Methodist Preachers would stop here, would preach outward religion and no more, many Clergymen would not only encourage them therein, but likewise cordially join them. But when they persuade men, not to be almost, but altogether, Christians; to maintain a constant "fellowship with the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ;" to be transformed into that "image of God wherein they were created," and thenceforth to live that "life which is hid with Christ in God;" let them not expect that any will give them the right hand of fellowship, but those God hath "chosen out of the world."

I am

Yours, &c.,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## THOUGHTS

OR

## SEPARATION FROM THE CHURCH.

---

MY DEAR FRIEND,

THE question properly refers (when we speak of a separation from the Church) to a total and immediate separation. Such was that of Mr. Ingham's people first, and afterwards that of Lady Huntingdon's; who all agreed to form themselves into a separate body without delay, to go to church no more, and to have no more connexion with the Church of England than with the Church of Rome.



Such a separation I have always declared against; and certainly it will not take place (if ever it does) while I live. But a kind of separation has already taken place, and will inevitably spread, though by slow degrees. Those Ministers, so called, who neither live nor preach the Gospel, I dare not say are sent of God. Where one of these is settled, many of the Methodists dare not attend his ministry; so, if there be no other church in that neighbourhood, they go to church no more. This is the case in a few places already, and it will be the case in more; and no one can justly blame me for this, neither is it contrary to any of my professions.

JOHN WESLEY.

BRISTOL,

*September 20, 1788.*

---



---

## THOUGHTS UPON A LATE PHENOMENON.

---

1. A GLORIOUS work of God began upon the earth on the day of the descent of the Holy Ghost, on the day of Pentecost; which so swiftly increased, that, in a very short time, in Jerusalem alone thousands of sinners were brought from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God. Those were effectually changed from all vice to all holiness: Indeed, being all filled with the Holy Ghost, they were all of one heart and one mind. And their life was suitable thereto: "They continued steadfastly in the Apostles' doctrine, in the breaking of bread, in prayers; and having all things in common, there was none among them that lacked; but distribution was made to every one as he had need."

2. But in the mean time, the god of this world was not idle: He did not fail to sow tares among the wheat. The mystery of iniquity began to work almost as soon as the mystery of godliness. This grew up to a considerable height, even in the days of the Apostles; insomuch that, before St. John had finished his course, the fine gold was become dim; and iniquity had overspread the Christian church, as well as the heathen world: Although it did not come to its height till the fatal time when Constantine called himself a Christian.

3. Yet God never left himself without witness. In every age, and in every nation, there were a few that truly feared God and wrought righteousness; and these were raised up, in their several generations, that they might be lights shining in a benighted world. But few of them answered the design of Providence for any considerable time. In every age, most of the excellent ones of the earth, being weary of the contradiction of sinners, separated from them, and retired, if not into deserts, yet into distinct churches or religious bodies. So their light no longer shone among men, among those that needed them most; but they contentedly gave up the world to the service of its old master.

4. Again and again this has been the case, for fifteen or sixteen hundred years; and it has chiefly been by this means that many revivals of religion have been of so short a continuance, seldom lasting (as Martin Luther observes) longer than a generation, that is, thirty years. Generally in that time a considerable number of men, being awakened, thought they could stand alone. So they formed themselves into a distinct body, and left the world to themselves. Hence the world received no more benefit from them; and by degrees their own love waxed cold, till either their memorial perished from the earth, or they remained a dry, cold sect.

5. But between fifty and sixty years ago, a new phenomenon appeared in the world. Two or three young men, desiring to be scriptural Christians, met together for that purpose. Their number gradually increased. They were then all scattered. But fifty years ago, two of them met again; and a few plain people joined them, in order to help one another in the way to heaven. Since then they increased to many thousands, both in Europe and America. They are still increasing in number, and, as they humbly hope, in the knowledge and love of God; yea, and in what they neither hoped for nor desired, namely, in worldly substance.

6. All of these were, when they first set out, members of the Established Church; and a great majority of them, probably nine in ten, continue such at this day. But they have been solicited again and again, from time to time, to separate from it, and to form themselves into a distinct body, independent of all other religious societies. Thirty years ago, this was seriously considered among them at a general Conference. All the arguments urged on one side and the

other were considered at large; and it was determined, without one dissenting voice, that they "ought not to separate from the Church."

7. This is a new thing in the world: This is the peculiar glory of the people called Methodists. In spite of all manner of temptations, they will not separate from the Church. What many so earnestly covet, they abhor: They will not be a distinct body. Now, what instance of this have we before, either in ancient or modern history; of a body of people, in such circumstances, who will not be a distinct party, but choose to remain in connexion with their own Church, that they may be more effectually the servants of all?

8. This, I say again, is an utterly new phenomenon. I never saw, heard, or read of anything like it. The Methodists will not separate from the Church, although continually reproached for doing it; although it would free them from abundance of inconveniences, and make their path much smoother and easier; although many of their friends earnestly advise and their enemies provoke them to it, the Clergy in particular; most of whom, far from thanking them for continuing in the Church, use all the means in their power, fair and unfair, to drive them out of it.

9. One circumstance more is quite peculiar to the people called Methodists; that is, the terms upon which any person may be admitted into their society. They do not impose, in order to their admission, any opinions whatever. Let them hold particular or general redemption, absolute or conditional decrees; let them be Churchmen or Dissenters, Presbyterians or Independents, it is no obstacle. Let them choose one mode of baptism or another, it is no bar to their admission. The Presbyterian may be a Presbyterian still; the Independent or Anabaptist use his own mode of worship. So may the Quaker; and none will contend with him about it. They think, and let think. One condition, and one only, is required,—a real desire to save their soul. Where this is, it is enough: They desire no more: They lay stress upon nothing else: They ask only, "Is thy heart herein as my heart? If it be, give me thy hand."

10. Is there any other society in Great Britain or Ireland that is so remote from bigotry? that is so truly of a catholic spirit? so ready to admit all serious persons without distinction? Where, then, is there such another society in

Europe? in the habitable world? I know none. Let any man show it me that can. Till then let no one talk of the bigotry of the Methodists.

NOTTINGHAM, *July 13, 1788.*

---



---

TO CERTAIN PERSONS IN DUBLIN.

---

WHITEFRIAR-STREET, DUBLIN, *March 31, 1789.*

MY DEAR BRETHREN,

I MUCH approve of the manner and spirit wherein you write concerning these tender points. I explained myself upon them, in some measure, on Sunday: I will do it more fully now.

At present, I have nothing to do with Dr. Coke: But I answer for myself. I do not separate from the Church, nor have any intention so to do. Neither do they that meet on Sunday-noon separate from the Church, any more than they did before: Nay, less; for they attend the church and sacrament oftener now than they did two years ago.

“But this occasions much strife.” True; but they make the strife who do not attend the service. Let them quietly either come or stay away, and there will be no strife at all.

“But those that attend say, those that do not are fallen from grace.” No, they do not give them a bad word: But they surely will fall from grace, if they do not let them alone who follow their own consciences.

But you “fear this will make way for a total separation from the Church.” You have no ground for this fear. There can be no such separation while I live. Leave to God what may come after.

But, to speak plainly, do not you separate from the Church? Yea, much more than those you blame? Pray, how often have you been at church since Christmas? twelve times in twelve weeks? And how long have you been so fond of the Church? Are you fond of it at all? Do not you go oftener to a Dissenting meeting than either to St. Patrick’s or your parish-church? My dear brethren, you and I have but a short time to stay together. *“My race*

of glory is run, and race of shame; and I shall shortly be with those that rest." Therefore, as one that loves you well, and has loved you long, I advise you, in the presence and in the fear of God, 1. Either quietly attend the Sunday service, or quietly refrain from it; then there will be no strife at all. Now make the strife of which you complain. 2. Make not this a pretence for being weary of well-doing. Do not, for so poor a reason, withdraw your subscription from the School or the Preachers. What a miserable revenge would this be! Never let it be said that my friend A—— K——, that brother D——, or B——, were capable of this! From this hour, let this idle strife be buried in eternal oblivion. Talk not of it any more. If it be possible, think not of it any more. Rather think, "The Judge standeth at the door;" let us prepare to meet our God!

JOHN WESLEY.

---



---

TO

THE PRINTER OF THE DUBLIN CHRONICLE.

---

SIR,

LONDONERRY, *June 2, 1789.*

1. As soon as I was gone from Dublin, the "Observer" came forth, only with his face covered. Afterwards he came out under another name, and made a silly defence for me, that he might have the honour of answering it. His words are smoother than oil, and flow (who can doubt it?) from mere love both to me and the people.

2. But what does this smooth, candid writer endeavour to prove, with all the softness and good humour imaginable? Only this point, (to express it in plain English,) that I am a double-tongued knave, an old crafty hypocrite, who have used religion merely for a cloak, and have worn a mask for these fifty years, saying one thing and meaning another.

A bold charge this, only it happens that matter of fact contradicts it from the beginning to the end.

3. In my youth I was not only a member of the Church of England, but a bigot to it, believing none but the mem-

bers of it to be in a state of salvation. I began to abate of this violence in 1729. But still I was as zealous as ever, observing every point of Church discipline, and teaching all my pupils so to do. When I was abroad, I observed every rule of the Church, even at the peril of my life. I knew not what might be the consequence of repelling the first Magistrate's niece from the sacrament, considering, on the one hand, the power lodged in his hands, on the other, the violence of his temper, shown by his declaration, "I have drawn the sword, and I will never sheathe it till I have satisfaction."

4. I was exactly of the same sentiment when I returned from America. I attended St. Paul's church, and advised all our society either to attend there every Sunday, or at their several parish-churches. In the year 1743 I published the Rules of the Society; one of which was, that all the members thereof should constantly attend the church and sacrament. We had then a large society at Newcastle-upon-Tyne; but one of the members totally left it after a few months, "Because," said he, "they are mere Church-of-England men."

5. About the year 1744 a Clergyman offered me a chapel in West-street, Seven Dials, (formerly a French church,) and I began to officiate there on Sunday mornings and evenings: We did the same (my brother and I alternately) soon after at the French church in Spitalfields, as soon as it came into our hands. This we continued from that time; and no one in England ever thought or called it leaving the Church. It was never esteemed so by Archbishop Potter, with whom I had the happiness of conversing freely; nor by Archbishop Secker, who was thoroughly acquainted with every step we took; as was likewise Dr. Gibson, then Bishop of London; and that great man, Bishop Lowth. Nor did any of these four venerable men ever blame me for it, in all the conversations I had with them. Only Archbishop Potter once said, "Those gentlemen are irregular; but they have done good, and I pray God to bless them."

6. It may be observed, that all this time, if my brother or I were ill, I desired one of our other Preachers, though not ordained, to preach in either of the chapels, after reading part of the Church Prayers. This both my brother and I judged would endear the Church Prayers to them; whereas,

if they were used wholly to extemporary prayer, they would naturally contract a kind of contempt, if not aversion, to forms of prayer: So careful were we, from the beginning, to prevent their leaving the Church.

7. It is true, Bishop Gibson once said, (but it was before I had ever seen him,) "Why do not these gentlemen leave the Church?" The answer was very ready: "Because they dare not: They do not leave the Church, because they believe it is their duty to continue therein."

8. When the Rev. Mr. Edward Smyth came to live in Dublin, he earnestly advised me to leave the Church; meaning thereby, (as all sensible men do,) to renounce all connexion with it, to attend the service of it no more, and to advise all our societies to take the same steps. I judged this to be a matter of great importance, and would therefore do nothing hastily; but referred it to the body of Preachers, then met in Conference. We had several meetings, in which he proposed all his reasons for it at large. They were severally considered and answered, and we all determined not to leave the Church.

9. A year ago, Dr. Coke began officiating at our chapel in Dublin. This was no more than had been done in London for between forty and fifty years. Some persons immediately began to cry out, "This is leaving the Church, which Mr. Wesley has continually declared he would never do." And I declare so still. But I appeal to all the world, I appeal to common sense, I appeal to the "Observer" himself, could I mean hereby, "I will not have service in church hours," when I was doing it all the time? Could I, even then, deny that I had service in church hours? No; but I denied, and do deny still, that this is leaving the Church, either in the sense of Bishop Gibson, or of Mr. Smyth at the Dublin Conference! Yet by this outcry many well-meaning people were frighted well-nigh out of their senses.

10. But see the consequences of having Sunday service here. See the confusion this occasioned! Some time since, while a popular Preacher was preaching at Leeds, one cried out, "Fire! fire!" The people took fright,—some leaped over the gallery; and several legs and arms were broken. But upon whom were these consequences to be charged? Not on the Preacher, but on him that made the outcry. Apply this to the present case. I have kindled no more

fire in Dublin, than I did in London. It is the "Observer" and a few other mischief-makers who fright the people out of their senses; and they must answer to God for the consequence.

11. This is my answer to them that trouble me, and will not let my grey hairs go down to the grave in peace. I am not a man of duplicity: I am not an old hypocrite, a double-tongued knave. More than forty years I have frequented Ireland. I have wished to do some good there. I now tell a plain tale, that "the good which is in me may not be evil spoken of." I have no temporal end to serve. I seek not the honour that cometh of men. It is not for pleasure that, at this time of life, I travel three or four thousand miles a year. It is not for gain.

No foot of land do I possess,  
 No cottage in this wilderness;  
 A poor way-faring man,  
 I lodge awhile in tents below,  
 Or gladly wander to and fro,  
 Till I my Canaan gain.

JOHN WESLEY.

P.S. At the desire of a friend, I add a few words in answer to one or two other objections.

First. When I said, "I believe I am a scriptural Bishop," I spoke on Lord King's supposition, that Bishops and Presbyters are essentially one order.

Secondly. I did desire Mr. Myles to assist me in delivering the cup. Now, be this right or wrong, how does it prove the point now in question,—that I leave the Church? I ask, 2. What law of the Church forbids this? and, 3. What law of the primitive church? Did not the Priest, in the primitive church, send both the bread and wine to the sick by whom he pleased, though not ordained at all?

Thirdly. The "Observer" affirms, "To say you will not leave the Church, meaning thereby all the true believers in England, is trifling." Certainly; but I do not mean so when I say, "I will not leave the Church." I mean, unless I see more reason for it than I ever yet saw, I will not leave the Church of England as by law established while the breath of God is in my nostrils



## FARTHER THOUGHTS

o11

### SEPARATION FROM THE CHURCH.

---

1. FROM a child I was taught to love and reverence the Scripture, the oracles of God ; and, next to these, to esteem the primitive Fathers, the writers of the three first centuries. Next after the primitive church, I esteemed our own, the Church of England, as the most scriptural national Church in the world. I therefore not only assented to all the doctrines, but observed all the rubric in the Liturgy ; and that with all possible exactness, even at the peril of my life.

2. In this judgment, and with this spirit, I went to America, strongly attached to the Bible, the primitive church, and the Church of England, from which I would not vary in one jot or tittle on any account whatever. In this spirit I returned, as regular a Clergyman as any in the three kingdoms ; till, after not being permitted to preach in the churches, I was constrained to preach in the open air.

3. Here was my first irregularity ; and it was not voluntary, but constrained. The second was extemporary prayer. This, likewise, I believed to be my bounden duty, for the sake of those who desired me to watch over their souls. I could not in conscience refrain from it ; neither from accepting those who desired to serve me as sons in the Gospel.

4. When the people joined together, simply to help each other to heaven, increased by hundreds and thousands, still they had no more thought of leaving the Church than of leaving the kingdom. Nay, I continually and earnestly cautioned them against it ; reminding them that we were a part of the Church of England, whom God had raised up, not only to save our own souls, but to enliven our neighbours, those of the Church in particular. And at the first meeting of all our Preachers in Conference, in June, 1744,

I exhorted them to keep to the Church; observing, that this was our peculiar glory,—not to form any new sect, but, abiding in our own Church, to do to all men all the good we possibly could.

5. But as more Dissenters joined with us, many of whom were much prejudiced against the Church, these, with or without design, were continually infusing their own prejudices into their brethren. I saw this, and gave warning of it from time to time, both in private and in public; and in the year 1758 I resolved to bring the matter to a fair issue. So I desired the point might be considered at large, whether it was expedient for the Methodists to leave the Church. The arguments on both sides were discussed for several days; and at length we agreed, without a dissenting voice, “It is by no means expedient that the Methodists should leave the Church of England.”

6. Nevertheless, the same leaven continued to work in various parts of the kingdom. The grand argument (which in some particular cases must be acknowledged to have weight) was this: “The Minister of the parish wherein we dwell neither lives nor preaches the Gospel. He walks in the way to hell himself, and teaches his flock to do the same. Can you advise them to attend his preaching?” I cannot advise them to it. “What, then, can they do on the Lord’s day, suppose no other church be near? Do you advise them to go to a Dissenting meeting, or to meet in their own preaching-house?” Where this is really the case, I cannot blame them if they do. Although, therefore, I earnestly oppose the general separation of the Methodists from the Church, yet I cannot condemn such a partial separation in this particular case. I believe, to separate thus far from these miserable wretches, who are the scandal of our Church and nation, would be for the honour of our Church, as well as to the glory of God.

7. And this is no way contrary to the profession which I have made above these fifty years. I never had any design of separating from the Church: I have no such design now. I do not believe the Methodists in general design it, when I am no more seen. I do, and will do, all that is in my power to prevent such an event. Nevertheless, in spite of all that I can do, many of them will separate from it: Although I am apt to think, not one half, perhaps not a third, of them.

These will be so bold and injudicious as to form a separate party; which, consequently, will dwindle away into a dry, dull, separate party. In flat opposition to these, I declare once more, that I live and die a member of the Church of England; and that none who regard my judgment or advice will ever separate from it.

JOHN WESLEY.

LONDON,  
*December 11, 1789.*

---

## THE CASE OF BIRSTAL HOUSE.

RECOMMENDED TO THE SERIOUS CONSIDERATION OF THE  
PEOPLE CALLED METHODISTS.

---

1. As many persons have spoke much upon this subject without well understanding it, I believe it is my duty to throw all the light upon it that I can. And in order to this, I will,

First, Endeavour to state the case;

Secondly, Argue a little upon it.

2. In order to state the case fully, I must look back to ancient times. As soon as the heat of persecution was over, and Christians increased in goods, some built preaching-houses, afterwards called churches. In following times those that built them were termed Patrons, and appointed whom they pleased to preach in them. And when they annexed lands to them, they disposed of house and lands together.

3. At the Reformation many rich men built new churches, and disposed of them at their pleasure. And when many Presbyterians and Independents in England built preaching-houses, they placed in them whom they pleased; which power they left to their heirs.

4. I built the first Methodist preaching-house, so called, at Bristol, in the year 1739. And knowing no better, I suffered the deed of trust to be drawn up in the Presbyterian form. But Mr. Whitefield, hearing of it, wrote me a

warm letter, asking, "Do you consider what you do? If the Trustees are to name the Preachers, they may exclude even you from preaching in the house you have built! Pray let this deed be immediately cancelled." To this the Trustees readily agreed. Afterwards I built the preaching-houses in Kingswood, and at Newcastle-upon-Tyne. But none beside myself had any right to appoint the Preachers in them.

5. About this time a preaching-house was built at Birstal, by contributions and collections. And John Nelson, knowing no better, suffered a deed to be drawn in the Presbyterian form, giving twelve or thirteen persons power not only of placing, but even of displacing, the Preachers at their pleasure. Had Mr. Whitefield or I known this, we should have insisted on its either being cancelled, like that at Bristol, or so altered as to insure the application of the house to the purpose for which it was built, without giving so dangerous a power to any Trustees whatever.

6. But a considerable difficulty still remained. As the houses at Bristol, Kingswood, and Newcastle were my property, a friend reminded me, that they were all liable to descend to my heirs. (Pray let those consider this, who are so fond of having preaching-houses vested in them and their heirs for ever!) I was struck, and immediately procured a form to be drawn up by three of the most eminent Counsellors in London, whereby not only these houses, but all the Methodist houses hereafter to be built, might be settled on such a plan, as would secure them, so far as human prudence could, from the heirs of the proprietors, for the purpose originally intended.

7. In process of time the preaching-house at Birstal became abundantly too small for the congregation. It was then proposed to build a new one. And a new deed was prepared, which, like the old, gave a few persons the power of placing and displacing the Preachers at their pleasure. This was brought and read to me at Daw-green. As soon as ever I heard it, I vehemently objected to it, and positively refused to sign it. I now thought I had done with it: But in the evening, several persons came again, and importunately urged me to sign it; averring that it was the same in effect with the old deed, and the old deed could not be altered. Not adverting, that it was altered in the new one, I at length unwillingly complied.

But, observe: Whether I did right or wrong herein, or in any other instance, it does not affect the merits of the cause. The dwelling upon this is mere finesse, to divert us from the one question, "Is that deed right or wrong?"

8. These things were mentioned at the ensuing Conference; and it was asked, "What can be done?" The answer was, "If the Trustees still refuse to settle it on the Methodist plan; if they still insist, that they will have the right of placing and displacing the Preachers at their pleasure, then,

"First, Let a plain state of the case be drawn up.

"Secondly, Let a collection be made throughout England, in order to purchase ground, and build another preaching-house, as near the present as may be."

9. This I take to be a plain state of the case, separating it from all unimportant circumstances, of what this or the other person said or did, all which only puzzle the cause. Now this, neither more nor less, being the naked fact, I proceed, secondly, to argue a little upon it.

If it be asked, "Why should not the Birstal preaching-house, or any other, be settled according to that deed?" I answer, Because whenever the Trustees exert their power of "placing and displacing Preachers," then,

1. Itinerant preaching is no more. When the Trustees in any place have found and fixed a Preacher they like, the rotation of Preachers is at an end; at least, till they are tired of their favourite Preacher, and so turn him out.

2. While he stays, is not the bridle in his mouth? How dares he speak the full and the whole truth, since, whenever he displeases the Trustees, he is liable to lose his bread? How much less will he dare to put a Trustee, though ever so ungodly, out of the society?

If you say, "But though they have this power, they will not exert it. They never have exerted it at Birstal." Reason good; because they have it not till my death. And if they had, prudence, if not gratitude, would restrain them till I am out of the way. But it does not follow, that neither they nor their heirs will exert it by and by.

3. But suppose any beside the Conference (who as long as they subsist, will be the most impartial judges) name the Preachers, should it be thirty or forty men, or the whole society? Nay, why not the entire congregation; or at least all the subscribers?

4. The power of the Trustees is greater than that of any nobleman; yea, or of the King himself. Where he is Patron, he can put in a Preacher, but he cannot put him out.

But you ask, "Since this power will not commence till your death, why should you oppose it? Why should not you keep yourself out of the broil, and let them fight it out when you are at rest? Why should you pull an old house upon your own head, when you are just going out of the world? Peace be in your days. Why should you take upon yourself the burden which you may leave to your successors?"

I answer, In this very respect I have an advantage which my successors cannot have. Every one sees, I am not pleading my own cause; I have already all that I contend for. No; I am pleading for Mr. Taylor, Mr. Bradburn, Mr. Benson, and for every other Travelling Preacher, that you may be as free, after I am gone hence, as you are now I am at your head; that you may never be liable to be turned out of any or all of our houses, without any reason given, but that so is the pleasure of twenty or thirty men.

I say, "any;" for I see no sufficient reason for giving up any house in England. Indeed, if one were given up, more would follow: It would be "as the letting out of the water."

I insist upon that point, and let everything else go: No Methodist Trustees, if I can help it, shall, after my death, any more than while I live, have the power of placing and displacing the Preachers.

Observe: "Placing and displacing the Preachers!" This is the one point. Do not ramble from the question. Do not puzzle it by a multitude of words. If the Trustees will not give it up, we must proceed according to the Minute of the Conference.

"But why should we not wait till another Conference?"

First. Because that will not alter the merits of the cause. To lodge the power of placing and displacing the Preachers in Trustees, would be as wrong then as it is now.

Secondly. Because you cannot insure my life till another Conference. Therefore, whatever is done, should be done quickly.

"But then," it is said, "you occasion endless strife, animosity, confusion, and destroy the work of God." No; not I. It is these Trustees that occasion all the strife,

animosity, and confusion, by insisting upon a right to place and displace Preachers. I go on in the old way, as I did at Bristol, Kingswood, and Newcastle. It is they, that by obstinately going out of it hinder, yea, destroy, the work of God. And I charge them with the blood of all those souls that are destroyed by this contention. It is they that do the wrong, that will place and displace Preachers, who bawl and pour out bitter words. But let them take care; for God heareth. And He will arise and maintain His own cause!

LONDON,

JOHN WESLEY.

*Reprinted, January 12, 1788.*

## A LETTER TO THE METHODIST PREACHERS.

(CIRCULAR.)

REDRUTH, *August 23, 1789.*

SOME years since, Mr. Valton wrote to me from Yorkshire, informing me there was great want of a larger preaching-house at Dewsbury, and desiring leave to make subscriptions and collections, in order to build one. I encouraged him to make them. Money was subscribed and collected, and the house built, which the Trustees promised to settle in the usual form. But when it was finished, they refused to settle it, unless a power was given them to displace any Preacher they should object to.

After all possible means had been used to bring them to a better mind, the case was referred to the Conference; and it was unanimously agreed to build another house, as soon as possible, that the flock might not be scattered.

I therefore entreat every one that wishes well to Methodism, especially to the itinerant plan, to exert himself on this important occasion, that a work so absolutely necessary may be finished as soon as possible. I say, absolutely necessary; for if the Trustees of houses are to displace Preachers, then itinerancy is at an end.

I am, my dear brother,

Your affectionate brother and servant for Christ's sake,

JOHN WESLEY.

N.B. Make this collection immediately. (Lose not one day.)

# THE CASE OF DEWSBURY HOUSE.

RECOMMENDED TO THE CONSIDERATION OF THE PEOPLE  
CALLED METHODISTS.

[PRINTED IN THE YEAR 1790.]

---

1. **WHEN**, about fifty years ago, one and another young man offered to serve me as sons in the Gospel, it was on these terms,—that they would labour where I appointed; otherwise, we should have stood in each other's way. Here began itinerant preaching with us. But we were not the first itinerant Preachers in England: Twelve were appointed by Queen Elizabeth, to travel continually, in order to spread true religion through the kingdom; and the office and salary still continues, though their work is little attended to. Mr. Milner, late Vicar of Chipping in Lancashire, was one of them.

2. As the number of Preachers increased, it grew more and more difficult to fix the places where each should labour from time to time. I have often wished to transfer this work of stationing the Preachers once a year, to one or more of themselves. But none were willing to accept of it: So I must bear the burden till my warfare shall be accomplished.

3. When preaching-houses were built, they were vested immediately in Trustees, who were to see that those preached in them whom I sent, and none else; this, we conceived, being the only way whereby itinerancy could be regularly established. But lately, after a new preaching-house had been built at Dewsbury, in Yorkshire, by the subscriptions and contributions of the people, (the Trustees alone not contributing one quarter of what it cost,) they seized upon the house, and, though they had promised the contrary, positively refused to settle it on the Methodist plan; requiring, that they should have a power of refusing any Preacher whom they disliked. If so, I have no power of stationing the Dewsbury Preachers; for the Trustees may object to whom they please. And themselves, not I, are finally to judge of those objections.



4. Observe, here is no dispute about the right of houses at all. I have no right to any preaching-house in England. What I claim is, a right of stationing the Preachers. This these Trustees have robbed me of in the present instance. Therefore, only one of these two ways can be taken; either to sue for this house, or to build another: We prefer the latter, being the most friendly way.

I beg therefore, my brethren, for the love of God; for the love of me, your old and well-nigh worn-out servant; for the love of ancient Methodism, which, if itinerancy is interrupted, will speedily come to nothing; for the love of justice, mercy, and truth, which are all so grievously violated by the detention of this house; that you will set your shoulders to the necessary work. Be not straitened in your own bowels. We have never had such a cause before. Let not then unkind, unjust, fraudulent men, have cause to rejoice in their bad labour. This is a common cause. Exert yourselves to the utmost. I have subscribed fifty pounds. So has Dr. Coke. The Preachers have done all they could. O let them that have much give plenteously! Perhaps this is the last labour of love I may have occasion to recommend to you: Let it then stand as one more monument of your real gratitude to,

My dear brethren,

Your old, affectionate brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

#### FOUR LETTERS TO MR. JOHN ATLAY.\*

---

MY DEAR BROTHER, PEMBROKE, *August 23, 1788.*

IF you are persuaded that such a promise (which is the whole and sole cause of the breach at Dewsbury) is binding, &c., you must follow your persuasion. You will have blame enough from other persons: My hand shall not

\* After labouring as an Itinerant Preacher about nine years, Mr. Atlay was appointed Mr. Wesley's Book-Steward in London; and when he had sustained that office fifteen years he renounced his connexion with Mr. Wesley, and became the Minister of the chapel at Dewsbury, which had been unjustly alienated by the Trustees from the Methodist body.—EDIT.

be upon you. If I can do you good, I will; but shall certainly do you no harm. George Whitfield is the person I choose to succeed you: I wish you would teach him as much as you can without delay.

I am, with kind love to S. Atlay,  
Your affectionate brother.

BRISTOL, *August 31, 1788.*

I PRAY, brother Atlay, do not serve me so. If you will not serve me yourself, do not hinder others from serving me: Do not fright George Whitfield from it; but encourage him to it; and instruct him as quick as possible. My death is nothing to the purpose. I have now nothing to do with the Dewsbury people: Go with them, and serve them; but I am still

Your affectionate brother.

MY DEAR BROTHER, BRISTOL, *September 4, 1788.*

I WAS once afraid that you had dissuaded George Whitfield from taking charge of the books; but I can take your word. Now I am fully satisfied that you did not; and I believe you will teach him everything relating to that charge. But one thing is much upon my mind: I wish you would hire one or two proper persons, and take an inventory of all the books that are either in the shop or under the chapel. This will be worth all the pains: Then George will know what he has to do.

I am  
Your affectionate brother.

MY DEAR BROTHER, *September 24, 1788.*

FROM the time that you gave me warning of quitting my service, and informed me you was determined to stay no longer with me (unless upon impossible conditions) than the 25th instant, I resolved to say nothing more or less about it, but to let the matter go as it would go. Whether you made a wise choice in preferring your present to your former station, we shall see, if you and I should live two or three years longer. Meantime,

I am, as ever,  
Your affectionate brother,  
JOHN WESLEY.

P.S. I say nothing about you to the people of Bristol.

## A WORD TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN.

---

IN August, 1788, Mr. Atlay wrote me word I must look out for another servant, for he would go to Dewsbury on September the 25th. So far was I from bidding him go, that I knew nothing of it till that hour. But I then told him, "Go and serve them;" seeing I found he would serve me no longer.

He sent me word that I had in London, £13,751. 18s. 5d. stock in books. Desiring to know exactly, I employed two booksellers to take an account of my stock. The account they brought in, October 31, 1788, was,

"Value of stock, errors excepted, . . . £4,827. 10s. 3¼d.

"JOHN PARSONS,

"THOMAS SCOLLICK."

Why did John Atlay so wonderfully overrate my stock? Certainly to do me honour in the eyes of the world.

I never approved of his going to Dewsbury; but I submitted to what I could not help.

With regard to Dewsbury house, there never was any dispute about the property of preaching-houses,—that was an artful misrepresentation; but merely the appointing of Preachers in them.

If John Atlay has a mind to throw any more dirt upon me, I do not know I shall take any pains to wipe it off.\* I have but a few days to live; and I wish to spend those in peace.

JOHN WESLEY.

LONDON,  
CITY-ROAD, *February 25, 1790.*

\* This appears to refer to a weak and disingenuous pamphlet published by Mr. Atlay, about two months before, on the subject of his separation from his old friends; and in which he introduced some unjust reflections upon Mr. Wesley.—EDIT.

# A SHORT ACCOUNT

OF

## THE SCHOOL IN KINGSWOOD, NEAR BRISTOL.

[PUBLISHED IN THE YEAR 1768.]

---

1. OUR design is, with God's assistance, to train up children in every branch of useful learning.

2. We teach none but boarders. These are taken in, being between the years of six and twelve, in order to be taught reading, writing, arithmetic, English, French, Latin, Greek, Hebrew, history, geography, chronology, rhetoric, logic, ethics, geometry, algebra, physics, music.

3. The school contains eight classes.

In the first class the children read "Instructions for Children," and "Lessons for Children;" and begin learning to write.

In the second class they read "The Manners of the Ancient Christians;" go on in writing; learn the "Short English Grammar;" the "Short Latin Grammar;" read "*Praelectiones Pueriles*;" translate them into English, and the "Instructions for Children" into Latin; part of which they transcribe and repeat.

In the third class they read Dr. Cave's "Primitive Christianity;" go on in writing; perfect themselves in the English and Latin Grammar; read "*Corderii Colloquia Selecta*," and "*Historiae Selectae*;" translate "*Historiae Selectae*" into English, and "Lessons for Children" into Latin; part of which they transcribe and repeat.

In the fourth class they read "The Pilgrim's Progress;" perfect themselves in writing; learn Dilworth's Arithmetic; read Castelleo's Kempis, and Cornelius Nepos; translate Castelleo into English, and "Manners of the Ancient Christians" into Latin; transcribe and repeat select portions of "Moral and Sacred Poems."

In the fifth class they read "The Life of Mr. Halibur-

ton ;" perfect themselves in arithmetic ; read Select Dialogues of Erasmus, Phædrus, and Sallust ; translate Erasmus into English, and " Primitive Christianity " into Latin ; transcribe and repeat select portions of " Moral and Sacred Poems."

In the sixth class they read " The Life of Mr. De Renty," and Kennet's " Roman Antiquities ;" they learn Randal's Geography ; read Cæsar, select parts of Terence and Velleius Paterculus ; translate Erasmus into English, and " The Life of Mr. Haliburton " into Latin ; transcribe and repeat select portions of " Sacred Hymns and Poems."

In the seventh class they read Mr. Law's " Christian Perfection," and Archbishop Potter's " Greek Antiquities ;" they learn "*Bengelii Introductio ad Chronologiam*," with Marshall's " Chronological Tables ;" read Tully's Offices, and Virgil's *Æneid* ; translate Bengelius into English, and Mr. Law into Latin ; learn (those who have a turn for it) to make verses, and the " Short Greek Grammar ;" read the Epistles of St. John ; transcribe and repeat select portions of Milton.

In the eighth class they read Mr. Law's " Serious Call," and Lewis's " Hebrew Antiquities ;" they learn to make themes, and to declaim ; learn Vossius's Rhetoric ; read Tully's Tusculan Questions, and "*Selecta ex Ovidio, Virgilio, Horatio, Juvenale, Persio, Martiale* ;" perfect themselves in the Greek Grammar ; read the Gospels, and six books of Homer's Iliad ; translate Tully into English, and Mr. Law into Latin ; learn the " Short Hebrew Grammar," and read Genesis ; transcribe and repeat "*Selecta ex Virgilio, Horatio, Juvenals*."

4. It is our particular desire, that all who are educated here may be brought up in the fear of God ; and at the utmost distance, as from vice in general, so in particular from idleness and effeminacy. The children therefore of tender parents, so called, (who are indeed offering up their sons and their daughters unto devils,) have no business here ; for the rules will not be broken in favour of any person whatsoever. Nor is any child received unless his parents agree, (1.) That he shall observe all the rules of the house ; and, (2.) That they will not take him from school, no, not a day, till they take him for good and all.

5. The general rules of the house are these :—

First. The children rise at four, winter and summer, and spend the time till five in private; partly in reading, partly in singing, partly in self-examination or meditation, (if capable of it,) and partly in prayer. They at first use a short form, (which is varied continually,) and then pray in their own words.

Secondly. At five they all meet together. From six they work till breakfast; for as we have no play-days, (the school being taught every day in the year but Sunday,) so neither do we allow any time for play on any day: He that plays when he is a child, will play when he is a man.

On fair days they work, according to their strength, in the garden; on rainy days, in the house. Some of them also learn music; and some of the larger will be employed in philosophical experiments. But particular care is taken that they never work alone, but always in the presence of a Master.

We have three Masters: One for teaching reading, and two for the languages.

Thirdly. The school begins at seven, in which languages are taught till nine; and then writing, &c., till eleven. At eleven the children walk or work. At twelve they dine, and then work or sing till one. They diet nearly thus:—

*Breakfast.*—Milk-porridge and water-gruel, by turns.

*Supper.*—Bread and butter or cheese, and milk, by turns.

*Dinner.*—SUNDAY.—Cold roast beef.

MONDAY.—Hashed meat and apple-dumplings.

TUESDAY.—Boiled mutton.

WEDNESDAY.—Vegetables and dumplings.

THURSDAY.—Boiled mutton or beef.

FRIDAY.—Vegetables and dumplings. And so in Lent.

SATURDAY.—Bacon and greens, apple-dumplings.

They drink water at meals: Nothing between meals. On Friday, if they choose it, they fast till three in the afternoon. Experience shows, this is so far from impairing health, that it greatly conduces to it.

Fourthly. From one to four, languages are taught; and then writing, &c., till five. At five begins the hour of private prayer; from six they walk or work till supper; a little before seven the public service begins; at eight they go to bed, the youngest first.

Fifthly. They lodge all in one room, (now in two,) in which a lamp burns all night. Every child lies by himself. A Master lies at each end of the room. All their beds have mattresses on them, not feather-beds.

Sixthly. On Sunday, at six, they dress and breakfast; at seven, learn hymns or poems; at nine, attend the public service; at twelve, dine and sing; at two, attend the public service; and at four, are privately instructed.

6. The method observed in the school is this:—

#### *The First Class.*

Morning, 7. Read. 10. Write till eleven.

Afternoon, 1. Read. 4. Write till five.

#### *The Second Class.*

Morn. 7. Read "The Manners of the Ancient Christians." 8. Learn the English Grammar; when that is ended, the Latin Grammar. 10. Learn to write.

Aftern. 1. Learn to construe and parse *Prælectiones Pueriles*. 4. Translate into English and Latin alternately.

#### *The Third Class.*

Morn. 7. Read "Primitive Christianity." 8. Repeat English and Latin Grammar alternately. 9. Learn Corderius; and when that is ended, *Historiæ Selectæ*. 10. Write.

Aftern. 1. Learn Corderius, and *Historiæ Selectæ*. 4. Translate.

#### *The Fourth Class.*

Morn. 7. Read "The Pilgrim's Progress." 8. Repeat the Grammar. 9. Learn Castellio's Kempis; and when that is ended, Cornelius Nepos. 10. Write; and learn arithmetic.

Aftern. 1. Learn Kempis, and Cornelius Nepos. 4. Translate.

#### *The Fifth Class.*

Morn. 7. Read Mr. Haliburton's Life. 8. Repeat the Grammars. 9. Learn Erasmus; afterwards Phædrus; then Sallust. 10. Learn arithmetic.

Aftern. 1. Learn Erasmus, Phædrus, Sallust. 4. Translate.

*The Sixth Class.*

Morn. 7. Read Mr. De Renty's Life. 8. Repeat the Grammars. 9. Learn Cæsar; afterwards Terence; then Velleius Paterculus. 10. Learn geography.

Aftern. 1. Learn Cæsar, Terence, Paterculus. 3. Read Roman Antiquities. 4. Translate.

*The Seventh Class.*

Morn. 7. Read Mr. Law's "Christian Perfection." 8. MON., WED., FRI.—Learn the Greek Grammar; and read the Greek Testament. TUES., THURS., SAT.—Learn Tully; afterwards Virgil. 10. Learn chronology.

Aftern. 1. Learn Latin and Greek alternately, as in the morning. 3. Read Grecian Antiquities. 4. Translate and make verses alternately.

*The Eighth Class.*

Morn. 7. Read Mr. Law's "Serious Call." 8. MON., THURS.—Latin. TUES., FRI.—Greek. WED., SAT.—Hebrew; and so at one in the afternoons. 10. Learn rhetoric.

Aftern. 3.—Read "Hebrew Antiquities." 4. MON., THURS.—Translate. TUES., FRI.—Make verses. WED.—Make a theme. SAT.—Write a declamation.

All the other classes spend Saturday afternoon in arithmetic, and in transcribing what they learn on Sunday, and repeat on Monday morning.

The price for the board and teaching of a child, including his books, pens, ink, and paper, is fourteen pounds a year, while he is in the school: After he has gone through the school, twenty; and he is then to find his own books.

N.B. The following method may be observed by those who design to go through a course of academical learning:—

## FIRST YEAR.

Read Lowth's English Grammar; Latin, Greek, Hebrew, French Grammars; Cornelius Nepos; Sallust; Cæsar; Tully's Offices; Terence; Phædrus; Æneid; Dilworth; Randal; Bengel; Vossius; Aldrich and Wallis's Logic; Langbaine's Ethics; Hutchinson on the Passions; Spanheim's "Introduction to Ecclesiastical History;" Puffen-



dorf's "Introduction to the History of Europe;" "Moral and Sacred Poems;" Hebrew Pentateuch, with the Notes; Greek Testament,—Matthew to the Acts, with the Notes; Xenophon's Cyrus; Homer's Iliad; Bishop Pearson on the Creed; ten volumes of the "Christian Library;" *Telemaque*.

#### SECOND YEAR.

Look over the Grammars; read Velleius Paterculus; Tusculan Questions; *Excerpta*; "*Vidæ Opera*;" "*Lusus Westmonasteriensis*;" Chronological Tables; Euclid's Elements; Wells's Tracts; Newton's "*Principia*;" Mosheim's "Introduction to Church History;" Usher's "Annals;" Burnet's "History of the Reformation;" Spencer's "Fairy Queen;" Historical Books of the Hebrew Bible; Greek Testament, *ad finem*; *Κύρου Αναβάσις*; Homer's Odyssey; twelve volumes of the "Christian Library;" Ramsay's Cyrus; Racine.

#### THIRD YEAR.

Look over the Grammars; Livy; Suetonius; Tully "*De Finibus*;" "*Musæ Anglicanæ*;" Dr. Burton's "*Poemata*;" Lord Forbes's Tracts; Abridgment of Hutchinson's Works; "Survey of the Wisdom of God in the Creation;" Rollin's "Ancient History;" Hume's "History of England;" Neal's "History of the Puritans;" Milton's Poetical Works; Hebrew Bible,—Job to the Canticles; Greek Testament; Plato's Dialogues; Greek Epigrams; twelve volumes of the "Christian Library;" Pascal; Corneille.

#### FOURTH YEAR.

Look over the Grammars; Tacitus; "*Grotii Historia Belgica*;" Tully "*De Naturâ Deorum*;" "*Prædium Rusticum*;" "*Carmina Quadragesimalia*;" "Philosophical Transactions abridged;" Watts's Astronomy, &c.; "*Compendium Metaphysicæ*;" Watts's Ontology; Locke's Essay; Malebranche; Clarendon's History; Neal's "History of New-England;" Antonio Solis's "History of Mexico;" Shakespeare; rest of the Hebrew Bible; Greek Testament; Epictetus; Marcus Antoninus; *Poetæ Minores*; end the "Christian Library;" "*La Fausseté de les Vertues Humaines*;" *Quesnel sur les Evangiles*.

Whoever carefully goes through this course will be a better scholar than nine in ten of the graduates at Oxford or Cambridge.

---

## A PLAIN ACCOUNT OF KINGSWOOD SCHOOL.

[PRINTED IN THE YEAR 1781.]

---

1. It was remarked concerning one of our poets, "Whenever he wrote, he seemed to take it for granted, that whatever he understood himself all his readers would understand." But this mistake is not peculiar to Mr. Dryden: I have fallen into it abundance of times; supposing, because the thing was so plain to me, it must be so to all mankind. I have fallen into it particularly with regard to the school some time since begun in Kingswood. I have long taken it for granted, that it would be quite sufficient to publish the bare rules of that school, and to set down simply the method therein pursued, in as few words as possible. I supposed the reasons whereon those rules were grounded were not only so strong, but so obvious, that every person of common understanding must discern them as well as myself. However, after above twenty years' trial, I am convinced this was a supposition not to be made. What is as clear to me as the sun at noon-day, is not so clear to every one. At length, therefore, I judged it needful to enlarge a little upon the nature of that institution; to lay down the grounds of those rules, and the reasons of what is peculiar in our method.

2. About forty years ago, one or two tracts upon education fell into my hands, which led me to consider the methods pursued in that great school wherein I had been educated, and in such others as were in the highest repute, particularly those in and near London. I spent many thoughts on the subject, and frequently conversed upon it with some of the most sensible men I knew. A few years after, I had an opportunity of inquiring concerning some of the most celebrated schools in Holland and Germany. But in these, as well as our own, I found a few particulars which I could not approve of.

3. One regarded the situation of them, which itself seemed a circumstance of some importance. The very most of them were placed in a great town; perhaps in the principal town in that country. The inconveniences which naturally attended this were more easy to be discovered than removed. The children, whenever they went abroad, had too many things to engage their thoughts, which ought to be diverted as little as possible from the objects of their learning. And they had too many other children round about them, some of whom they were liable to meet every day, whose example (perhaps their advice too) would neither forward them in learning nor religion. I say, "neither learning nor religion." For if we have any religion ourselves, we certainly desire that our children should have some too. But this they are not likely to have, or retain, if they converse promiscuously with the children in a great town.

4. The promiscuous admission of all sorts of children into a great school, was another circumstance I did not admire. Are children likely (suppose they had it) to retain much religion in a school where all that offer are admitted, however corrupted already, perhaps in principle (though that is not quite so frequent) as well as practice? And what wonder, when, as frequently happens, the parents themselves have no more religion than their ungodly offspring? It may be, they do not desire to have any of their family infected with the plague of virtue. A gentleman removed his son, then at Westminster School, from boarding with my eldest brother, for teaching him the Catechism; telling him, "Sir, I do not want my son to learn religion, but Latin and Greek."

5. But this is no common fault: Generally, heathen parents may meet with heathen schoolmasters. A third inconvenience in many schools is, the Masters have no more religion than the scholars. And if they have little or no religion themselves, we may be well assured they will give themselves little trouble about the religion of the children that are committed to their care. Every part of the nation abounds with Masters of this kind; men who are either uninstructed in the very principles of Christianity, or quite indifferent as to the practice of it, "caring for none of these things." Consequently, they are nothing concerned, whether their scholars are Papists or Protestants, Turks or Christians:

They look upon this as no part of their business ; they take no thought about it.

6. But it is not only with regard to instruction in religion, that most of our great schools are defective. They are defective likewise (which is a fourth objection) with regard to learning ; and that in several respects. In some, the children are taught little or no arithmetic ; in others, little care is taken even of their writing. In many, they learn scarce the elements of geography, and as little of chronology. And even as to the languages, there are some schools of note wherein no Hebrew at all is taught ; and there are exceeding few wherein the scholars are thoroughly instructed even in the Latin and Greek tongues. They are not likely to be ; for there is a capital mistake in their very method of teaching. The books which they read are not well chosen, not so much as with regard to language. The language of them is not standard ; not even in the Latin. Were even this circumstance duly considered, would *Entropius* or *Lucius Florus* have any place among them ? “ O, but I want to give a sketch of the Roman history.” And cannot you do this much better by English authors ? Cannot you give the marrow of Roman history without ruining their style by bad Latin ?

But the sense too of the authors read in many schools is as imperfect as their language. And this betrays an inexcusable negligence in those who teach these empty books. For there is no necessity for it. It is well known there are excellent both Greek and Roman authors, who excel them as much in strength of understanding, as in purity and elegance of style.

Again : In most schools little judgment is shown in the order of the books that are read. Some very difficult ones are read in the lower classes, “ Phædrus’s Fables ” in particular : And some very easy ones are read long after, in utter defiance of common sense.

7. Another fault common in almost all our schools is, the Masters not only take no care to train up their scholars in true religion, but they themselves teach them what is utterly destructive of all religion whatever : They put authors into their hands, that, with all the beauty of language, all the sweetness of expression, instil into their tender minds both obscenity and profaneness ;—Virgil’s *Alexis*, Google lewd

Epigrams of Martial, and the shameless Satires of Juvenal, (even the sixth,) so earnestly recommending sodomy as well as adultery !

*Nonne putas melius, quod tecum pusio dormit ?*

Here you see is the blessed moral ! Nay, in spite of the loud complaint made by St. Austin, fourteen hundred years ago, we read there still of the great god,

*Qui templi cœli summa sonitu concutit,*

coming down from heaven upon that blessed errand,

*Fucum factum mulieri !*

And to this day we retain, for the edification of our children,

*Tonantem et fornicantem Jovem !*

8. After long inquiring, but inquiring in vain, for a school free from these palpable blemishes, at last a thought came into my mind, of setting up a school myself. The first point was, to find a proper situation ; not too far from a great town ; which I saw would be highly inconvenient for a large family : Nor yet too near, and much less in it ; which would have been attended with greater evils. After mature consideration, I chose a spot in the middle of Kingswood, three miles from Bristol. It was quite private, remote from all high roads, on the side of a small hill sloping to the west, sheltered from the east and north, and affording room for large gardens. I built the house capable of containing fifty children, besides Masters and servants ; reserving one room, and a little study, for my own use.

9. I then set myself to procure Masters. And in this respect I had such an advantage as few besides have, in being acquainted with every part of the nation : And yet I found it no easy thing to procure such as I desired ; for I was not satisfied that they had learning sufficient for their several departments, unless they had likewise the fear of God, producing an unblamable conversation. I saw none would answer my intention, but men who were truly devoted to God ; who sought nothing on earth, neither pleasure, nor ease, nor profit, nor the praise of men ; but simply to glorify God, with their bodies and spirits, in the best manner they were capable of.

10. I next considered how to procure proper scholars ;

not any that came to hand, but, if possible, such as had some thoughts of God, and some desire of saving their souls; and such whose parents desired they should not be almost, but altogether, Christians. This was proposed to them before their children came; and, to prevent future misunderstandings, they were desired attentively to read, and seriously to consider, the rules of the school; being assured they would be punctually observed, without any favour or affection. One of these rules was, that "no child shall be admitted after he is twelve years old." The ground of this rule was, a child could not well before that age be rooted either in bad habits or ill principles. But, notwithstanding the strictness of the rules, I had soon as many scholars as I desired; nay, considerably more; for I was afraid of having too many at once, knowing how difficult it was to govern a large number; children being so apt, when many of them are together, to hinder and corrupt one another.

11. Having procured proper Masters, and a sufficient number of children, most of whom were as well inclined as could be expected, our first point was, to answer the design of Christian education, by forming their minds, through the help of God, to wisdom and holiness, by instilling the principles of true religion, speculative and practical, and training them up in the ancient way, that they might be rational, scriptural Christians. This design was expressly mentioned in the "Short Account of the School in Kingswood, near Bristol:"—"It is our particular desire, that all who are educated here may be brought up in the fear of God, and at the utmost distance, as from vice in general, so in particular from softness and effeminacy. The children therefore of tender parents, so called, have no business here; for the rules will not be broken in favour of any person whatever. Nor is any child received, unless his parents agree, (1.) That he shall observe all the rules of the house. And, (2.) That they will not take him from school, no, not for a day, till they take him for good and all." The reasonableness of this uncommon rule is shown by constant experience: For children may unlearn as much in one week, as they have learned in several; nay, and contract a prejudice to exact discipline, which never can be removed.

12. "The general rules of the house are these: The children rise at four, winter and summer." This I know, by constant observation, and by long experience, to be of admirable use, either for preserving a good, or improving a bad, constitution. It is of peculiar service in almost all nervous complaints, both in preventing and in removing them. "They spend the time till five in private; partly in reading, partly in singing, partly in prayer; and in self-examination and meditation, those that are capable of it.

"At five they are all together with the Master. Then till seven they breakfast, and walk or work: For as we have no play-days, the school being taught every day in the year but Sundays, so neither do we allow any time for play on any day. It is a wise German proverb, 'He that plays when he is a boy, will play when he is a man.' If not, why should he learn now what he must unlearn by and by?

"On fair days they work, according to their strength, in the garden; on rainy days, in the house. But particular care is taken that they never work alone, but always in the presence of a Master." This circumstance I adopted from the great school at Jena, in Germany. It lays much labour upon the Masters; but the advantage is worth all the labour. It prevents abundance of evil; (and it is far better to prevent evils, than to punish them;) not only rudeness and ill manners, but many sins that children would easily teach each other.

"The school-hours are from seven to eleven, and from one to five. They drink water at their meals:" (And why do not all wise parents teach their children so to do from their infancy, seeing it is universally allowed to be the best diluter of food which is to be found on earth?) "Nothing between meals," lest they should insensibly contract habits which are neither good for body nor mind. Their food is as simple as possible; two days in a week it is wholly vegetable; every day, at breakfast and supper; if we allow, with Dr. Cheyne, milk to come under that appellation.

"At eight they go to bed, the youngest first. They all lodge in one room, (every child having a bed to himself,) in which a lamp burns all night. A Master lies in the same room." The propriety of these circumstances is so manifest, that it needs not to be enlarged upon. "All their beds have mattresses on them, not feather-beds;" both because they

are more healthy, and because we would keep them at the utmost distance from softness and effeminacy.

13. The things taught here are reading, writing, arithmetic, English, French, Latin, Greek, Hebrew, history, geography, chronology, rhetoric, logic, ethics, geometry, algebra, natural philosophy, and metaphysics.

In teaching the languages, care is taken to read those authors, and those only, who join together the purity, the strength, and the elegance of their several tongues. In particular, no Roman author is read who lived later than the Augustan age. Only to these are added proper *Excerpta* from Juvenal, Persius, and Martial. To supply the place of bad Latin writers of antiquity, a few of the moderns are added. And indeed their writings are not unworthy of the Augustan age; being little inferior, either in purity and beauty of diction, to the best writers of that period.

14. Particular care is taken that nothing immodest or profane be found in any of our authors. One of the most immodest wretches that ever defiled paper, has, nevertheless, stumbled upon this caution:—

*Nū dictu fadum viruque hæc limina tangat,  
Intra quæ puer est.\**

But this is not all. We take care that our books be not only inoffensive, but useful too; that they contain as much strong, sterling sense, and as much genuine morality, as possible; yea, and Christian morality. For what good reason can be assigned why we should leave this out of the account? Why should not even children be taught, so far as they are capable, the oracles of God?

15. Another point which has been carefully considered is, the order in which the books are read. The harder are never learned before the easier: We begin with the plainest of all; next read such as are a little more difficult; and gradually rise to those that are hardest of all, that is, of all those which are read in the classes that belong to the school. The most difficult are reserved for those who have gone through the school, and are employed in academical exercises.

\* This quotation from Juvenal is thus translated by Gifford:—

“ Swift from the roof where youth, Fuscinus, dwell,  
Immodest sights, immodest sounds, expel;  
The place is sacred.”—EDIT.



16. It is true, I have for many years suspended the execution of this part of my design. I was indeed thoroughly convinced, ever since I read Milton's admirable "Treatise on Education," that it was highly expedient for every youth to begin and finish his education at the same place. I was convinced nothing could be more irrational and absurd, than to break this off in the middle, and to begin it again at a different place, and in a quite different method. The many and great inconveniences of this, I knew by sad experience. Yet I had so strong a prejudice in favour of our own Universities, that of Oxford in particular, that I could hardly think of any one's finishing his education without spending some years there. I therefore encouraged all I had any influence over, to enter at Oxford or Cambridge; both of which I preferred, in many respects, to any University I had seen abroad. Add to this, that several of the young persons at Kingswood had themselves a desire of going to the University. I cannot say I am yet quite clear of that prejudice. I love the very sight of Oxford; I love the manner of life; I love and esteem many of its institutions. But my prejudice in its favour is considerably abated: I do not admire it as I once did. And whether I did or not, I am now constrained to make a virtue of necessity. The late remarkable occurrence of the six young students expelled from the University, and the still more remarkable one of Mr. Seagar, refused the liberty of entering into it, (by what rule of prudence, I cannot tell, any more than of law or equity,) have forced me to see, that neither I, nor any of my friends, must expect either favour or justice there. I am much obliged to Dr. Nowell, and the other gentlemen who exerted themselves on either of those transactions, for not holding me longer in suspense, but dealing so frankly and openly. And, blessed be God, I can do all the business which I have in hand without them. Honour or preferment I do not want, any more than a feather in my cap; and I trust most of those who are educated at our school are, and will be, of the same mind. And as to the knowledge of the tongues, and of arts and sciences, with whatever is termed academical learning; if those who have a tolerable capacity for them do not advance more here in three years, than the generality of students at Oxford or Cambridge do in seven, I will bear the blame for ever.

17. It may be objected, "But they cannot have many advantages here which they have at the University: There the Professors are men of eminent learning; and so are also many of the Tutors. There they have public exercises of various kinds; and many others in their several Colleges. Above all, they have there such choice of company as is not to be found elsewhere in all the kingdom."

This is most true. But may I be permitted to ask, (and let calm, sensible men give the answer,) What is the real, intrinsic worth of all these advantages? As to the Professors, how learned soever they are, (and some of them I verily believe yield to none in Europe,) what benefit do nine in ten of the young gentlemen reap from their learning? Truly, they do them neither harm nor good; for they know just nothing about them. They read now and then an ingenious lecture, perhaps three or four times a year. They read it in the public schools: But who hears? Often *vel duo vel nemo*.\* And if two hundred out of two or three thousand students hear, how much are they edified? What do they learn, or what are they likely to learn, which they may not learn as well or better at home? For about fourteen years, except while I served my father's cure, I resided in the University. During much of this time, I heard many of those lectures with all the attention I was master of. And I would ask any person of understanding, considering the manner wherein most of those lectures are read, and the manner wherein they are attended, what would be the loss if they were not read at all? I had almost said, what would be the loss if there were no Professorships in the University? "What! Why, Dr. — would lose three hundred a year!" That is a truth: It cannot be denied.

18. "But the Tutors," you say, "in the several Colleges, supply what is wanting in the Professors." A few of them do: And they are worthy of all honour; they are some of the most useful persons in the nation. They are not only men of eminent learning, but of piety and diligence. But are there not many of another sort, who are utterly unqualified for the work they have undertaken? who are far from being masters even of Latin or Greek? who do not understand the very elements of the sciences; who know no more

\* Either two persons, or none at all.—EDIT.

of logic or metaphysics than of Arabic, or even of that odd thing, religion? Perhaps, if a person who knew this were to examine therein the famous gentleman of Edmund-Hall, who made such a pother with the young men for their want of learning, he might be found as very an ignoramus as Mr. Middleton.

And even with regard to many of those Tutors that have learning, how little are their pupils the better for it? Do they use all diligence to instil into them all the knowledge which they have themselves? Do they lecture them constantly? every day, either in the languages or sciences? Do they instruct them regularly and thoroughly, in logic, ethics, geometry, physics, and metaphysics? Are there not some who, instead of once a day, do not lecture them once a week? perhaps not once a month, if once a quarter? Are not these precious instructors of youth? Indeed, when I consider many of the Tutors who were my contemporaries, (and I doubt they are not much mended since,) I cannot believe the want of such instructors to be an irreparable loss.

19. "Well, but they lose also the advantage of the public exercises, as well as of those in their several Colleges." Alas, what are these exercises? Excuse me if I speak with all simplicity. I never found them any other than an idle, useless interruption of my useful studies. Pray, of what use are the stated disputations for degrees? Are they not mere grimace? trifling beyond expression? And how little preferable to these are most of the disputations in our several Colleges! What worthy subjects are usually appointed for the scholars to dispute upon! And just suitable to the importance of the subject is the management of it. What are the usual examinations for the degree of a Bachelor or Master of Arts? Are they not so horribly, shockingly superficial as none could believe if he did not hear them? What is that, which should be the most solemn exercise we perform, for a Master of Arts' degree? The reading six lectures in the schools, three in natural, and three in moral, philosophy. Reading them to whom? To the walls: It being counted an affront for any one that has ears to hear them. This is literally true: You know it is. But what an execrable insult upon common sense! These are the public exercises: And is it a loss to have nothing to do

with them? to spend all our time in what directly tends to improve us in the most useful knowledge.

20. "However, there is no such choice of company elsewhere as there is at Oxford or Cambridge." That is most true; for the moment a young man sets his foot either in one or the other, he is surrounded with company of all kinds,—except that which would do him good; with loungers and triflers of every sort; (*nequid gravius dicam* ;\*) with men who no more concern themselves with learning than with religion ;

who waste away  
In gentle inactivity the day,

to say the best of them ; for it is to be feared they are not always so innocently employed. It cannot be denied, there is too much choice of this kind of company in every College. There are likewise gentlemen of a better kind : But what chance is there, that a raw young man should find them ? seeing the former will everywhere obtrude themselves upon him, while the latter naturally stand at a distance. Company, therefore, is usually so far from being an advantage to those who enter at either University, that it is the grand nuisance, as well as disgrace, of both ; the pit that swallows unwary youths by thousands. I bless God we have no such choice of company at Kingswood ; nor ever will till my head is laid. There is no trifler, no lounge, no drone there ; much less any drunkard, Sabbath-breaker, or common swearer. Whoever accounts this a disadvantage, may find a remedy at any College in Oxford or Cambridge.

21. "Be this as it may, there are other advantages of which no other place can boast. There are exhibitions, scholarships, studentships, fellowships, canonries ; to say nothing of headships, and professorships, which are not only accompanied with present honour and large emoluments, but open the way to the highest preferments both in Church and State."

All this is indisputably true : I know not who can deny one word of it. Therefore, if any of these advantages, if honour, if money, if preferment in Church or State, be the point at which a young man aims, let him by all means go to the University. But there are still a few, even young

men, in the world, who do not aim at any of these. They do not desire, they do not seek, either honour, or money, or preferment. They leave Collegians to dispute, and bite, and scratch, and scramble for these things. They believe there is another world; nay, and they imagine it will last for ever. Supposing this, they point all their designs and all their endeavours towards it. Accordingly, they pursue learning itself, only with reference to this. They regard it, merely with a view to eternity; purely with a view to know and teach, more perfectly, the truth which God has revealed to man, "the truth which is after godliness," and which they conceive men cannot be ignorant of without hazarding their eternal salvation. This is the only advantage which they seek; and this they can enjoy in as high a degree, in the school or academy at Kingswood, as at any College in the universe.

22. "But whatever learning they have, if they acquired it there, they cannot be ordained;" (you mean, Episcopally ordained; and indeed that ordination we prefer to any other, where it can be had;) "for the Bishops have all agreed together not to ordain any Methodist." O that they would all agree together not to ordain any drunkard, any Sabbath-breaker, any common swearer, any that makes the very name of religion stink in the nostrils of infidels, any that knows no more of the grounds of religion than he does of Greek or Hebrew! But I doubt that fact. I cannot easily believe that all the Bishops have made such an agreement. Could I be sure they had, I should think it my duty to return them my sincerest thanks. Pity they had not done it ten years ago, and I should not have lost some of my dearest friends. However, I am extremely obliged, if they have agreed to prevent my losing any more the same way; if they have blocked up the door through which several others were likely to run away from me.

23. I should not wonder if there was a general agreement against those who have been so often described as both knaves and madmen. Meantime, I can only say, as a much greater man said, *Hier stehe ich: Gott hilf mich!* By His help I have stood for these forty years, among the children of men, whose tongues are set on fire, who shoot out their arrows, even bitter words, and think therein they do God service. Many of these are already gone to give an

account to the Judge of quick and dead. I did not expect to have stayed so long behind them ; but "good is the will of the Lord." If it were possible, I should be glad, for my few remaining days, to live peaceably with all men : I do as much as lieth in me, in order to this. I do not willingly provoke any man. I go as quietly on my way as I can. But, quietly or unquietly, I must go on ; for a dispensation of the Gospel is committed to me ; and woe is me if I preach not the Gospel. I am convinced that I am a debtor to all men, and that it is my bounden duty

To rush through every open door,  
And cry, "Sinners, behold the Lamb."

Now, especially, I have no time to lose : If I slacked my pace, my grey hairs would testify against me. I have nothing to fear, I have nothing to hope for, here ; only to finish my course with joy.

Happy, if with my latest breath  
I might but gasp His name,  
Preach Him to all, and cry in death,  
"Behold, behold the Lamb !"

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## REMARKS

OR

## THE STATE OF KINGSWOOD SCHOOL.

1783.

My design in building the house at Kingswood was, to have therein a Christian family ; every member whereof, children excepted, should be alive to God, and a pattern of all holiness.

Here it was that I proposed to educate a few children according to the accuracy of the Christian model. And almost as soon as we began, God gave us a token for good ; four of the children receiving a clear sense of pardon.

But at present the school does not in anywise answer the design of the institution, either with regard to religion or learning.

The children are not religious. They have not the power, and hardly the form, of religion. Neither do they improve in learning better than at other schools: No, nor yet so well.

Insomuch that some of our friends have been obliged to remove their children to other schools.

And no wonder that they improve so little either in religion or learning; for the rules of the school are not observed at all.

All in the house ought to rise, take their three meals, and go to bed, at a fixed hour. But they do not.

The children ought never to be alone, but always in the presence of a Master. This is totally neglected; in consequence of which they run up and down the wood, and mix, yea, fight, with the colliers' children.

They ought never to play. But they do, every day; yea, in the school.

Three maids are sufficient. Now there are four; and but one, at most, truly pious.

How may these evils be remedied, and the school reduced to its original plan? It must be mended, or ended; for no school is better than the present school.

Can any be a Master that does not rise at five, observe all the rules, and see that others observe them?

There should be three Masters, and an Usher, chiefly to be with the children out of school.

The Head Master should have nothing to do with temporal things.

# A SHORT HISTORY

OF

## THE PEOPLE CALLED METHODISTS.\*

---

1. As no other person can be so well acquainted with Methodism, so called, as I am, I judge it my duty to leave behind me, for the information of all candid men, as clear an account of it as I can. This will contain the chief circumstances that occurred for upwards of fifty years, related in the most plain and artless manner, before Him, whose I am, and whom I serve.

I do this the rather, because, under the article of heretics, Dr. Maclaine, in his Chronological table; is pleased to place Mr. Whitefield and me. Mr. Whitefield has given a large account of himself: And so indeed have I; but as that account is too large to be soon read over, it may be a satisfaction to many serious persons to see it contracted into a narrower compass. Those who desire to have a fuller account of these things may at their leisure read all my Journals.

It will easily be observed, that I nearly confine myself to the things of which I was an eye or ear witness. If any wish to be more largely informed of other things, they may consult the Arminian Magazine.

2. In November, 1729, at which time I came to reside at Oxford, my brother and I, and two young gentlemen more, agreed to spend three or four evenings in a week together. (Works, Vol. I., page 6, and sequel.) On Sunday evening we read something in divinity; on other nights, the Greek or Latin classics. In the following summer, we were

\* This History is, in the main, an abridgment of Mr. Wesley's Journal, with occasional remarks. It was appended to his "Concise History of the Church." Dr. Maclaine, whose name is mentioned in the first paragraph, was the translator of "Mosheim's Ecclesiastical History;" and in the Appendix to that work, placed the names of Messrs. Wesley and Whitefield in the list of heretics who had infested the church.—EDIT.



desired to visit the prisoners in the Castle ; and we were so well satisfied with our conversation there, that we agreed to visit them once or twice a week. Soon after, we were desired to call upon a poor woman in the town that was sick ; and in this employment too, we believed it would be worth while to spend an hour or two in every week. Being now joined by a young gentleman of Merton College, who willingly took part in the same exercises, we all agreed to communicate as often as we could ; (which was then once a week at Christ Church ;) and to do what service we could to our acquaintance, the prisoners, and two or three poor families in the town.

3. In April, 1732, Mr. Clayton, of Brazenose College, began to meet with us. It was by his advice that we began to observe the fasts of the ancient church, every Wednesday and Friday. Two or three of his pupils, one of my brother's, two or three of mine, and Mr. Broughton, of Exeter College, desired likewise to spend six evenings in a week with us, from six to nine o'clock ; partly in reading and considering a chapter of the Greek Testament, and partly in close conversation. To these were added, the next year, Mr. Ingham, with two or three other gentlemen of Queen's College ; then Mr. Hervey ; and, in the year 1735, Mr. George Whitefield. I think, at this time, we were fourteen or fifteen in number, all of one heart and of one mind.

4. Having now obtained what I had long desired, a company of friends that were as my own soul, I set up my rest, being fully determined to live and die in this sweet retirement. But in spring, 1735, I was suddenly called to attend my dying father, who, a little before his death, desired me to present a book he had just finished, to Queen Caroline. Almost as soon as I returned to Oxford, I was obliged on this account to go to London, where I was strongly solicited to go over to Georgia, in order to preach to the Indians. This, at first, I peremptorily refused ; but many providential incidents followed, which at length constrained me to alter my resolution : So that on October 14, 1735, Mr. Ingham, Mr. Delamotte, my brother and I, embarked for America. (Page 17.) We were above three months on board, during which time our common way of living was this : From four in the morning till five, each of us used private prayer. From five to seven, we read the

Bible together. At seven, we breakfasted. At eight was the public service. From nine to twelve, I learned German; Mr. Delamotte, Greek; my brother wrote sermons; and Mr. Ingham instructed the children. At twelve, we met together. About one, we dined. The time from dinner to four, we spent in reading to those of whom each of us had taken charge, or in speaking to them severally, as need required. At four, were the Evening Prayers; when either the Second Lesson was explained, (as it always was in the morning,) or the children were catechised and instructed before the congregation. From five to six, we again used private prayer. From six to seven, I read in our cabin to two or three of the passengers; (we had eighty English on board;) and each of my brethren to a few more in theirs. At seven, I joined with the Germans (of whom we had twenty-six on board) in their public service, while Mr. Ingham was reading between the decks to as many as desired to hear. At eight, we met again, to instruct and exhort each other; and between nine and ten went to bed.

5. Sunday, March 7, 1736, finding there was not yet any opportunity of going to the Indians, I entered upon my ministry at Savannah, officiating at nine, at twelve, and in the afternoon. (Page 27.) On the week-days I read Prayers, and expounded the Second Lesson, beginning at five in the morning and seven in the evening. Every Sunday and holiday I administered the Lord's supper. My brother followed the same rule, whether he was at Frederica or Savannah. Sunday, April 4, I embarked for Frederica, hearing my brother was ill; and brought him with me to Savannah, on Tuesday the 20th.

I now advised the serious part of the congregation to form themselves into a sort of little society, and to meet once or twice a week, in order to instruct, exhort, and reprove one another. And out of these I selected a smaller number, for a more intimate union with each other; in order to which I met them together at my house every Sunday in the afternoon.

6. Monday, May 10, I began visiting my parishioners in order, from house to house; for which I set apart the time when they could not work, because of the heat, namely, from twelve to three in the afternoon.

Monday, July 26, my brother, not having his health, left

Savannah, in order to embark for England. (Page 39.) Saturday, February 26, 1737, Mr. Ingham set out for England. (Page 45.) By him I wrote to Dr. Bray's associates, who had sent a parochial library to Savannah. It is expected of the Ministers who receive these, to send an account to their benefactors of the method they use in catechising the children, and instructing the youth of their respective parishes. Part of my letter was:—

“Our general method is this: A young gentleman who came with me teaches between thirty and forty children to read, write, and cast accounts. Twice a day he catechises the lowest class. In the evening he instructs the larger children. On Saturday I catechise them all; as also on Sunday before the Evening Service; and in the church, immediately after the Second Lesson, a select number of them having repeated the Catechism, and been examined in some part of it, I endeavour to explain at large, and to enforce that part both on them and the congregation.

“After the Evening Service, as many of my parishioners as desire it, meet at my house, (as they do also on Wednesday evening,) and spend about an hour in prayer, singing, and mutual exhortation. A small number (mostly those who design to communicate the next day) meet here on Saturday evening; and a few of these come to me on the other evenings, and pass half an hour in the same employment.”

I cannot but observe that these were the first rudiments of the Methodist societies. But who could then have even formed a conjecture whereto they would grow?

7. But my work at Savannah increased more and more, particularly on the Lord's day. The English service lasted from five to half-hour past six. (Page 60.) The Italian (with a few Vaudois) began at nine. The second service for the English (including the sermon and the holy communion) continued from half an hour past ten, till about half an hour past twelve. The French service began at one. At two, I catechised the children. About three began the English service. After this was ended, I joined with as many as my largest room would hold, in reading, prayer, and singing praise. And about six the service of the Germans began; at which I was glad to be present, not as a teacher, but as a learner.

8. On Friday, December 2, finding there was no possibility of preaching to the Indians, I left Savannah; and going through Carolina, on Saturday, 24th, sailed over Charlestown-bar. After a pleasant voyage, on February 1, 1738, early in the morning, I landed at Deal; and on Friday, 3d, I came once more to London, after an absence of two years and near four months.

Within three weeks following, (while I remained in town at the request of the Trustees for the colony of Georgia,) I preached in many churches, though I did not yet see the nature of saving faith. (Page 85.) But as soon as I saw this clearly, namely, on Monday, March 6, I declared it without delay; and God then began to work by my ministry, as he never had done before.

9. On Monday, May 1, our little society began in London. But it may be observed, the first rise of Methodism, so called, was in November, 1729, when four of us met together at Oxford; the second was at Savannah, in April, 1736, when twenty or thirty persons met at my house; the last was at London, on this day, when forty or fifty of us agreed to meet together every Wednesday evening, in order to a free conversation, begun and ended with singing and prayer. In all our steps we were greatly assisted by the advice and exhortations of Peter Böhler, an excellent young man, belonging to the society commonly called Moravians.

10. In summer I took a journey into Germany, and spent some time at Hernhuth, a little town, where several Moravian families were settled. I doubt such another town is not to be found upon the earth. I believe there was no one therein, young or old, who did not fear God and work righteousness. I was exceedingly comforted and strengthened by the conversation of this lovely people, and returned to England more fully determined to spend my life in testifying the Gospel of the grace of God.

11. It was still my desire to preach in a church, rather than in any other place; but many obstructions were now laid in the way. Some Clergymen objected to this "new doctrine," salvation by faith; but the far more common (and indeed more plausible) objection was, "The people crowd so, that they block up the church, and leave no room for the best of the parish." Being thus excluded from the churches, and not daring to be silent, it remained only to

preach in the open air; which I did at first, not out of choice, but necessity; but I have since seen abundant reason to adore the wise providence of God herein, making a way for myriads of people, who never troubled any church, nor were likely so to do, to hear that word which they soon found to be the power of God unto salvation.

12. In January, 1739, our society consisted of about sixty persons. It continued gradually increasing all the year. In April I went down to Bristol; and soon after, a few persons agreed to meet weekly, with the same intention as those in London. (Page 185.) These were swiftly increased by the accession of several little societies, which were till then accustomed to meet in divers parts of the city, but now agreed to unite together in one. And about the same time, several of the colliers of Kingswood, beginning to awake out of sleep, joined together, and resolved to walk by the same rule; and these likewise swiftly increased. A few also at Bath began to help each other in running the race set before them.

13. In the remaining part of the summer, my brother and I, and two young men who were willing to spend and be spent for God, continued to call sinners to repentance, in London, Bristol, Bath, and a few other places; but it was not without violent opposition, both from high and low, learned and unlearned. Not only all manner of evil was spoke of us, both in private and public, but the beasts of the people were stirred up almost in all places, to "knock these mad dogs on the head at once." And when complaint was made of their savage, brutal violence, no Magistrate would do us justice. Yet, by the grace of God, we went on, determined to testify, as long as we could, the Gospel of God our Saviour, and not counting our lives dear unto ourselves, so we might finish our course with joy.

14. In October, upon a pressing invitation, I set out for Wales, and preached in several parts of Glamorganshire and Monmouthshire, chiefly in the open air; as I was not permitted to preach in the churches, and no private house would contain the congregations. (Page 232.) And the word of God did not fall to the ground. Many "repented, and believed the Gospel;" and some joined together, to strengthen each other's hands in God, and to provoke one another to love and to good works.

15. In November I wrote to a friend a short account of what had been done in Kingswood. (Page 251.) It was as follows:—

“Few persons have lived long in the West of England who have not heard of the colliers of Kingswood, a people famous for neither fearing God, nor regarding man; so ignorant of the things of God, that they seemed but one remove from the beasts that perish; and, therefore, utterly without desire of instruction, as well as without the means of it.

“Many last winter used to say of Mr. Whitefield, ‘If he will convert Heathens, why does he not go to the colliers of Kingswood?’ In spring he did so. And as there were thousands who resorted to no place of worship, he went after them into their own wilderness, ‘to seek and save that which was lost.’ When he was called away, others went ‘into the highways and hedges’ to ‘compel them to come in.’ And, by the grace of God, their labour was not in vain. The scene is already changed. Kingswood does not now, as a year ago, resound with cursing and blasphemy. It is no more filled with drunkenness and uncleanness, and the idle diversions that naturally lead thereto. It is no longer full of wars and fightings, of clamour and bitterness, of wrath and envyings. Peace and love are there. Great numbers of the people are mild, gentle, and easy to be entreated. They do not cry, neither strive, and hardly is their ‘voice heard in the streets;’ or indeed in their own wood; unless when they are at their usual diversion, singing praise unto God their Saviour.”

16. April 1, 1740, the rioters in Bristol, who had long disturbed us, being emboldened by impunity, were so increased, as to fill, not only the court, but a considerable part of the street. (Page 266, &c.) The Mayor sent them an order to disperse; but they set him at defiance. At length he sent several of his officers, who took the ring-leaders into custody. The next day they were brought into court, it being the time of the Quarter Sessions. There they received a severe reprimand; and we were molested no more.

17. Sunday, September 13, 1741, Mr. Deleznot, a French Clergyman in London, desiring me to officiate at his chapel, in Hermitage-street, Wapping, I administered the Lord’s

supper there to about two hundred persons of our society, (as many as the place would well contain,) which then consisted of about a thousand members. (Page 337.) The same number attended the next Lord's day, and so every Sunday following. By this means all the society attended in five weeks. Only those who had the sacrament at their parish-churches, I advised to attend there.

18. It was on the last day of this year, that Sir John Ganson called upon me, and informed me, "Sir, you have no need to suffer these riotous mobs to molest you, as they have done long. I and all the other Middlesex Magistrates have orders from above, to do you justice, whenever you apply to us." (Page 350.) Two or three weeks after, we did apply. Justice was done, though not with rigour; and from that time we had peace in London.

19. February 15, 1742, many met together at Bristol, to consult concerning a proper method of paying the public debt, contracted by building; and it was agreed, (1.) That every member of the society that was able should contribute a penny a week. (2.) That the whole society should be divided into little companies or classes, about twelve in each class; and, (3.) That one person in each should receive that contribution of the rest, and bring it in to the Stewards weekly. Thus began that excellent institution, merely upon a temporal account; from which we reaped so many spiritual blessings, that we soon fixed the same rule in all our societies. (Page 357.)

20. In May, on the repeated invitation of John Nelson, who had been for some time calling sinners to repentance at Birstal, and the adjoining towns, in the west-riding of Yorkshire, I went to Birstal, and found his labour had not been in vain. Many of the greatest profligates in all the country were now changed. Their blasphemies were turned to praise. Many of the most abandoned drunkards were now sober; many Sabbath-breakers remembered the Sabbath to keep it holy. The whole town wore a new face. Such a change did God work by the artless testimony of one plain man! And from thence his word sounded forth to Leeds, Wakefield, Halifax, and all the west-riding of Yorkshire. (Page 371.)

21. I had long had a desire to visit the poor colliers near Newcastle-upon-Tyne; and being now so far in my way, I went forward, and on Friday, 28, came to Newcastle. On

Sunday morning I preached at the end of Sandgate, the poorest and most contemptible part of the town. In the evening I preached on the side of the adjoining hill, to thousands upon thousands. I could only just make a beginuing now; but on November 18 I came again, and preached, morning and evening, till the end of December; and it pleased God so to bless his word, that above eight hundred persons were now joined together in his name; besides many, both in the towns, villages, and lone houses, within ten or twelve miles of the town. I never saw a work of God in any other place so evenly and gradually carried on. It continually rose step by step. Not so much seemed to be done at any one time, as had frequently been at Bristol or London; but something at every time. It was the same with particular souls. I saw few in that ecstatic joy which had been common at other places; but many went on calm and steady, increasing more and more in the knowledge of God.

22. In this year many societies were formed in Somersetshire, Wiltshire, Gloucestershire, Leicestershire, Warwickshire, and Nottinghamshire, as well as the southern parts of Yorkshire. And those in London, Bristol, and Kingswood were much increased.

23. In the beginning of January, 1743, after my brother had spent a few days among them, I went to the poor colliers in and about Wednesbury, in Staffordshire, and preached both in the Town-Hall, morning and evening, and in the open air. (Page 409, &c.) Many appeared to be exceeding deeply affected, and about a hundred desired to join together. In two or three months these were increased to between three and four hundred. But in the summer following there was an entire change. The Minister of Wednesbury, Mr. Eggington, with several neighbouring Justices, Mr. Lane, of Bentley-Hall, and Mr. Persehouse, of Walsal, in particular, stirring up the basest of the people, such outrages followed as were a scandal to the Christian name. Riotous mobs were summoned together by sound of horn; men, women, and children abused in the most shocking manner; being beaten, stoned, covered with mud; some, even pregnant women, treated in a manner that cannot be mentioned. Meantime, their houses were broke open by any that pleased, and their goods spoiled or carried away, at Wednesbury, Darlaston,



West-Bromwich, &c.; some of the owners standing by, but not daring to gainsay, as it would have been at the peril of their lives.

24. Nevertheless, I believed it my duty to call once more on this poor, harassed, persecuted people. So on October 20 I rode over from Birmingham to Wednesbury, and preached at noon in a ground near the middle of the town, to a far larger congregation than was expected, on "Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, and to-day, and for ever." (Page 486, &c.) And no creature offered to molest us, either going or coming. But in the afternoon the mob beset the house. The cry of all was, "Bring out the Minister!" I desired one to bring their captain into the house: After a few words, the lion became a lamb. I then went out among the people, and asked, "What do you want with me?" They said, "We want you to go with us to the Justice." I said, "Shall we go to-night or in the morning?" Most of them cried, "To-night! to-night!" So I went before, and two or three hundred followed.

When we came to Bentley-Hall, two miles from Wednesbury, a servant came out and said, "Mr. Lane is in bed." One then advised to go to Justice Persehouse, at Walsal. All agreed, and about seven we came to his house. But Mr. Persehouse likewise sent word that he was in bed. They then thought it would be best to go home. But we had not gone a hundred yards, when the mob of Walsal came, pouring in like a flood. In a short time, many of the Darlaston mob being knocked down, the rest ran away, and left me in their hands. They dragged me along through the main street, from one end of the town to the other. At the west end of the town, seeing a door half open, I would have gone in; but a gentleman in the shop would not suffer me. However, I stood at the door, and, after speaking a few words, broke out into prayer. Presently the man who had headed the mob turned and said, "Sir, I will spend my life for you. Follow me, and not one soul here shall touch a hair of your head." Two or three of his fellows confirmed his words, and got close to me immediately. The people then fell back to the right and left, while those three or four men carried me through them all; and, a little before ten, God brought me safe to Francis Ward's, at Wednesbury; having lost only one flap of my waistcoat, and a little skin from one of my hands.

25. There was now no more place for any Methodist Preacher in these parts. The mob were lords paramount. And they soon began to know their own strength, and to turn upon their employers. They required money of the gentlemen, or threatened to serve them as they had done the Methodists. This opened their eyes; and, not long after, a grave man riding through Wednesbury, the mob swore he was a Preacher, pulled him off his horse, dragged him to a coal-pit, and were hardly restrained from throwing him in. But the Quaker, (such he was,) not being so tame as a Methodist, indicted the chief of them at the Assizes. The cause was tried at Stafford, and given against them. And from that time the tumults ceased.

26. On May 29, 1743, being Trinity Sunday, I began officiating at the chapel in West-street, near the Seven-Dials, London, (built about sixty years ago by the French Protestants,) which, by a strange chain of providences, fell into my hands. After reading Prayers and preaching, I administered the Lord's supper to some hundreds of communicants. I was a little afraid at first that my strength would not suffice for the business of the day, when a service of five hours (for it lasted from ten to three) was added to my usual employment. (Page 422.) But God looked to that; so I must think; and they that will call it enthusiasm, may. I preached at the Great Gardens in Whitechapel, to an immense congregation. Then the Leaders met, and after them the bands. At ten at night I was less weary than at six in the morning. The next Sunday the service at the chapel lasted till near four in the afternoon. So that I found it needful, for the time to come, to divide the communicants into three parts, that I might not have above six hundred at once.

27. On August 26, 1743, (my brother and one or two of our Preachers having been there before,) I set out for Cornwall; but made no considerable stop till I came to St. Ives, on Tuesday, 30. Some time since, Captain Turner, of Bristol, put in here, and was agreeably surprised to find a little society formed upon Dr. Woodward's plan, who constantly met together. They were much refreshed and strengthened by him, as he was by them. This was the occasion of our first intercourse with them. I now spoke severally with those of the society, who were about a hundred

and twenty, near a hundred of whom had found peace with God. But they were very roughly handled both by the Rector, the Curate, and the gentry, who set the mob upon them on all occasions. I spent three weeks in preaching here, and in Zennor, Morva, St. Just, Sennan, St. Mary's, (one of the Isles of Scilly,) Gwennap, and on several of the Downs, throughout the west of Cornwall. And it pleased God, the seed which was then sown has since produced an abundant harvest. Indeed, I hardly know any part of the three kingdoms, where there has been a more general change. Hurling, their favourite diversion, at which limbs were usually broke, and very frequently lives lost, is now hardly heard of: It seems in a few years it will be utterly forgotten. And that scandal of humanity, so constantly practised on all the coasts of Cornwall, the plundering vessels that struck upon the rocks, and often murdering those that escaped out of the wreck, is now well-nigh at an end; and if it is not quite, the gentlemen, not the poor tinnerns, are to be blamed. But it is not harmlessness or outward decency alone which has within a few years so increased; but the religion of the heart, faith working by love, producing all inward as well as outward holiness.

28. In April, 1744, I took a second journey into Cornwall, and went through many towns I had not seen before. Since my former visit, there had been hot persecution, both of the Preachers and the people. The preaching-house at St. Ives was pulled down to the ground; one of the Preachers pressed and sent for a soldier, as were several of the people; over and above the being stoned, covered with dirt, and the like, which was the treatment many of them met with from day to day. But notwithstanding this, they who had been eminent for hurling, fighting, drinking, and all manner of wickedness; continued eminent for sobriety, piety, and all manner of goodness. In all parts more and more of the lions became lambs, continually praising God, and calling their old companions in sin to come and magnify the Lord together. About the same time, John Nelson and Thomas Beard were pressed and sent for soldiers, for no other crime, either committed or pretended, than that of calling sinners to repentance. The case of John Nelson is well known. Thomas Beard also was nothing terrified by his adversaries. Yet the body after a while sunk under its burden. He was

then lodged in the Hospital at Newcastle, where he still praised God continually. His fever increasing, he was let blood. His arm festered, mortified, and was cut off; two or three days after which, God signed his discharge, and called him up to his eternal home.

29. All this year the alarms were uninterrupted, from the French on the one hand, and the rebels on the other; and a general panic ran through the nation, from the east to the west, from the north to the south. I judged it the more needful to visit as many places as possible, and avail myself of the precious opportunity. My brother and our other Preachers were of the same mind: They spoke and spared not. They rushed through every open door, and cried, "Sinners, behold the Lamb!" And their word did not fall to the ground; they saw abundant fruit of their labour. I went through many parts of Wales; through most of the midland counties; and then through Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, to Newcastle-upon-Tyne. In every place the generality of the people seemed to have ears to hear; and multitudes who were utterly careless before, did now "prepare to meet" their "God."

30. Monday, June 25, and the five following days, we spent in Conference with our Preachers, seriously considering by what means we might the most effectually save our own souls and them that heard us. And the result of our consultations we set down, to be the rule of our future practice. (Page 468.)

Friday, August 24, St. Bartholomew's day, I preached for the last time before the University of Oxford. I am now clear of the blood of these men: I have fully delivered my own soul. And I am well pleased that it should be the very day on which, in the last century, near two thousand burning and shining lights were put out at one stroke. Yet what a wide difference is there between their case and mine! They were turned out of house and home, and all that they had; whereas I am only hindered from preaching, without any other loss; and that in a kind of honourable manner; it being determined, that, when my next turn to preach came, they would pay another person to preach for me. And so they did twice or thrice, even to the time that I resigned my fellowship.

31. All this summer our brethren in Cornwall had had

service; the war against the Methodists being carried on more vigorously than that against the Spaniards. I had accounts of this from all parts; one of which was as follows: (Page 472:)—

“REVEREND SIR,

*September 16, 1744.*

“THE word of God has free course here; it runs and is glorified. But the devil rages horribly. Even at St. Ives we cannot shut the door of John Nance’s house, to meet the society, but the mob immediately threatens to break it open. And in other places it is worse. I was going to Crowan on Tuesday, and within a quarter of a mile of the place where I was to preach, some met me, and begged me not to go up; saying, ‘If you do, there will surely be murder, if there is not already; for many were knocked down before we came away.’ By their advice, I turned back to the house where I had left my horse. We had been there but a short time, when many of the people came in very bloody. But the main cry of the mob was, ‘Where is the Preacher?’ whom they sought for in every corner of the house; swearing bitterly, ‘If we can but knock him on the head, we shall be satisfied.’

“Not finding me, they said, ‘However, we shall catch him on Sunday, at Camborne.’ But it was Mr. Westall’s turn to be there. While he was preaching at Mr. Harris’s, a tall man came in and pulled him down. Mr. Harris demanded his warrant; but he swore, ‘Warrant or no warrant, he shall go with me.’ So he carried him out to the mob, who took him away to the Church-Town. They kept him there till Tuesday morning, and then carried him to Penzance, when Dr. Borlase wrote his mittimus, by virtue of which he was to be committed to the House of Correction at Bodmin as a vagrant: So they took him as far as Camborne that night, and the next day to Bodmin.

“I desire your continual prayer for me,

“Your weak servant in Christ,

“HENRY MILLARD.”

Henry Millard did not long continue in these troubles. A short time after this, he took the small-pox, and in a few days joyfully resigned his spirit up to God.

The Justices who met at the Quarter Sessions in Bodmin, knowing a little more than Dr. Borlase, declared Mr. Westall’s

commitment to be contrary to all law, and immediately set him at liberty.

32. All this year God was carrying on the same work in the English army abroad; some account of which is given by one of their Preachers in the following letter: (Page 476:)—

“REVEREND SIR, GHENT, *November 12, 1744.*

“WE make bold to trouble you with this, to acquaint you with some of the Lord’s dealings with us here. We have hired two rooms; one small, wherein a few of us meet every day; and another large one, wherein we meet for public service twice a day, at nine and at four: And the hand of the omnipotent God is with us, to the pulling down of the strong holds of Satan.

“The 7th instant, when we were met together in the evening, as I was in prayer, one that was kneeling by me cried out, like a woman in travail, ‘My Redeemer! my Redeemer!’ which continued about ten minutes. When he was asked what was the matter, he said he had found that which he had often heard of, an heaven upon earth: And several others had much ado to forbear crying out in the same manner.

“Dear Sir, I am a stranger to you in the flesh: I know not if I have seen you above once, when I saw you preaching on Kennington-Common; and I then hated you as much as, by the grace of God, I love you now. The Lord pursued me with convictions from my infancy; and I made many good resolutions; but, finding I could not keep them, I at length gave myself over to all manner of profaneness. So I continued till the battle of Dettingen. The balls then came very thick about me, and my comrades fell on every side. Yet I was preserved unhurt. A few days after, the Lord was pleased to visit me. The pains of hell gat hold upon me; the snares of death encompassed me. I durst no longer commit any outward sin, and I prayed God to be merciful to my soul. Now I was at a loss for books; but God took care for this also: One day I found an old Bible in one of the train-waggons. This was now my only companion; and I believed myself a very good Christian, till we came to winter-quarters, where I met with John Haime. But I was soon sick of his company; for he robbed me of my treasure, telling me, I and my works were going to hell together. This was

strange doctrine to me: And as I was of a stubborn temper, he sometimes resolved to forbid my coming to him any more.

“When the Lord had at length opened my eyes, and shown me that by grace we are saved, through faith, I began immediately to declare it to others, though I had not yet experienced it myself. But, October 23, as William Clements was at prayer, I felt on a sudden a great alteration in my soul. My eyes overflowed with tears of love. I knew I was, through Christ, reconciled to God; which inflamed my soul with love to Him, whom I now saw to be my complete Redeemer.

“O the tender care of Almighty God, in bringing up His children! Dear Sir, I beg you will pray for him who is not worthy to be a door-keeper to the least of my Master’s servants.

“JOHN EVANS.”

He continued both to preach and to live the Gospel, till the battle of Fontenoy. One of his companions saw him there laid across a cannon, both his legs having been taken off by a chain-shot, praising God, and exhorting all that were round about him; which he did till his spirit returned to God.

83. Many persons still representing the Methodists as enemies to the Clergy, I wrote to a friend the real state of the case in as plain a manner as I could: (Page 486:)—

“*March 11, 1745.*

“(1.) ABOUT seven years since, we began preaching inward, present salvation, as attainable by faith alone.

“(2.) For preaching this doctrine, we were forbidden to preach in most churches.

“(3.) We then preached in private houses; and, when the houses could not contain the people, in the open air.

“(4.) For this many of the Clergy preached or printed against us, as both heretics and schismatics.

“(5.) Persons who were convinced of sin begged us to advise them more particularly, how to flee from the wrath to come. We desired them, being many, to come at one time, and we would endeavour it.

“(6.) For this we were represented, both from the pulpit

and the press, as introducing Popery, and raising sedition. Yea, all manner of evil was said both of us, and of those that used to assemble with us.

“(7.) Finding that some of these did walk disorderly, we desired them not to come to us any more.

“(8.) And some of the others were desired to overlook the rest, that we might know whether they walked worthy of the Gospel.

“(9.) Several of the Clergy now stirred up the people to treat us as outlaws or mad dogs.

“(10.) The people did so, both in Staffordshire, Cornwall, and many other places.

“(11.) And they do so still, wherever they are not restrained by fear of the Magistrates.

“Now, what can we do, or what can you our brethren do, towards healing this breach?

“Desire of us anything which we can do with a safe conscience, and we will do it immediately. Will you meet us here? Will you do what we desire of you, so far as you can with a safe conscience?

“Do you desire us, (1.) To preach another, or to desist from preaching this, doctrine?

“We cannot do this with a safe conscience.

“Do you desire us, (2.) To desist from preaching in private houses, or in the open air?

“As things are now circumstanced, this would be the same as desiring us not to preach at all.

“Do you desire us, (3.) Not to advise those who meet together for that purpose? to dissolve our societies?

“We cannot do this with a safe conscience; for we apprehend many souls would be lost thereby.

“Do you desire us, (4.) To advise them one by one?

“This is impossible, because of their number.

“Do you desire us, (5.) To suffer those that walk disorderly still to mix with the rest?

“Neither can we do this with a safe conscience; for evil communications corrupt good manners.

“Do you desire us, (6.) To discharge those Leaders, as we term them, who overlook the rest?

“This is in effect to suffer the disorderly walkers still to remain with the rest.

“Do you desire us, lastly, to behave with tenderness



both to the characters and persons of our brethren, the Clergy?

“By the grace of God, we can and will do this; as, indeed, we have done to this day.

“If you ask what we desire of you to do, we answer, (1.) We do not desire any of you to let us preach in your church, either if you believe us to preach false doctrine, or if you have the least scruple. But we desire any who believes us to preach true doctrine, and has no scruple in the matter, not to be either publicly or privately discouraged from inviting us to preach in his church.

“(2.) We do not desire that any who thinks it his duty to preach or print against us should refrain therefrom: But we desire that none will do this till he has calmly considered both sides of the question; and that he would not condemn us unheard, but first read what we say in our own defence.

“(3.) We do not desire any favour, if either Popery, sedition, or immorality be proved against us.

“But we desire you would not credit, without proof, any of those senseless tales that pass current with the vulgar; that, if you do not credit them yourselves, you will not relate them to others; yea, that you will discountenance those who still retail them abroad. Now these things you certainly can do, and that with a safe conscience. Therefore, till these things be done, if there be any breach, it is chargeable on you only.”

34. In June I paid another visit to Cornwall, where our Preachers were in danger of being discouraged, being continually persecuted, only not unto death, both by the great vulgar and the small. (Page 498.) They showed a little more courtesy to me, till Thursday, July 4, when I went to see a gentlewoman in Falmouth who had been long indisposed. I had scarce sat down, when the house was beset with an innumerable multitude of people. A louder or more confused noise could hardly be at the taking of a city by storm. The rabble roared, “Bring out the canorum! Where is the canorum?”—a Cornish nickname for a Methodist. They quickly forced open the outer door, and filled the passage, there being now only a wainscot partition between us. Among them were the crews of some privateers, who, being angry at the slowness of the rest, thrust them away, and, setting their shoulders to the inner door,

cried out, "Avast, lads, avast!" Away went all the hinges at once, and the door fell back into the room. I stepped forward into the midst of them, and said, "Here I am: Which of you has anything to say to me?" I continued speaking till I came into the middle of the street, though I could be heard by few only; but all that could hear were still, till one or two of their captains turned and swore, "Not a man shall touch him." A Clergyman then came up, and asked, "Are you not ashamed to use a stranger thus?" He was seconded by some gentlemen of the town, who walked with me to Mrs. Maddern's. They then sent my horse before me to Penryn, and sent me thither by water; the sea running close by the back-door of the house in which we were.

I never saw before, no, not even at Walsal, the hand of God so clearly shown as here. There I received some blows, was covered with dirt, and lost part of my clothes: Here, although the hands of hundreds of people were lifted up to strike or throw, yet they were one and all stopped in the midway; so that not a man touched me with his fingers; neither was anything thrown from first to last; so that I had not a speck of dirt upon my clothes. Who can deny that God heareth the prayer? or that He hath all power in heaven and earth?

35. October 31, I preached upon Newcastle Town-moor, at a small distance from the English camp, where were several thousands both of English and Germans, till they marched for Scotland. (Page 524.) None attempted to make the least disturbance from the beginning to the end. Yet I could not reach their hearts. The words of a scholar did not affect them like those of a dragoon or grenadier.

November 1, a little after nine, just as I began to preach on a little eminence before the camp, the rain, which had continued all the morning, stayed, and did not begin till I had finished. A Lieutenant endeavoured to make some disturbance. However, when I had done, he tried to make some amends, by standing up and telling the soldiers, all I had said was very good.

November 2, also, the rain, which fell before and after, was stayed while I preached; and I began to perceive some fruit of my labour; not only in the number of hearers, but

in the power of God, which was more and more among them, both to wound and to heal.

Sunday, 3, I preached about half-hour after eight to a larger congregation than any before, on, "The kingdom of God is at hand: Repent ye, and believe the Gospel." And were it only for the sake of this hour, I should not have thought much of staying at Newcastle longer than I intended. Between one and two in the afternoon I went to the camp once more. Abundance of people now flocked together, horse and foot, rich and poor; to whom I declared, "There is no difference; for all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God." I observed many Germans standing disconsolate in the skirts of the congregation: To these I was constrained, though I had discontinued it so long, to speak a few words in their own language. Immediately they gathered up close together, and drank in every word.

36. In the beginning of December, I received some further account from the army, the substance of which was as follows: (Vol. II., page 1:)—

"REVEREND SIR,

"I SHALL acquaint you with the Lord's dealings with us since April last. We marched from Ghent to Allost on the 14th, where I met with two or three of our brethren in the fields; and we sung and prayed together, and were comforted. On the 15th I met a small company about a mile from the town; and the Lord filled our hearts with love and peace. On the 17th we marched to the camp near Brussels. On the 18th I met a small congregation on the side of a hill, and opened on those words, 'Let us go forth therefore to him without the camp, bearing his reproach.' On the 28th I spoke from those words of Isaiah, 'Thus saith the Lord concerning the house of Jacob, Jacob shall not now be ashamed, neither shall his face now wax pale.' On the 29th we marched close to the enemy; and when I saw them in their camp, my bowels moved towards them in love and pity for their souls. We lay on our arms all night. In the morning, April 30, the cannon began to play at half an hour after four; and the Lord took away all fear from me, so that I went into the field with joy. The balls flew on either hand, and men fell in abundance; but nothing touched me till about two o'clock: Then I received a ball through my

left arm, and rejoiced so much the more. Soon after, I received another in my right, which obliged me to quit the field. But I scarce knew whether I was on earth or in heaven. It was one of the sweetest days I ever enjoyed.

“WILLIAM CLEMENTS.”

Another letter, from Leare near Antwerp, adds :—

“ON April 30 the Lord was pleased to try our little flock, and to show them his mighty power. Some days before, one of them, standing at his tent-door, broke out into raptures of joy, knowing his departure was at hand, and was so filled with the love of God, that he danced before his comrades. In the battle, before he died, he openly declared, ‘I am going to rest from my labours in the bosom of Jesus.’ I believe nothing like this was ever heard of before, in the midst of so wicked an army as ours. Some were crying out in their wounds, ‘I am going to my Beloved;’ others, ‘Come, Lord Jesus, come quickly!’ And many that were not wounded were crying to the Lord to take them to himself. There was such boldness in the battle among this little despised flock, that it made the officers as well as common soldiers amazed. As to my own part, I stood the fire of the enemy for above seven hours; then my horse was shot under me, and I was exposed both to the enemy and our own horse: But that did not discourage me at all; for I knew that the God of Jacob was with me. I had a long way to go, the balls flying on every side; and thousands lay bleeding, groaning, dying, and dead on each hand. Surely I was as in the fiery furnace; but it never singed one hair of my head. The hotter it grew, the more strength was given me. I was full of joy and love, as much as I could bear. Going on, I met one of our brethren, with a little dish in his hand, seeking water. He smiled, and said he had got a sore wound in his leg. I asked, ‘Have you got Christ in your heart?’ He answered, ‘I have, and I have had him all this day. Blessed be God, that I ever saw your face.’ Lord, what am I, that I should be counted worthy to set my hand to the Gospel plough! Lord, humble me, and lay me in the dust!

“JOHN HAIME.”

37. All this year the work of God gradually increased in the southern counties, as well as the north of England. Many were awakened in a very remarkable manner; many were converted to God; many were enabled to testify that "the blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth from all sin." Meantime, we were in most places tolerably quiet, as to popular tumults. Where anything of the kind appeared, the Magistrates usually interposed; as, indeed, it was their duty to do. And wherever the Peace-Officers do their duty, no riot can long subsist.

38. In February, 1747, I set out for Newcastle-upon-Tyne, my brother being just returned from thence. The wind was full north, and blew so exceeding hard and keen, that, when we came to Hatfield, neither my companions nor I had much use of our hands or feet. After we left it, the large hail drove so vehemently in our faces, that we could not see, nor hardly breathe. However, we made shift to get on to Potten, whence we set out in the morning as soon as it was well light. But it was hard work to get forward; for the ice would not well bear or break; and the untracked snow covering all the road, we had much ado to keep our horses on their feet. Meantime, the wind rose higher and higher, till it was ready to overturn both man and beast. However, after a short halt at Buckden, we pushed on, and were met in the middle of an open field with so violent a storm of rain and hail as we had not had before. It drove through our coats, great and small, boots, and everything, and yet froze as it fell, even upon our eyelashes; so that we had scarce either strength or motion left when we came into the inn at Stilton. However, we took the advantage of a fair blast, and made the best of our way toward Stamford. But on the heath the snow lay in such large drifts, that sometimes horses and men were nigh swallowed up; yet we pushed through all, and, by the help of God, on Thursday evening came safe to Epworth. (Page 45.)

39. The Monday following, I set out for the eastern parts of Lincolnshire. On Tuesday I examined the little society at Tetney. I have not seen such another in England, no, not to this day. In the class-paper (which gives an account of the contribution for the poor) I observed one gave eightpence, often tenpence, a week; another, thirteen, fifteen, or eighteen pence; another, sometimes one, sometimes two

shillings. I asked Micah Ekmoor, the Leader, (an Israelite indeed, who now rests from his labour,) "How is this? Are you the richest society in England?" He answered, "I suppose not; but as we are all single persons, we have agreed together to give ourselves, and all we have, to God. And we do it gladly, whereby we are able to entertain all the strangers that from time to time come to Tetney, who have often no food to eat, or any friend to give them a lodging."

40. In the following spring and summer, we were invited into many parts of Yorkshire, Lancashire, Derbyshire, and Cheshire, where we had not been before. In June my brother spent some time at Plymouth and Plymouth-Dock; and was received by the generality of the people with the utmost cordiality. But before I came, June 26, there was a surprising change. Within two miles of Plymouth, one overtook and informed us that all the Dock was in an uproar. Another met us, and begged we would go the back-way, for there were thousands of people at Mr. Hide's door. We rode up straight into the midst of them. They saluted us with three huzzas; after which I alighted, took several of them by the hand, and begged to talk with them. I would gladly have talked with them for an hour, and believe if I had, there had been an end of the riot; but it being past nine o'clock, I was persuaded to go in. The mob then recovered their spirits, and fought valiantly with the doors and windows. But about ten they were weary, and went away.

About six in the evening I went to the head of the town. (Page 61.) While we were singing, the Lieutenant, a famous man, came with a large retinue of soldiers, drummers, and mob. They grew fiercer and fiercer as their numbers increased. After a while, I walked down into the thickest of them, and took the captain of the mob by the hand. He immediately said, "Sir, I will see you safe home. Sir, no man shall touch you. Gentlemen, stand off. Give back. I will knock the first man down that touches him." We walked in great peace till we came to Mr. Hide's door, and then parted in much love. I stayed in the street after he was gone near half an hour, talking with the people, who had now quite forgot their anger, and went away in high good humour.

41. Hitherto God had assisted us (my brother and me, and a handful of young men) to labour as we were able (though frequently at the peril of our lives) in most parts of England. But our line was now stretched a little farther. On Tuesday, August 4, I set out from Bristol for Ireland. I reached Holyhead on Saturday, 8, (page 66,) and, finding a vessel ready, went on board, and, on Sunday morning, landed at St. George's Quay in Dublin. About three, I wrote a line to the Curate of St. Mary's, who sent me word, he should be glad of my assistance. So I preached there, (another gentleman reading Prayers,) to as gay and senseless a congregation as ever I saw. Monday, 10, at five in the morning, I met our own society, (gathered by Mr. Williams, who had been there some weeks,) and preached at six, to many more than our room would contain, on, "Repent ye, and believe the Gospel." In the evening, I went to Marlborough-street. The house wherein we preached was originally designed for a Lutheran church, and contains about four hundred people. But abundantly more may stand in the yard. Many of the rich were there, and Ministers of every denomination. If my brother or I could have been here for a few months, I know not but there might have been as large a society as that in London.

I continued preaching morning and evening to many more than the house could contain; and had more and more reason to hope, they would not all be unfruitful hearers. On Saturday I purposely stayed at home, and spoke to all that came. But I scarce found any Irish among them. I believe ninety-nine in a hundred of the native Irish remain still in the religion of their forefathers. The Protestants, whether in Dublin or elsewhere, are all transplanted from England.

42. Monday, 17, I began examining the society, which I finished the next day. It contained about two hundred and fourscore members, many of whom had found peace with God. The people in general are of a more teachable spirit than in most parts of England. But on that very account they must be watched over with the more care, being equally susceptible of good and ill impressions.

Sunday, 23, I began in the evening before the usual time; yet were a multitude of people got together in the house, yard, and street, abundantly more than my voice could reach. I cried aloud to as many as could hear, "All things are

ready: Come ye to the marriage." Having delivered my message, about eleven I took ship for England, leaving J. Trembath, (then a burning and shining light, and a workman that needed not to be ashamed,) to water the seed which had been sown. Saturday, 29, I met my brother at Garth, in Brecknockshire, in his way to Ireland. He spent several months there, chiefly in Dublin, Athlone, Cork, and Bandon, and had great reason to bless God, that, in every place, he saw the fruit of his labours.

43. Tuesday, March 8, 1748, Mr. Meriton, Swindells, and I, embarked at Holyhead, and reached Dublin in the afternoon. (Page 87.) We went directly to our house in Cork-street, (vulgarly called Dolphin's Barn-lane,) and came thither while my brother was meeting the society. The remaining days of the week I dispatched all the business I could. Sunday, 13, he preached both morning and evening, expecting to sail at night; but before night the wind turned east, and so continued all the week. Monday, 14, I began preaching at five in the morning, an unheard-of thing in Ireland! I expounded part of the first chapter of the Acts, which I purposed, God willing, to go through in order. Sunday, 20, I preached at eight, on Oxmantown-green, where the whole congregation was still as that at London. About three I preached at Marlborough-street; and, in the evening, at our own house in Cork-street. Wednesday, 23, I preached to the prisoners in Newgate; but without any present effect. Friday, 25, at two, I began in Ship-street, to many rich and genteel hearers. The next day I finished meeting the classes, and was glad to find there was no loss. I left three hundred and ninety-four members in the society; and they were now three hundred and ninety-six.

44. Wednesday, 30, I rode to Philip's-town, the shire town of the King's county. The street was soon filled with those that flocked from every side. And even at five in the morning, I had a large congregation. After preaching, I spoke severally to those of the society, of whom forty were troopers. At noon I preached to a larger congregation than any in Dublin; and I am persuaded, God did then make an offer of life to all the inhabitants of Philip's-town.

In the following days I preached at Tullamore, Tyrrel-pass, Claro, Temple-Macqueker, Moat; and on Saturday, April 2, came to Athlone. My brother was here some time



before; although it was with the imminent hazard of his life. For within about a mile of the town he was waylaid by a very numerous Popish mob, who discharged a shower of stones, which he very narrowly escaped by setting spurs to his horse. This had an exceeding happy effect, prejudicing all the Protestants in our favour; and this seemed to increase every day. The morning I went away, most of the congregation were in tears. Indeed almost all the town seemed to be moved, full of good-will, and desires of salvation. But the waters were too wide to be deep. I found not one under strong conviction, much less had any one attained the knowledge of salvation, in hearing above thirty sermons. After revisiting the towns I had seen before, on Tuesday, 16, I returned to Dublin. Having spent a few days there, I made another little excursion through the country societies. Saturday, May 14, I returned to Dublin, and had the satisfaction to find, that the work of God not only spread wider and wider, but was also much deepened in many souls. Wednesday, 18, we took ship, and the next morning landed at Holyhead.

45. Saturday, April 15, 1749, I embarked again at Holyhead for Ireland; and after spending a few days in Dublin, visited all our societies in Leinster. (Page 131.) I then went to Limerick, in the province of Munster. Mr. Swindells had prepared the way, and a society was formed already. So that I found no opposition, but every one seemed to say, "Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord!" But the more I conversed with this friendly people, the more I was amazed. That God had wrought a great work among them, was manifest. And yet the main of the believers and unbelievers were not able to give a rational account of the plainest principles of religion. It is clear, God begins his work at the heart; then the inspiration of the Highest giveth understanding. On Tuesday, May 29, I set out for Cork; but the next day Mr. Skelton met me, just come from thence, and informed me, it was impossible for me to preach there while the riotous mob filled the street. They had for some time done what they listed; broke into the houses of all that were called Methodists, (or, as their elegant term was, Swaddlers,) and beat or abused them just as they pleased: The worthy Mayor, Daniel Crone, Esq., encouraged them so to do, and told them, "You may do anything but kill them, because that is

contrary to law!" So I rode through Cork to Bandon, and, having spent a few days there, returned to Dublin nearly the same way I came; only touching at Portarlington, and a few other places which I had not seen before.

46. In all this journey, I had the satisfaction to find, that ever since I was in Ireland first, my fellow-labourers had been fully employed in watering the seed that had been sown. And it had pleased God exceedingly to bless their labours in Munster, as well as in Leinster. In various parts of both these provinces, considerable numbers were brought, not from one opinion or mode of worship to another, but from darkness to light, from serving the devil, to serve the living God. This is the point, the only point, for which both I and they think it worth our while to labour, desiring no recompense beside the testimony of our conscience, and what we look for in the resurrection of the just.

I have purposely placed together in one view what was transacted in Ireland for three years, and shall now mention a few things done in England during that period.

47. During all this time, the work of God (it is no cant word; it means the conversion of sinners from sin to holiness) was both widening and deepening, not only in London and Bristol, but in most parts of England; there being scarce any county, and not many large towns, wherein there were not more or fewer witnesses of it. Meantime, the greatest numbers were brought to the great Shepherd of their souls (next to London and Bristol) in Cornwall, the west-riding of Yorkshire, and Newcastle-upon-Tyne. But still we were obliged, in many places, to carry our lives in our hands. Several instances of this have been related already. I will mention one more:—

Friday, February 12, 1748, after preaching at Oakhill, (a village in Somersetshire,) I rode on to Shepton; but found all the people under a strange consternation. A mob, they said, was hired and made sufficiently drunk, to do all manner of mischief. Nevertheless I preached in peace; the mob being assembled at another place, where I used to alight. And they did not find their mistake, till I had done preaching. They then attended us to William Stone's house, throwing dirt, stones, and clods in abundance; but they could not hurt us. Mr. Swindells had only a little dirt on his coat, and I a few specks on my hat. After we were gone into the house,

they began throwing large stones, in order to break the door; but finding this would require some time, they first poured in a shower of stones at the windows. One of their captains, in his great zeal, had thrust into the house, and was now shut in with us. He would fain have got out; but it was not possible. So he kept as close to me as he could, thinking himself safest when he was near me. But, staying a little behind when I went up two pair of stairs, a large stone struck him on the forehead, and the blood spouted out like a stream. He cried out, "O Sir, are we to die to-night? What must I do?" I said, "Pray to God." He took my advice, and began praying as he had scarce ever done before. (Page 82, &c.)

Mr. Swindells and I then went to prayer; after which I told him, "We must not stay here." He said, "Sir, we cannot stir: You see how the stones fly about." I walked straight through the room, and down the stairs, and not a stone came in till we were at the bottom. The mob had just broke open the door when we came into the lower room; and while they burst in at one door, we walked out at the other. Nor did one man take any notice of us, though we were within five yards of each other. They filled the house at once, and proposed setting it on fire. But one of them would not consent, his house adjoining to it. Hearing one of them cry out, "They are gone over the grounds," I thought the hint was good. So we went over the grounds to the far end of the town, where one waited and guided us safe to Oakhill.

48. Friday, June 24, being the day we had appointed for opening the school at Kingswood, I preached there on, "Train up a child in the way that he should go; and when he is old, he will not depart from it." (Page 101.) My brother and I then administered the Lord's supper to many who came from far. We then agreed on the general rules of the school, which we published soon after.

49. On July 18 I began my journey northward from Newcastle. (Page 104.) Having appointed to preach in Morpeth at noon, I accordingly went to the cross. But I had scarce begun, when a young man appeared at the head of his troop, and told me very plainly and roughly, "You shall not preach here." I went on; upon which he gave the signal to his companions. But they quickly fell out among themselves. So I went on without any considerable interruption, the

multitude softening more and more, till, towards the close, the far greater part appeared exceeding serious and attentive.

In the afternoon we rode to Widdrington. The people flocked from all parts, and every man hung upon the word. None stirred his head or hand, or looked to the right hand or the left, while I declared in strong terms, "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Tuesday, 19, I preached at Alemouth, a small seaport town; and then rode to Alnwick, one of the largest inland towns in Northumberland. At seven I preached at the cross to a multitude of people, much resembling those at Athlone. All were moved a little, but none much. The waters spread wide, but not deep.

On Wednesday I went to Berwick-upon-Tweed, and preached both that and the next evening, as well as the following morning, in a large, green space, near the Governor's house. A little society had been formed there before, which was now considerably increased; and several members of it (most of whom are now in Abraham's bosom) walked worthy of the vocation wherewith they were called. After preaching at several other places in the way, on Saturday, 23, I returned to Newcastle.

50. During the summer, there was a large increase of the work of God, both in Northumberland, the county of Durham, and Yorkshire: As likewise in the most savage part of Lancashire; though, here in particular, the Preachers carried their lives in their hands. A specimen of the treatment they met with there, may be seen in the brief account following:—

On August 25th, while I was speaking to some quiet people at Roughlee, near Colne in Lancashire, a drunken rabble came, the captain of whom said, he was a deputy-constable, and I must go with him. (Page 110, &c.) I had scarce gone ten yards, when a man of his company struck me in the face with all his might. Another threw his stick at my head; all the rest were like as many ramping and roaring lions. They brought me, with Mr. Grimshaw, the Minister of Haworth, Mr. Colbeck of Keighley, and Mr. Macford of Newcastle, (who never recovered the abuse he then received,) into a public-house at Barrowford, a neighbouring village, where all their forces were gathered together.

Soon after, Mr. Hargrave, the High-Constable, came, and required me to promise, I would come to Roughlee no more. This I flatly refused. But upon saying, "I will not preach here now," he undertook to quiet the mob. While he and I walked out at one door, Mr. Grimshaw and Colbeck went out at the other. The mob immediately closed them in, tossed them to and fro with the utmost violence; threw Mr. Grimshaw down, and loaded them both with dirt and mire of every kind. The other quiet, harmless people, who followed me at a distance, they treated full as ill. They poured upon them showers of dirt and stones, without any regard to age or sex. Some of them they trampled in the mire, and dragged by the hair of the head. Many they beat with their clubs without mercy. One they forced to leap from a rock, ten or twelve feet high, into the river. And when he creaped out, wet and bruised, were hardly persuaded not to throw him in again. Such was the recompense we frequently received from our countrymen for our labour of love!

51. April 7, 1750, I embarked in the morning at Holyhead, and in the evening landed in Dublin. Here I received a full account of the shocking outrages which had been committed in Cork for several months together, which the good Magistrates rather encouraged than opposed, till at the Lent Assizes several depositions were laid before the Grand Jury. Yet they did not find any of these bills! But they found a bill against Daniel Sullivan, a baker, who, when the mob were discharging a shower of stones upon him, discharged a pistol (without ball) over their heads; which put them into such bodily fear, that they all ran away without looking behind them.

Being desirous of giving the poor desolate sufferers all the assistance I could, I made a swift journey through the inland societies; and on Saturday, May 19, came to Cork. The next day, understanding the house was small, about eight I went to Hammond's Marsh. It was then a large open space, but is now built over. The congregation was large and deeply attentive. I have seldom seen a more orderly assembly at any church in England or Ireland.

In the afternoon Mr. Skelton and Jones waited on the Mayor, and asked if my preaching on the Marsh would be

disagreeable to him. He answered, "Sir, I will have no more mobs and riots." Mr. Skelton replied, "Sir, Mr. Wesley has made none." He answered plain, "Sir, I will have no more preaching: And if Mr. Wesley attempts it, I am prepared for him."

I would not, therefore, attempt to preach on the Marsh; but began in our own house about five. The good Mayor, meantime, was walking in the 'Change, and giving orders to his Serjeants, and the town-drummers, who immediately came down to the house with an innumerable mob attending them. They continued drumming, and I continued preaching, till I had finished my discourse. When I came out, the mob presently closed me in. Observing one of the Serjeants standing by, I desired him to keep the King's peace: But he replied, "Sir, I have no orders to do that." As soon as I came into the open street, the rabble threw whatever came to hand. But all went by me, or over my head; nor do I remember that anything touched me. I walked straight through the midst of the rabble, looking every man before me in the face; and they opened to the right and left, till I came near Dant's bridge. A large party had taken possession of this; but when I came up, they likewise shrunk back, and I walked through them to Mr. Jenkins's house. But a stout Papist woman stood just within the door, and would not let me come in, till one of the mob (aiming, I suppose, at me, but missing me) knocked her down flat. I then went in, and God restrained the wild beasts, so that not one attempted to follow me.

But many of the congregation were more roughly handled; particularly Mr. Jones, who was covered with mud, and escaped with his life almost by miracle. Finding the mob were not inclined to disperse, I sent to Alderman Pembroke, who immediately desired Alderman Winthorpe, his nephew, to go down to Mr. Jenkins's; with whom I walked up the street, none giving me an unkind or disrespectful word.

All the following week, it was at the peril of his life, if any Methodist stirred out of doors. And the case was much the same during the whole mayoralty of Mr. Crone. But the succeeding Mayor declared in good earnest, "There shall be no more mobs or riots in Cork." And he did totally suppress them; so that from that time forward, even

the Methodists enjoyed the same liberty with the rest of His Majesty's subjects.

52. In the mean time, the work of God went on with little opposition, both in other parts of the county of Cork, and at Waterford and Limerick, as well as in Mount-Mellick, Athlone, Longford, and most parts of the province of Leinster. In my return from Cork, I had an opportunity of visiting all these; and I had the satisfaction of observing how greatly God had blessed my fellow-labourers, and how many sinners were saved from the error of their ways. Many of these had been eminent for all manner of sins. Many had been Roman Catholics: And I suppose the number of these would have been far greater, had not the good Protestants, as well as the Popish Priests, taken true pains to hinder them.

53. It was on April 24, 1751, that Mr. Hopper and I set out for Scotland. I was invited thither by Captain (afterwards Colonel) Galatin, who was then quartered at Musselborough. I had no intention to preach in Scotland, not imagining there were any that desired I should. But I was mistaken. Curiosity (if nothing else) brought abundance of people together in the evening: And whereas in the kirk (Mrs. Galatin informed me) there used to be laughing and talking, and all the marks of the grossest inattention, it was far otherwise here. They remained as statues from the beginning of the sermon to the end. I preached again at six the next evening, on, "Seek ye the Lord while He may be found." I used great plainness of speech towards high and low; and they all received it in love: So that the prejudice which the devil had been several years planting was torn up by the roots in one hour. After preaching, one of the Bailiffs of the town, with one of the Elders of the kirk, came to me, and begged I would stay with them a while; nay, if it were but two or three days, and they would fit up a far larger place than the school, and prepare seats for the congregations. Had not my time been fixed, I should gladly have complied. All that I could now do was, to give them a promise that Mr. Hopper would come back the next week, and spend a few days with them. He did accordingly come, and spent a fortnight, preaching every day; and it was not without a fair prospect. The congregations were very numerous, many were cut to the heart, several joined

together in a little society. Some of these are now removed to Abraham's bosom, and some remain to this day.

54. February 28, 1753, I looked over Mr. Prince's "Christian History." What an amazing difference is there in the manner wherein God has carried on his work in England and in America! There, above a hundred of the established Clergymen, of age and experience, and of the greatest note for sense and learning of any in those parts, were zealously engaged in the work: Here, almost the whole body of the aged, experienced, learned Clergy are zealously engaged against it; and but a handful of raw young men engaged in it, without name, learning, or eminent sense! And yet by that large number of honourable men the work seldom flourished above six months at a time; and then followed a lamentable and general decay before the next revival of it. Meantime, that which God has wrought by these despised instruments has continued increasing for fifteen years together: Yea, we may now say, (blessed be the God of all grace!) for three-and-forty years together; and at whatever time it has declined in any one place, it has more eminently flourished in another. (Page 281.)

55. April 15, I set out for Scotland again; not indeed for Musselborough, but Glasgow, to which place I was invited by Mr. Gillies, the Minister of the College-Kirk. I came thither the next evening, and lodged at his house. Thursday, 19, at seven I preached about a quarter of a mile from the town, and at four in the afternoon to a far larger congregation. I had designed to preach at the same place on Friday morning; but as it rained, Mr. Gillies desired me to preach in his church. At four in the afternoon we had a far larger congregation than the church could have contained. At seven Mr. Gillies preached a home, affectionate sermon. Has not God still a favour for this city? It was long eminent for religion; and He is able to repair what is now decayed, and to build up the waste places.

On Saturday, both in the morning and evening, I preached to numerous congregations. Sunday, 22, it rained much; nevertheless upwards, I suppose, of a thousand people stayed with all willingness, while I explained and applied, "This is life eternal, to know thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent." I was desired to preach afterwards at the prison, which I did about nine



o'clock. All the felons, as well as debtors, behaved with the utmost decency. It may be, some even of these poor sinners will occasion joy in heaven.

The behaviour of the people at church, both morning and afternoon, was beyond anything I ever saw but in our congregations. None bowed or curtsied to each other, either before or after service; from the beginning to the end of which none talked, or looked at any but the Minister. Surely much of the power of religion was here, where so much of the form still remains. The meadow where I stood in the afternoon was full from side to side. I spoke as closely as ever I did in my life. Many of the students, and many of the soldiers, were there; and they could indeed bear sound doctrine. Having now delivered my own soul, I rode on Monday to Tranent, and the next day to Berwick.

56. Sunday, June 24, that blessed man, Mr. Walsh, preached at Short's Gardens, in Irish. (Page 295.) Abundance of his countrymen flocked to hear, and some were cut to the heart. Sunday, July 1, he preached in Irish in Moorfields. The congregation was exceeding large, and all behaved seriously; though, probably, many of them came purely to hear what manner of language it was. For the sake of these, he preached afterwards in English; if by any means he might gain some. And wherever he preached, whether in English or Irish, the word was sharper than a two-edged sword: So that I do not remember ever to have known any Preacher, who, in so few years as he remained upon earth, was an instrument of converting so many sinners from the error of their ways.

57. Tuesday, July 10, after one of our Preachers had been there for some time, I crossed over from Portsmouth into the Isle of Wight. From Cowes we rode straight to Newport, the chief town in the isle, and found a little society in tolerable order. Several of them had found peace with God, and walked in the light of His countenance. At half-hour after six I preached in the market-place to a numerous congregation; but many of them were remarkably ill-behaved. The children made much noise, and many grown persons were talking aloud almost all the time I was preaching. There was a large congregation again at five in the morning; and every person therein seemed to know that this was the word whereby God would judge him in the last

day. In the evening the congregation was more numerous, and far more serious, than the night before: Only one drunken man made a little disturbance; but the Mayor ordered him to be taken away. In October I visited them again, and spent three or four days with much comfort; finding those who had before professed to find peace had walked suitably to their profession.

58. August 6, 1755, I mentioned to our congregation in London a means of increasing serious religion, which had been frequently practised by our forefathers,—the joining in a covenant to serve God with all our heart, and with all our soul. I explained this for several mornings following: And on Friday many of us kept a fast unto the Lord; beseeching Him to give us wisdom and strength, that we might “promise unto the Lord our God, and keep it.” On Monday, at six in the evening, we met for that purpose at the French church in Spitalfields. After I had recited the tenor of the covenant proposed, in the words of that blessed man, Richard Alleine, all the people stood up, in token of assent, to the number of about eighteen hundred. Such a night I scarce ever knew before. Surely the fruit of it shall remain for ever. (Page 388.)

59. January 1, 1756, how much were men divided in their expectations concerning the ensuing year! Some believed that it would bring a large harvest of temporal calamities; others, that it would be unusually fruitful of spiritual blessings. Indeed, the general expectation of those calamities spread a general seriousness over the nation. This was a means of abundant spiritual blessings. We endeavoured, in every part of the kingdom, to avail ourselves of the apprehensions which we frequently found it was impossible to remove, in order to make them conducive to a nobler end; to that “fear of the Lord” which “is the beginning of wisdom.” And at this season I wrote “An Address to the Clergy,” which, considering the situation of public affairs, I judged would be more seasonable, and more easily borne, at this time than at any other.

60. March 30, I visited Ireland again; and, after seeing the societies in Leinster and Munster, in the latter end of June went with Mr. Walsh into the province of Connaught. (Page 359.) We went through the counties of Clare and Galway to Castlebar, the chief town of the county of Mayo.

The Rector having left word that I should have the use of his church, I preached, morning and evening, to a very large congregation. Mr. Walsh afterwards preached in the Court-house to another numerous and serious congregation. On Tuesday I rode over to Newport, eleven miles from Castlebar, on the very extremity of the land. The Rector had before given me an invitation. Between seven and eight I preached to (I suppose) more than all the Protestants in the town. Deep attention sat on every face; and surely God touched some of their hearts. On Wednesday I returned to Castlebar. There was just such a work here as that at Athlone some years ago, and afterwards at Limerick. All were pleased, but very few convinced. The stream ran very wide, but very shallow.

61. July 12, after preaching at many of the intermediate places, I went on to Longford. I began at five in the Old Barrack. A huge crowd soon flocked in; but most of the Papists stood at the gate, or just without the wall. They were all as still as night; nor did I hear an uncivil word, while I walked from one end of the town to the other.

But how is it, that almost in every place, even where there is no lasting fruit, there is so great an impression made at first upon a considerable number of people? The fact is this: Everywhere the work of God rises higher and higher, till it comes to a point. Here it seems for a short time to be at a stay; and then it gradually sinks again.

All this may easily be accounted for. At first, curiosity brings many hearers; at the same time, God draws many by his preventing grace to hear his word, and comforts them in hearing. One then tells another. By this means, on the one hand, curiosity spreads and increases; and, on the other, the drawings of God's Spirit touch more hearts, and many of them more powerfully than before. He now offers grace to all that hear, most of whom are in some measure affected, and, more or less moved with approbation of what they hear, have a desire to please God, with good-will to his messenger. And these principles, variously combined and increasing, raise the general work to its highest point. But it cannot stand here, in the nature of things. Curiosity must soon decline. Again, the drawings of God are not followed, and thereby the Holy Spirit is grieved: He strives with this and that man no more, and so His drawings end. Thus, the

causes of the general impression declining, most of the hearers will be less and less affected. Add to this, that, in process of time, "it must be that offences will come." Some of the hearers, if not Teachers also, will act contrary to their profession. Either their follies or faults will be told from one to another, and lose nothing in the telling. Men, once curious to hear, will hear no more; men, once drawn, having stifled their good desires, will disapprove what they approved of before, and feel dislike instead of good-will to the Preachers. Others who were more or less convinced, will be afraid or ashamed to acknowledge that conviction; and all these will catch at ill stories, true or false, in order to justify their change. When, by that means, all who do not savingly believe have quenched the Spirit of God, the little flock that remain go on from faith to faith; the rest sleep and take their rest; and thus the number of hearers in every place may be expected, first to increase, and then to decrease.

62. Monday, 19, I first set foot in the province of Ulster: But several of our Preachers had been labouring in various parts of it for some years; and they had seen much fruit of their labour: Many sinners had been convinced of the error of their ways, many truly converted to God; and a considerable number of these had united together, in order to strengthen each other's hands in God. I preached in the evening at Newry to a large congregation, and to a great part of them at five in the morning. Afterwards I spoke to the members of the society, consisting of Churchmen, Dissenters, and (late) Papists; but there is no striving among them, unless to "enter in at the strait gate."

On Tuesday I preached at Terryhugan, near Scarva; on Wednesday, in the market-house at Lisburn. Here the Rector and the Curate called upon me, candidly proposed their objections, and spent about two hours in free, serious, friendly conversation. How much evil might be prevented or removed, would other Clergymen follow their example!

63. I preached in the evening at Belfast, the largest town in Ulster, to as large a congregation as at Lisburn; and to near the same number in the morning. Hence we rode along the shore to Carrickfergus, said to be the most ancient town in the province. I preached in the Session-house, at seven, to most of the inhabitants of the town. Sunday, 25,

at nine I preached in the upper Court-house, which was much larger, and at eleven went to church. After dinner one of our friends asked, if I was ready to go to the Presbyterian meeting. I told him, "I never go to a meeting." He seemed as much astonished as the old Scot at Newcastle, who left us, because we were mere Church-of-England men. We are so, although we condemn none who have been brought up in another way.

64. Monday, 26, Mr. Walsh met me at Belfast, and informed me, that, the day before, he was at Newtown, intending to preach; but while he was at prayer, one Mr. Mortimer came with a drunken mob, seized him by the throat, and dragged him along, till a stout man seized him and constrained him to quit his hold. Mr. Walsh, having refreshed himself at a friend's house, began a second time; but in a quarter of an hour, Mr. Mortimer, having rallied his mob, came again; on which Mr. Walsh gave him the ground, and walked away over the fields.

On Tuesday evening I preached in the market-house at Lurgan. Many of the gentry were met in the room over this, it being the time of the assembly. The violins were just tuning: But they ceased till I had done; and the novelty (at least) drew and fixed the attention of the whole company. Having visited most of the societies in Ulster, I returned to Dublin, August 5. On Tuesday evening I preached my farewell sermon. But it was still a doubt (though I had bespoken the cabin of the packet for myself and my friends) whether we should sail or no, Sir Thomas Prendergast having sent word to the Captain, that he would go over; and it being his custom (*hominis magnificentiam!*)\* to keep the whole ship to himself; but the wind turning foul, he would not go: So about noon Mr. Walsh, Houghton, Morgan, and I went on board, and fell down to the mouth of the harbour. The next evening we landed at Holyhead.

65. Thursday, 26, about fifty of the Preachers being met at Bristol, the Rules of the Society were read over, and carefully considered one by one; but we did not find any that could be spared: So we agreed to retain and enforce them all. (Page 385.)

\* Such was the stateliness of the man.—EDIT.

The next day the Rules of the Bands were read over, and considered one by one, which, after some verbal alterations, we all agreed to observe and enforce.

On Saturday the Rules of Kingswood School were read over, and considered one by one; and we were fully satisfied that they were all agreeable both to Scripture and reason.

My brother and I closed the Conference by a solemn declaration of our purpose never to separate from the Church; and all our brethren cheerfully concurred therein.

66. February 28, 1757, one of our Preachers wrote me the following letter: (Page 393:)—

“REVEREND AND DEAR SIR,

“AT Bradford, on the 30th of January last, I was pressed for a soldier, and carried to the inn where the gentlemen were. Mr. Pearse offered bail for my appearance the next day. They said, they would take his word for a thousand pounds; but not for me: I must go to the round-house, the little stone room on the side of the bridge. So thither I was conveyed by five soldiers. I found nothing to sit on, but a stone; and nothing to lie on, but a little straw. But soon after a friend sent me a chair, on which I sat all night. I had a double guard, twelve soldiers in all; two without, one in the door, and the rest within. I passed the night without sleep; but, blessed be God, not without rest; for my peace was not broken a moment. My body was in prison; but I was Christ’s freeman; my soul was at liberty. And even there I found some work to do for God: I had a fair opportunity of speaking to them that durst not leave me; and I hope it was not in vain.

“The next day I was carried before the Commissioners, and part of the Act read, which empowered them to take such able-bodied men as had no business, and had no lawful or sufficient maintenance. Then I said, ‘But I have a lawful calling, being in partnership with my brother, and have also an estate. Give me time, and you shall have full proof of this.’ They agreed. The next day I set out for Cornwall. After staying at home a few days, on Saturday I came to Bradford. On Monday I appeared before the Commissioners, with the writings of my estate. When they had perused them, they set me at liberty. I hope you will

give thanks to God, for my deliverance out of the hands of unreasonable and wicked men.

“WILLIAM HITCHENS.”

67. March 13, finding myself weak at Snowsfields, I prayed that God, if he saw good, would send me help at the chapel. (Page 395.) He did so: As soon as I had done preaching, Mr. Fletcher came, who had just then been ordained Priest, and hastened to the chapel, on purpose to assist me, as he supposed me to be alone. How wonderful are the ways of God! When my bodily strength failed, and no Clergyman in England was able and willing to assist me, he sent me help from the mountains of Switzerland; and a help meet for me in every respect! Where could I have found such another?

68. Monday, April 11, at five in the evening about twelve hundred of the society met me at Spitalfields. (Page 397.) I expected two Clergymen to help me; but none came. I held out till between seven and eight. I was then scarce able to walk or speak; but I looked up, and received strength. At half-hour after nine, God broke in mightily upon the congregation. Great indeed was our glorying in Him; we were filled with consolation; and when I returned home between ten and eleven, I was no more tired than at ten in the morning.

69. Tuesday, October 25, as I was returning from Bath, a man met me at Hannam, and told me, “The school-house in Kingswood is burnt down.” When I came thither I was informed, about eight the night before, two or three boys went into the gallery up two pair of stairs. One of them heard a strange cracking in the room above. Opening the staircase-door, he was beat back by smoke; on which he cried out, “Fire, murder, fire!” Mr. Baynes, hearing this, ran immediately down, and brought up a pail of water. But going in and seeing the blaze, he had not presence of mind to go up to it, but threw the water upon the floor. The room was quickly all in a flame; the deal partitions taking fire, and spreading to the upper rooms of the house. Water enough was now brought, but none could come near the place where it was wanted, the room being so filled with flame and smoke. At last a long ladder was reared up against the wall of the house; but it was then observed that

one of the sides of it was broke in two, and the other quite rotten. However, John Haw, a young man that lived next door, ran up it with an axe in his hand; but he then found the ladder was so short, that, as he stood on the top of it, he could but just lay one hand over the battlements. How he got over them to the leads, none can tell; but he did so, and immediately made a hole through the roof; on which, a vent being made, the smoke and flame issued out, as from a furnace. Those who brought water, but were stopped before by the smoke, then got upon the leads and poured it down through the tiling. By this means the fire was quickly quenched, having only consumed part of the partition, with some clothes, and a little damaged the roof, and the floor beneath. It is amazing that so little hurt was done; for the fire, which began in the middle of the room, none knew how, 'was so violent that it broke every pane of glass but two in the window, both at the east and west end. What was more amazing still, was, that it did not hurt either the beds, which seemed all covered with flame, or the deal partitions on the other side of the room, though it beat against them for a considerable time. What can we say to these things, but that God had fixed the bounds, which it could not pass? (Page 429.)

70. Having before visited most other parts of Ireland, on May 27, 1758, I entered the county of Sligo, bordering on the Western Ocean; I think the best peopled that I have seen in the kingdom. I believe the town is above half as large as Limerick. Sunday, 28, at nine, I preached in the market-house to a numerous congregation; but they were doubled at five in the afternoon; and God made his "word quick and powerful, and sharper than a two-edged sword." And from that time there have never been wanting a few in Sligo who worship God in spirit and in truth. In many other parts of the county likewise many sinners have been truly converted to God. (Page 446.)

71. June 17, I met Thomas Walsh once more in Limerick, alive, and but just alive. Three of the best Physicians in these parts had attended him, and all agreed that it was a lost case; that by violent straining of his voice, he had contracted a true pulmonary consumption, which was then in the last stage, and beyond the reach of any human help. O what a man to be snatched away in the strength of



his years! Surely thy "judgments are a great deep!" (Page 451.)

72. I rode over to Courtmattress, a colony of Germans, whose parents came out of the Palatinate, in Queen Anne's reign. Twenty families of them settled here; twenty more at Killiheen, a mile off; fifty at Balligarane, two miles eastward; and twenty at Pallas, four miles farther. Each family had a few acres of ground, on which they built as many little houses. They are since considerably increased; not indeed in families, but in number of souls. Having no Minister, they were become eminent for drunkenness, cursing, swearing, and an utter contempt of religion: But they are changed since they heard, and willingly received, the truth as it is in Jesus; an oath is now rarely heard among them, or a drunkard seen in their borders. They have built a pretty large preaching-house, in the middle of Courtmattress: But it would not contain one half of the congregation; so I stood in a large yard. Many times afterwards I preached at Balligarane and Pallas; so did my fellow-labourers, and with lasting effect: So did God at last provide for these poor strangers, who for fifty years had none that cared for their souls!

The plain old Bible religion had now made its way into every county in Ireland, save Kerry; and many in each county, and in most large towns, were happy witnesses of it: But I doubt not there would have been double the number, had not true pains been taken by Protestants, so called, as well as Papists, either to prevent their hearing, or at least to prevent their laying to heart, the word that is able to save their souls.

73. March 3, 1759, I rode to Colchester, and found that out of the hundred and twenty-six I had left here last year, we had lost only twelve; in the place of whom we had gained forty. (Page 468.) Such is the fruit of visiting from house to house!

Having at length submitted to the importunity of my friends, and consented to hire James Wheatley's Tabernacle at Norwich, I went on thither on Tuesday; and, inquiring the next day, found that neither any society nor any subscribers were left; so that everything was to be wrought out of the ore, or rather out of the cinders. (Page 469.) In the evening I desired those who were willing to join

would speak to me the next day: About twenty did so; but the greater part of them appeared like frightened sheep. On Saturday and Sunday about forty more came, and thirty or forty on Monday. Two-thirds of them seemed to have known God's pardoning love. Doth He not send by whom He will send? In a week or two more, having joined the new members with those of the old society, all together amounted to four hundred and twenty; and by April 1st, to above five hundred and seventy. A hundred and five of these were in no society before, although many of them had found peace with God. I believe they would have increased to a thousand, if I could have stayed a fortnight longer. But which of these will hold fast their profession? The fowls of the air will devour some; the sun will scorch more; and others will be choked by the thorns springing up. I wonder we should ever expect that half of those that at first "hear the word with joy" will "bring forth fruit unto perfection."

74. In May, the work of God exceedingly increased at and near Everton, in Huntingdonshire. (Page 482, &c.) I cannot give a clearer view of this than by transcribing the journal of an eye-witness:—

"Sunday, May 20, several fainted and cried out while Mr. Berridge was preaching. Afterwards at church many cried out, especially children, whose agonies were amazing. One of the eldest, a girl ten or twelve years old, was in violent contortions of body, and wept aloud, I think incessantly, during the whole service; and several much younger children were agonizing as this did. The church was crowded within and without, so that Mr. Berridge was almost stifled by the breath of the people. I believe there were three times more men than women, a great part of whom came from far. The text was, 'Having the form of godliness, but denying the power of it.' When the power of religion came to be spoken of, the presence of God filled the place; and while poor sinners felt the sentence of death in their souls, what sounds of distress did I hear! The greatest number of them that cried out were men; but some women, and several children, felt the power of the same almighty Spirit, and seemed just sinking into hell. This occasioned a mixture of various sounds, some shrieking, some roaring aloud: The most general was a loud

breathing, like that of persons half strangled and gasping for life. And indeed most of the cries were like those of dying creatures. Great numbers wept without any noise: Others fell down as dead; some sinking in silence; some with extreme pain and violent agitation. I stood on the pew-seat, as did a young man in the opposite pew, an able-bodied, healthy countryman; but in a moment, while he seemed to think of nothing less, down he dropped with a violence inconceivable; and the beating of his feet was ready to break the boards, as he lay in strong convulsions at the bottom of the pew. Among the children who felt the arrows of the Almighty, I saw a sturdy boy, about eight years old, who roared above his fellows, and seemed to struggle with the strength of a grown man. His face was red as scarlet: And almost all on whom God laid his hand turned either very red or almost black. When I returned to Mr. Berridge's house, after a little walk, I found it full of people. He was fatigued, yet said he would give them a word of exhortation. I stayed in the next room, and saw a girl lying as dead. In a few minutes, a woman was filled with peace and joy. She had come thirteen miles, and had dreamed Mr. Berridge would come to her village on that very day whereon he did come, though without either knowing the place or the way to it. She was convinced at that time. Just as we heard of her deliverance, the girl on the floor began to stir. She was then set in a chair, and, after sighing awhile, suddenly rose up, rejoicing in God. She frequently fell on her knees, but was generally running to and fro, speaking these and the like words: 'O what can Jesus do for lost sinners! He has forgiven me all my sins.' Meantime, I saw a thin, pale girl weeping with joy for her companion, and with sorrow for herself. Quickly the smiles of heaven came likewise on her face, and her praises joined with those of the other.

75. "Two or three well-dressed young women, who seemed careless before, now cried out with a loud and bitter cry. We continued praising God with all our might; and His work went on. I had for some time observed a young woman all in tears; but now her countenance changed; her face was, as quick as lightning, filled with smiles, and became of a crimson colour. Immediately after, a stranger, who stood facing me, fell backward to the wall, then forward

on his knees, wringing his hands, and roaring like a bull. His face at first turned quite red, then almost black. He rose and ran against the wall, till two persons held him. He screamed, 'O what shall I do? O for one drop of the blood of Christ!' As he spoke, God set his soul at liberty; and the rapture he was in seemed almost too great to be borne. He had come forty miles to hear Mr. Berridge, and was to leave him the next morning, which he did with a glad heart, telling all who came in his way what God had done for his soul.

76. "About the time Mr. Coe (that was his name) began to rejoice, a girl about twelve years old, exceeding poorly dressed, appeared to be as deeply wounded as any; but I lost sight of her, till I heard of another born in Sion, and found upon inquiry it was her. And now I saw such a sight as I do not expect to see again on this side eternity: The faces of three children, and, I think, of all the believers, did really shine; and such a beauty, such a look of extreme happiness, and of divine love and simplicity, I never saw in human faces till now. The newly justified eagerly embraced one another, weeping on each other's necks for joy. They then saluted all of their own sex, and besought all to help them in praising God.

77. "Thursday, 24, I went to hear Mr. Hic' s, at Wrestlingworth, four miles from Everton. We were glad to hear that he had given himself up to the work of God; and that the power of the Highest fell on his hearers, as on Mr. Berridge's. While he was preaching, fifteen or sixteen persons felt the arrows of the Almighty, and dropped down. A few of these cried out with the utmost violence, and with little intermission, for some hours; while the rest made no great noise, but continued struggling as in the pangs of death. Besides these, one little girl was deeply convinced, and a boy nine or ten years old. Both these, and several others, when carried into the parsonage-house, either lay as dead, or struggled with all their might; but in a short time, their cries increased above measure. I prayed; and for a time all were calm; but the storm soon rose again. Mr. Hickes then prayed, and afterwards Mr. Berridge; but still, though some received consolation, others remained in deep sorrow of heart.

"Upon the whole, I remark, that few ancient people

experience anything of this work of God, and scarce any of the rich : These generally show either an utter contempt of it, or an enmity to it. Indeed so did Mr. Hickee himself some time since, even denying the sacrament to those who went to hear Mr. Berridge. As neither of these gentlemen have much eloquence, the Lord hereby more clearly shows that it is His own work. It extends into Cambridgeshire, to within a mile of the University ; and about as far into Huntingdonshire ; but flourishes most of all in the eastern and northern parts of Bedfordshire. The violent struggling of many in the above-mentioned churches has broke several pews and benches ; yet it is common for people to remain unaffected there, and afterwards drop down in their way home. Some have been found lying as dead in the road ; others in Mr. Berridge's garden ; not being able to walk from the church to his house, though it is not two hundred yards."

78. Saturday, November 24, I rode to Everton, having been there some months before. (Page 518.) On Sunday afternoon God was eminently present with us, though rather to comfort than convince. But I observed a remarkable difference since I was here, as to the manner of the work : None now were in trances, none cried out, none fell down, or were convulsed ; only some trembled exceedingly, a low murmur was heard, and many were refreshed with the multitude of peace. The danger *was*, to regard extraordinary circumstances too much, such as outcries, convulsions, visions, trances, as if these were essential to the inward work, so that it could not go on without them. Perhaps the danger *is*, to regard them too little ; to condemn them altogether ; to imagine they had nothing of God in them ; yea, were a hinderance to the work : Whereas, the truth is, (1.) God suddenly and strongly convinced many that they were undone, lost sinners ; the natural consequences whereof were sudden outcries, and strong bodily convulsions. (2.) To strengthen and encourage them that believed, and to make his work more apparent, He favoured several of them with divine dreams ; others with trances or visions. (3.) In some of these instances, after a time, nature mixed with grace. (4.) Satan likewise mimicked this part of the work of God, in order to discredit the whole work : And yet it is not wise to give up this part, any more

than to give up the whole. At first it was doubtless wholly from God: It is partly so at this day; and He will enable us to discern how far in every case the work is pure, and how far mixed.

79. On Thursday, 29, the day appointed for a general thanksgiving, I preached at West-street, Seven-Dials, London, both morning and afternoon. (Page 520.) I believe the oldest man in England has not seen a thanksgiving-day so observed before: It had the solemnity of the general fast; all the shops were shut up; the people in the streets appeared, one and all, with an air of seriousness. The Prayers, Lessons, and whole public service, were admirably suited to the occasion. The prayer for our enemies, in particular, was extremely striking; perhaps it is the first instance of the kind in Europe. There was no noise, hurry, bonfires, fireworks, in the evening, and no public diversions: This is indeed a Christian holiday; a "rejoicing unto the Lord." The next day came the news that Admiral Hawke had dispersed the French fleet.

80. In the beginning of the year 1760, there was a great revival of the work of God in Yorkshire. (Page 524.) "On January 13," says a correspondent, "about thirty persons were met together at Otley, (a town ten miles north-east of Leeds,) in the evening, in order, as usual, to pray, sing hymns, and to provoke one another to love and to good works. When they came to speak of the several states of their souls, some with deep sighs and groans complained of the heavy burden they felt from the remains of inbred sin; seeing, in a clearer light than ever before, the necessity of a deliverance from it. When they had spent the usual time together, a few went to their own houses; but the rest remained upon their knees, groaning for the great and precious promises. When one of them was desired to pray, he no sooner lifted up his voice to God, than the Holy Ghost made intercession in all that were present, 'with groanings that could not be uttered;' and in a while they expressed the travail of their souls by loud and bitter cries. They had no doubt of the favour of God; but they could not rest while they had anything in them contrary to His nature. One cried out in an agony, 'Lord, deliver me from my sinful nature!' then a second, a third, and a fourth; and while he that prayed first was uttering those

words, 'Thou God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, hear us for the sake of thy Son Jesus!' one broke out, 'Blessed be the Lord for ever, for He has purified my heart!' another, 'Praise the Lord with me; for He has cleansed my heart from sin;' another cried, 'I am hanging over the pit of hell!' another shrieked out, 'I am in hell! O save me, save me!' while another said, with a far different voice, 'Blessed be the Lord, for He hath pardoned all my sins!' Thus they continued for the space of two hours, some praising and magnifying God, some crying to Him for pardon or purity of heart, with the greatest agony of spirit. Before they parted, three believed God had fulfilled His word, and cleansed them from all unrighteousness. The next evening they met again, and the Lord was again present to heal the broken in heart. One received remission of sins, and three more believed God had cleansed them from all sin; and it is observable, these are all poor, illiterate creatures, incapable of counterfeiting, and unlikely to attempt it. But 'when His word goeth forth, it giveth light and understanding to the simple.'"

81. Here began that glorious work of sanctification, which had been nearly at a stand for twenty years. But from time to time it spread, first through various parts of Yorkshire, afterwards in London, then through most parts of England; next through Dublin, Limerick, and all the south and west of Ireland. And wherever the work of sanctification increased, the whole work of God increased in all its branches. Many were convinced of sin, many justified, many backsliders healed. So it was in the London society in particular. In February, 1761, it contained upwards of three-and-twenty hundred members; in 1763, above eight-and-twenty hundred.

82. February 27, 1761, I met about thirty persons who had experienced a deep work of God. And whether they are saved from sin, or no, they are certainly full of faith and love.

Wednesday, March 4, I was scarce come into the room, where a few believers were met together, when one began to tremble exceedingly. (Vol. III., page 46.) She soon sunk to the floor. After a violent struggle, she burst out into prayer, which was quickly changed into praise; and she then declared "The Lamb of God has taken away all

my sins." Wednesday, 18, by talking with several in Wednesbury, I found God was carrying on His work here as at London. We had ground to hope one prisoner was set at liberty under the sermon on Saturday morning; another on Saturday evening. One or more received remission of sins on Sunday; on Monday morning another, and on Wednesday yet another, believed the blood of Christ had cleansed them from all sin. In the evening I could scarce think but more than one heard Him say, "I will: Be thou clean." Indeed, so wonderfully was He present till near midnight, as if He would have healed the whole congregation. (Page 48.)

Monday, 23, many Preachers meeting me at Leeds, I inquired into the state of the northern societies; and found the work of God was increasing on every side. Afterwards, I talked with several of those who believed they were saved from sin; and, after a close examination, I found reason to believe that fourteen of them were not deceived.

83. Saturday, May 2, after Mr. Hopper had spent some time there, and formed a little society, I went to Aberdeen. I preached there morning and evening, either in the College-hall or the Close, to very numerous and attentive congregations, on Sunday and the three following days. (Page 52.) Thursday, 7, leaving near ninety members in the society, I rode over to Sir Archibald Grant's, near Monymusk, about twenty miles north-west from Aberdeen. About six, I preached in the church, pretty well filled with such persons as we did not look for so near the Highlands. I was much comforted among them; and, setting out early on Friday, on Saturday reached Edinburgh.

84. Thursday, 21, inquiring how it was that in all these parts we had so few witnesses of full salvation, I constantly received one and the same answer: "We see now we sought it by our works: We thought it was to come gradually: We never expected it to come in a moment, by simple faith, in the very same manner as we received justification." (Page 59.) What wonder is it, then, that you have been fighting all these years "as one that beateth the air?" Monday, June 22, I spoke, one by one, to the society at Hutton-Rudby, near Yarm. Of about eighty members, near seventy were believers; and I think sixteen renewed in love. Here were two bands of children, one of boys, and one of girls;



most of whom were walking in the light. Four of those who seemed to be saved from sin were of one family ; and all of them walked holy and unblamable. And many instances of the same kind I found in every part of the county.

85. August 22, I returned to London, and found the work of God swiftly increasing. (Page 72.) The congregations in every place were larger than they had been for several years. Many were, from day to day, convinced of sin ; many found peace with God ; many backsliders were healed, and filled with love ; and many believers entered into such a rest as it had not before entered into their hearts to conceive. Meantime, the enemy was not wanting to sow tares among the good seed. I saw this clearly, but durst not use violence, lest, in plucking up the tares, I should root up the wheat also. On Monday, September 21, I came to Bristol ; and here, likewise, I found a great increase of the work of God. The congregations were exceeding large, and the people longing and thirsting after righteousness ; and every day afforded us fresh instances of persons convinced of sin, or converted to God : So that it seems He was pleased to pour out his Spirit this year, on every part both of England and Ireland, in a manner we never had seen before ; at least, not for twenty years. O what pity that so many of the children of God did not know the day of their visitation !

86. December 26, I made a particular inquiry into the case of Mary Special, a young woman then living at Tottenham-court-road. (Page 76.) She said, " Four years since I found much pain in my breasts, and afterwards hard lumps. Four months ago my left breast broke, and kept running continually. Growing worse and worse, after some time I was recommended to St. George's Hospital. I was let blood many times, and took hemlock thrice a day ; but I was no better. The pain and lumps were the same, and both my breasts were quite hard, and black as soot. Yesterday se'nnight I went to Mr. Owen's, where there was a meeting for prayer. Mr. B. saw me, and asked, ' Have you faith to be healed ? ' I said, ' Yes. ' He then prayed for me, and in a moment all my pain was gone. But the next day I felt a little pain again. I clapped my hands on my breasts, and cried out, ' Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me whole. ' It was gone ; and from that hour I had

no pain, no soreness, no lumps or swelling, but both my breasts were perfectly well, and have been so ever since."

Now, here are plain facts. 1. She was ill: 2. She is well: 3. She became so in a moment. Which of these can with modesty be denied?

87. All January, 1762, God continued to work mightily, not only in and about London, but in most parts of England and Ireland. (Page 77, &c.) February 5, I met at noon, as usual, those who believed they were saved from sin, and warned them of the enthusiasm that was breaking in by means of two or three weak, though good, men, who, through a misconstrued text in the Revelation, inferred that they should not die. This gave great occasion of triumph to those that sought occasion; who rejoiced as though they had found great spoil. This year, from the beginning to the end, was a year never to be forgotten. Such a season I never saw before. Such a multitude of sinners were converted from the error of their ways, in all parts both of England and Ireland, and so many were filled with pure love.

88. In April I crossed over to Ireland; and in every part of the kingdom, north, west, and south, found cause to bless God for the abundant increase of his work. (Page 83, &c.) On July 24 I returned to Dublin, and found the flame still increasing. The congregation was as large this evening as it used to be on Sunday evening. Monday, 26, it was larger at five in the morning than it used to be in the evening; and in two days and a half, four persons gave thanks for a sense of God's pardoning mercy; and seven, (among whom were a mother and her daughter,) for being perfected in love. The person by whom, chiefly, it pleased God to work, was John Manners, a plain man, of middling sense, and not elegant, but rather slow of speech; one who had never before been eminently useful, but seemed to be raised up for this single work: And as soon as it was done, he fell into a consumption, languished awhile, and died. (Page 101, &c.)

89. I found he had not at all exceeded the truth in the accounts he had sent me from time to time. In one of his first letters he says, "The work here is such as I never expected to see. Some are justified or sanctified almost every day. This week three or four were justified, and as

many, if not more, renewed in love. The people are all on fire. Such a day as last Sunday, I never saw before. While I was at prayer in the society, the power of the Lord overshadowed us, and some cried out, 'Lord, I can believe!' The cry soon became general, with strong prayers. Twice I attempted to sing; but my voice could not be heard. I then desired them to restrain themselves, and in stillness and composure to wait for the blessing; on which all but two or three, who could not refrain, came into a solemn silence. I prayed again, and the softening power of grace was felt in many hearts. Our congregations increased much, and I have no doubt but we shall see greater things than these."

Four days after, he writes: "The work of God increases every day. There is hardly a day but some are justified, or sanctified, or both. On Thursday three came and told me the blood of Christ had cleansed them from all sin. One of them told me she had been justified seven years, and had been five years convinced of the necessity of sanctification. But this easy conviction availed not. A fortnight since, she was seized with so keen a conviction, as gave her no rest till God had sanctified her, and witnessed it to her heart.

"The fire catches all that come near. An old soldier, in his return from Germany to the north of Ireland, fell in one night with these wrestling Jacobs, to his great astonishment. As he was going to Germany, in the beginning of the war, the Lord healed him in Dublin; and, in spite of all the distresses of a severe campaign, he walked in the light continually. On his return through London, he was convinced of the necessity of full sauctification; and soon after he came hither, his heart was broken in pieces, while he was with a little company who meet daily for prayer. One evening, as they were going away, he stopped them, and begged they would not go till God had blessed him. They kneeled down again, and did not cease wrestling with God till he had a witness that he was saved from all sin."

90. In his last letter, he says, "I had much fear about the children, lest our labour should be lost upon them. But I find we shall reap, if we faint not. Margaret Roper, about eight years old, has been thoughtful for some time. The other day, while they were at family prayer, she burst

into tears, and wept bitterly. They asked what was the matter. She said she was a great sinner, and durst not pray. They bade her go to bed. She no sooner went into the chamber, than she began crying and clapping her hands ; so that they heard her across the street. But God soon bound up her broken heart. Being asked how she felt herself, she said, 'Ten times better. Now I can love God. I wish you would sit up and sing with me all night.' She has been happy ever since, and is as serious as one of forty. —July 3. Our joy is now quite full. The flame rises higher and higher. Since Saturday, eight sinners were justified, and two more renewed in love. Our house was once large enough : Now it is scarce sufficient to contain us. And we have not many in the society who are not either wrestling with God for his love, or rejoicing therein."

91. Upon examination, I found three or four and forty in Dublin who enjoyed the pure love of God. At least forty of these had attained it in four months. The same number had received remission of sins. Nor was the hand of the Lord shortened yet : He still wrought as swiftly as ever. In some respects the work of God in this place was more remarkable than even that at London. (1.) It is far greater, in proportion to the time, and to the number of the people. This society is scarce a fifth part of that ; yet, six months after this flame broke out there, we had about thirty witnesses of the great salvation. Here were above forty in four months. (2.) The work here was more pure. In all this time there were none of them headstrong or unadvisable ; none who dreamed of being immortal, or infallible, or incapable of temptation ; in short, no whimsical or enthusiastic persons. All were calm and sober-minded. I know several of these were, in process of time, moved from their steadfastness. I am nothing surprised at this : It was no more than was to be expected : I rather wonder that more were not moved. Nor does this in any degree alter my judgment concerning the great work which God then wrought ; the greatest, I believe, that has been wrought in Europe since the Reformation.

92. The same work was now carrying on in Limerick, of which I had several accounts. The last ran thus : "Blessed be God, since you was here, His word runs swiftly. Last night, His power was present indeed, and another was

assured that God had cleansed him from all unrighteousness. There are now ten women and thirteen men who witness the same confession; and their lives agree thereto. Eight have lately received the remission of their sins; and many are on the full stretch for God, and just ready to step into the pool." Hence it appears, that in proportion to the time, which was only three or four weeks, and the number of hearers, (not one half, if a third part,) the work of God was greater in Limerick than even in Dublin itself.

93. Sunday, August 1, I landed at Parkgate; and rode on to Chester. (Page 107.) Never was the society in such a state before. There was nothing but peace and love among them. About twelve believed they were saved from sin: Most of the rest were strongly athirst for God, and looking for Him continually. Wednesday, 4, I rode to Liverpool, where also was such a work of God as had never been known there before. There was a surprising congregation in the evening, and had been for some months. A little before I went, nine were justified in one hour. The next morning I spoke severally with those who believed they were sanctified. They were fifty-one in all; twenty-one men, twenty-one widows or married women, and nine young women or children. In one of these the change was wrought three weeks after she was justified; in three, seven days after it; in one, five days; and in Samuel Lutwich, aged fourteen, two days only. I asked Hannah Blakeley, aged eleven, "What do you want now?" She said, with amazing energy, the tears running down her cheeks, "Nothing in this world; nothing but more of my Jesus!"

94. One wrote thus from Bolton in Lancashire: "Glory be to God, He is doing wonders among us. Since Mr. Furz left us, there have been seven (if not more) justified, and six sanctified at one meeting. Two of these were, I think, justified and sanctified in less than three days. O what a meeting was our last class-meeting! In three minutes, or less, God quite unexpectedly convinced an old opposer of the truth, and wounded many more. I never felt the abiding presence of God so exceeding powerful before."

Inquiring how the revival began at Macclesfield, I received the following account:—"In March last, after a long season of dryness and barrenness, one Monday night, John Oldham

preached. When he had done, and was going away, a man dropped down, and cried aloud for mercy. In a short time, so did several others. He came back, and wrestled with God in prayer for them. About twelve he retired, leaving some of the brethren in prayer for them, who resolved to wrestle on till they had an answer of peace. They continued in prayer till six in the morning, and nine prisoners were set at liberty.

“They met again the next night, and six or seven more were filled with peace and joy in believing. So were one or two more every night till the Monday following, when there was another general shower of grace. And many believed, that ‘the blood of Christ had cleansed them from all sin.’ I spoke to these, (forty in all,) one by one. Some of them said, they received that blessing ten days, some seven, some four, some three days, after they found peace with God. What marvel, since ‘one day is with God as a thousand years!’”

95. The case of Ann Hooly was peculiar. She had often declared, “The Methodist God shall not be my God. I will sooner go to hell, than I will go to heaven in their way.” She was standing in the street with two young men, when John Oldham, passing by, spoke to one and the other, and went on. She burst into tears, and said, “What, am I such a sinner that he will not speak to me?” About twelve he was sent for in haste. He found her in deep distress, but continued in prayer till all her trouble was gone, and her spirit rejoiced in God her Saviour. Yet three nights after, she was in much distress again, crying, “I have a wicked heart till God takes it away.” He did so in a few hours. She was ever after a pattern to all the young people in the town. She was thirteen years old. In about a year her spirit returned to God.

On Saturday I spoke to those at Manchester who believed God had cleansed their hearts. They were sixty-three in number; to about sixty of whom I could not find there was any reasonable objection.

96. Many years ago, my brother frequently said, “Your day of Pentecost is not fully come: But I doubt not it will; and you will then hear of persons sanctified, as frequently as you do now of persons justified.” Any unprejudiced person might observe, that it was now fully come; and, accordingly,

we did hear of persons sanctified, in London, and most other parts of England, and in Dublin, as well as most other parts of Ireland, as frequently as of persons justified; although instances of the latter were far more frequent than they had been for twenty years before. That many of these did not retain the gift of God, is no proof that it was not given them. That many do retain it to this day, is matter of praise and thanksgiving; and many of them are gone to Him whom they loved, praising Him with their latest breath, just in the spirit of Ann Steed, the first witness in Bristol of the great salvation; who, being worn out with sickness and racking pain, after she had commended to God all that were round her, lifted up her eyes, cried aloud, "Glory! Hallelujah!" and died.

97. Monday, December 6, I heard George Bell pray at the Foundery. I believe part of what he said was from God; part from a heated imagination. But as he did not speak anything dangerously wrong, I did not yet see cause to hinder him. Many of our brethren were now taking much pains to propagate that principle, that none can teach those who are renewed in love, unless he be in that state himself. I saw the tendency of this; but I durst take no violent step. I mentioned this to some of my friends, and told them what would be the consequence; but they could not believe it: So I let it rest; only desiring them to remember I had told them before. (Page 123.)

Sunday, 26, that I might do nothing hastily, I permitted George Bell to be once more at West-street chapel, and once more (on Wednesday evening) at the Foundery; but it was worse and worse. He now spoke, as from God, what I knew God had not spoken. I therefore desired he would pray there no more. I well hoped this would repress the impetuosity of a few good, but mistaken, men; especially, considering the case of Benjamin Harris, the most impetuous of them all: A week or two before, as he was working in his garden, he was struck raving mad. He continued so till Tuesday, December 21st, when he lay still and sensible, but could not speak, till on Wednesday morning his spirit returned to God. I now stood and looked back on the past year; a year of uncommon trials and uncommon blessings. Abundance have been convinced of sin. Very many have found peace with God; and in London only, I believe full

two hundred have been brought into glorious liberty; and yet I have had more care and trouble in six months, than in several years preceding.

98. Friday, January 7, 1763, I desired George Bell to meet me, and took much pains to convince him of his mistakes, particularly that which he had lately adopted, that the end of the world was to be on February 28th; but I could make no impression upon him. He was as unmoved as a rock.

Sunday, 23, in order to check a growing evil, I preached on, "Judge not, that ye be not judged." But it had quite the contrary effect on many, who construed it all into a satire on George Bell; one of whose friends said, "If the devil himself had been in the pulpit, he would not have preached such a sermon!" All this time I had information from all quarters, that there would soon be a division in the society; but I was still in hopes, that by bearing all things, I should overcome evil with good, till, on Tuesday evening, the 15th, Mrs. Coventry came in, and threw down her ticket, with those of her husband, daughters, and servants, saying, they would hear such doctrines no longer: Mr. ——— preached perfection; but Mr. Wesley pulled it down. So I did; the perfection of George Bell, and all that abetted him. So the breach is made; the water is let out: Let those who can, gather it up. More and more persons threw up their tickets every day; and all these were zealous to gain converts to their party, chiefly by speaking all manner of evil, whereby many that did not join them, left us: So in a few months, above two hundred members left the society.

99. Monday, February 21, observing the terror occasioned by that wonderful prophecy to spread far and wide, I endeavoured to draw some good therefrom, by enforcing those words at Wapping: "Seek ye the Lord while he may be found: Call upon him while he is near;" but declaring at the same time, (as I had frequently done before,) "It must be false, if the Bible is true." The next three days I spent in transcribing the names of the society. I found about thirty of those who were saved from sin had left us; but above four hundred of those that witnessed the same confession were more united than ever. Monday, 28, preaching in the evening at Spitalfields, on, "Prepare to meet thy God," I largely showed the utter absurdity of the supposi-



tion, that the world was to end that night: But, notwithstanding all I could say, many were afraid to go to bed; and some wandered about in the fields, being persuaded, that, if the world did not end, at least London would be swallowed up by an earthquake. I went to bed at my usual time, and was fast asleep at ten o'clock.

The greatest part of this spring I was fully employed in visiting the society, and settling the minds of those who had been confused and distressed by a thousand misrepresentations. Indeed, a flood of calumny and evil-speaking (as was easily foreseen) had been poured out on every side. My point was still, to go straight forward in the work whereto I am called.

100. I did not leave London till the 16th of May. (Page 133.) After spending a few days in Scotland, I returned through Newcastle to Barnard-Castle, in the county of Durham, and preached there to an exceeding numerous and deeply serious congregation. I intended, after preaching, to meet the society; but the bulk of the people were so eager to hear more, that I could not forbear letting in near as many as the room would contain. Thursday, June 6, even at five in the morning I was obliged to preach abroad, by the numbers that flocked to hear. There is something remarkable in the manner wherein God revived his work in this place: A few months ago, the generality of the people in this Circuit were exceeding lifeless. Samuel Meggot, (now with God,) perceiving this, advised the society in Barnard-Castle to observe every Friday as a day of fasting and prayer. The very first Friday they met together, God broke in upon them in a marvellous manner; and his work has been increasing among them ever since. The neighbouring societies heard of this, agreed to follow the same rule, and soon experienced the same blessing. Is not the neglect of this plain duty (I mean, fasting, ranked by our Lord with thanksgiving and prayer) one general occasion of deadness among Christians? Can any one willingly neglect it and be guiltless?

101. I had desired Samuel Meggot to give me some further account of the work of God at Barnard-Castle. Part of his answer was as follows:—

“ June 7, 1763.

“ WITHIN ten weeks, at least twenty persons have found peace with God, and twenty-eight the great salvation.

This morning before you left us one found peace, and one the second blessing; and after you was gone two more received it. One of these had belonged to the society before; but after he turned back had bitterly persecuted his wife, particularly after she professed the being saved from sin. On the 29th of May, he came in a furious rage to drag her out of the society. One cried out, 'Let us go to prayer for him.' Presently he ran away, and his wife went home. Not long after, he came in like a madman, and swore he would be the death of her. One said, 'Are you not afraid lest God should smite you?' He answered, 'No; let God do his worst: I will make an end of her and the brats, and myself too, and we will go to hell together.' His wife and children fell down and broke out into prayer. His countenance changed, and he was quiet as a lamb. But it was not long before a horrible dread overwhelmed him: He was sore distressed. The hand of God was upon him, and gave him no rest day or night. On Tuesday in the afternoon he went to her who prayed for him when he came to drag his wife out, begging her, with a shower of tears, to pray for his deliverance. On Thursday he wrestled with God, till he was as wet all over with sweat as if he had been dipped in water. But that evening God wiped away his tears, and filled him with joy unspeakable. This morning, while he was at prayer, God gave him a witness in himself that He had purified his heart. When he rose from his knees, he could not help declaring it. He now ran to his wife, not to kill her, but to catch her in his arms, that they might weep over one another with tears of joy and love."

102. Wednesday, October 12, I went to Norwich, resolved either to mend or end the society. (Page 152.) On Friday I read the Rules of our society to the congregation; adding, "Those who will keep these Rules, and those only, may continue with us. For many years I have had more trouble with this society, than with half the societies in England put together. With God's help, I will try you one year longer; and if you bring any better fruit, I shall rejoice." The Sunday following I met the society, for the first time, immediately after morning preaching. Afterwards I went to church with a considerable number of the people, several of whom, I suppose, had not been within those walls for many

years. In the evening God made bare his arm, and his word was sharp as any two-edged sword. And from this time I had more and more proof that our labour at Norwich had not been in vain.

103. Friday, November 18, I finished the visitation of the classes in London. Here I stood and looked back on the late occurrences. (Page 156.) Before Mr. Walsh left England, God began that great work which has continued ever since, without any considerable intermission. During the whole time, many have been convinced of sin, many justified, and many backsliders healed. But the peculiar work of this season has been what St. Paul calls "the perfecting of the saints." Many persons in London, Bristol, York, and in various parts both of England and Ireland, have experienced so deep and universal a change, as it had not before entered into their hearts to conceive. After a deep conviction of inbred sin, they have been in an instant filled with faith and love: Sin vanished, and they found, from that time, no pride, anger, desire, or unbelief. They could "rejoice evermore, pray without ceasing, and in everything give thanks." Now, whether we call this the destruction of sin or not, it was a glorious work of God; such a work as, considering both the depth and extent of it, we never saw in these kingdoms before. It is possible, some who spoke of this were mistaken; and it is certain some have lost what they then received. A few (very few compared to the whole number) first gave way to enthusiasm, then to pride; next to prejudice and offence; and at last separated from their brethren. But although this laid a huge stumbling-block in the way, yet the work of God went on. Nor has it ceased to this day in any of its branches: God still convinces, justifies, sanctifies. We lost only the dross, the enthusiasm, the prejudice, and offence. The pure gold remained, "faith working by love;" yea, and increased daily.

104. Friday, March 30, 1764, I met those in Sheffield who believed God had "redeemed them from all their sins." They were about sixty in number. I could not learn that any among them walked unworthy of their profession. Many watched over them for evil; but they overcame evil with good. I found nothing of self-conceit, stubbornness, impatience of contradiction, or enthusiasm, among them. They had learned better of Him that was meek and lowly of heart, and "adorned the doctrine of God our Saviour."

105. Friday, June 8, having visited the southern parts of Scotland, I set out for Inverness; but I could not reach it till eight on Sunday morning. (Page 181.) It rained much, so that I could not preach abroad; and as I knew no one in the town, and could hear of no convenient room, I knew not which way to turn. At ten I went to the High-Kirk. After service, Mr. Fraser, one of the Ministers, invited me to dinner, and then to drink tea. As we were drinking tea, he asked, at what hour I would please to preach. I said, "At half-hour past five." The kirk was filled in a very short time; and I have seldom found greater liberty of spirit. The other Minister came afterwards to our inn, and showed the most cordial affection. I preached in the morning once more; and I think the kirk was fuller than before. And I could not but observe the remarkable behaviour of the whole congregation after service: Neither man, woman, nor child spoke one word all the way down the main street! About eleven we took horse. While we were dining at Nairn, the innkeeper said, "Sir, the gentlemen of the town have read the little book you gave me on Saturday, and would be glad if you would please to give them a sermon." On my consenting, the bell was immediately rung, and a large congregation assembled. What a difference is there between south and north Britain! Every one here at least loves to *hear* the word of God. And none takes it into his head to speak one uncivil word to any, for endeavouring to save his soul. Not long after, a little society was formed at Inverness, which continues to this day.

106. All this as well as the preceding year, there was a remarkable increase in most of our societies, both in England and in Ireland. I crossed over from Scotland to the north of Ireland in the beginning of May, and, having traversed Ulster and Connaught, on Wednesday, June 19, reached Cork. (Page 226.) On the Monday and Tuesday following I spoke, one by one, to the members of the society. They were two hundred and ninety-five, fifty or sixty more than they had been for several years. This was owing partly to the preaching abroad, and partly to the meetings for prayer in several parts of the city. These had been the means of awakening many gross sinners, of recovering many backsliders, and bringing many that never thought of it before, to attend the preaching at the new room. After visiting the

intermediate societies, on Thursday, July 18, I reached Dublin; and, having spent a little time very comfortably there, in the beginning of August returned to England.

107. Sunday, 8, having heard a strange account, as soon as I came to Redruth, I sent for the person herself, Grace Paddy, a sensible young woman. I can speak of her now without restraint, as she is safe in Abraham's bosom. She said, "I was harmless, as I thought, but quite careless about religion, till about Christmas, when my brother was saying, 'God has given me all I want: I am as happy as I can live.' This was about ten in the morning. The words struck me to the heart. I went into my chamber, and thought, 'Why am I not so? O, I cannot be, because I am not convinced of sin.' I cried out vehemently, 'Lord, lay as much conviction upon me as my body can bear.' Immediately I saw myself in such a light, that I roared for the disquietness of my heart. The maid running up, I said, 'Call my brother.' He came, and rejoiced over me, and said, 'Christ is just ready to receive you, only believe;' and then went to prayer. In a short time all my trouble was gone, and I did believe. All my sins were blotted out. But in the afternoon I was thoroughly convinced of the want of a deeper change. I felt the remains of sin in my heart, which I longed to have taken away. I longed to be saved from all sin, to be cleansed from all unrighteousness; and all the time Mr. Rankin was preaching, this desire increased exceedingly. Afterwards he met the society. During his last prayer, I was quite overwhelmed with the power of God. I felt an inexpressible change, in the very depth of my heart. And from that time I have felt no anger, no pride, no wrong temper of any kind; nothing contrary to the pure love of God, which I feel continually. I desire nothing but Christ; and I have Christ always reigning in my heart. I want nothing: He is my sufficient portion, in time and in eternity." (Page 234.)

Such an instance I never knew before; such an instance I never read. A person convinced of sin, converted to God, and renewed in love, within twelve hours! Yet it is by no means incredible; seeing one day is with God as a thousand years.

108. Sunday, November 24, I preached in London on those words in the lesson for the day, "The Lord our Righteousness." (Page 238.) I said not one thing which I

have not said, at least, fifty times within this twelvemonth. Yet it appeared to many entirely new, who much importuned me to print my sermon, supposing it would stop the mouths of all gainsayers. Alas, for their simplicity! In spite of all I can print, say, or do, will not those who seek occasion find occasion?

109. I went into Ireland again, in the latter end of March, 1767. (Page 275, &c.) It was my desire to know the real state of the work of God throughout that kingdom. And the sum of my observations was, (after visiting every part of it,) There is a considerable increase of the work of God throughout the province of Ulster. There is some increase in Connaught, particularly in Sligo, Castlebar, and Galway. In some parts of Leinster there is an increase. But in Munster, a land flowing with milk and honey, how amazing a change is there for the worse, within a year or two! At some places the god of this world has wholly prevailed, and those who were changed are returned as a dog to his vomit; in others, there is but a spark of the first love left. And in Limerick itself, I found only the remembrance of the fire which was kindled two years ago!

110. In Cork society I left, two years before, above three hundred members. I now found one hundred and eighty-seven. What occasioned so considerable a decrease? I believe the real cause was this: Between two and three years ago, T. Taylor and W. Pennington went to Cork, who were zealous men and sound Preachers. They set up meetings for prayer in several places, and preached abroad at both ends of the city. Hearers swiftly increased; the society increased; so did the number both of the convinced and the converted. I went when the flame was at the height; and preached abroad at both ends of the city. More and more were stirred up; and there was a greater awakening here than in any part of the kingdom. But misunderstandings crept in between the Leaders, and between some of them and the Preachers. A flame of anger succeeded the flame of love, and many were destroyed by it. Then some of our brethren learned a new opinion, and passionately contended for it. The Spirit of God was grieved; his blessing was withheld, and of course the flock was scattered. When they are convinced of their sin, and humbled before Him, then He will return.

111. In the latter end of April, 1768, there was a remarkable work among the children at Kingswood School. One of the Masters sent me a short account, as follows : (Page 319 :)—

“REV. AND DEAR SIR,

*April 27, 1768.*

“ON Wednesday, the 20th, God broke in upon our boys in a surprising manner. A serious concern has been observable in some of them for some time past. But that night, while they were in their private apartments, the power of God came upon them, even as a mighty rushing wind, which made them cry aloud for mercy. Last night, I hope, will never be forgotten, when about twenty were in the utmost distress. But God quickly spoke peace to two of them, J. Glascot and T. M—. A greater display of his love I never saw : They indeed rejoice with joy unspeakable. We have no need to exhort them to prayer ; for the spirit of prayer runs through the whole school. While I am writing, the cries of the boys from their several apartments are sounding in my ears. There are many still lying at the pool, who wait every moment to be put in. They are come to this, ‘Lord, I will not, I cannot, rest without thy love.’ Since I began to write, eight more are set at liberty, and rejoice in God their Saviour ; namely, John Coward, John Lion, John Maddern, John Boddily, John Thurgar, Charles Brown, William Higham, and Robert Hindmarsh. Their age is from eight to fourteen. There are but few that withstand the work : Nor is it likely they should do it long ; for the prayers of those that believe seem to carry all before them. Among the colliers likewise the work of God now increases greatly. The number added to the society since the Conference is a hundred and thirty.

“I had sealed my letter, but have opened it to inform you, that two more of our children have found peace. Several others are under deep conviction. Some of our Bristol friends are here, who are thunderstruck. This is the day we have wished for so long, the day you have had in view ; which has made you go through so much opposition, for the good of these poor children.

“JAMES HINDMARSH.”

112. A few days after, one wrote thus : “I cannot help

congratulating you on the happy situation of your family here. The power of God continues to work with almost irresistible force ; and there is good reason to hope, it will not be withdrawn till every soul is converted to God. I have had frequent opportunities of conversing alone with the boys, and find that the work has taken deep root in many hearts. The house rings with prayer and praise, and the whole behaviour of the children strongly speaks for God. The number of the new-born is increased since you received your last information. I have been a witness of part ; but the whole exceeds all that language can paint." Another writes, May 18 : " The work of God still goes on at Kingswood. Of the hundred and thirty members that have been added to the society since the last Conference, the greater part have received justifying faith, and are still rejoicing in God their Saviour. And (what is the most remarkable) I do not know of one backslider in the place. The outpouring of the Spirit on the children in the school has been exceeding great. I believe there is not one among them who has not been affected more or less. Twelve of them have found peace with God, and some in a very remarkable manner. These have no more doubt of the favour of God, than of their own existence. And the Lord is still with them, though not so powerfully as he was some weeks ago." Indeed I cannot doubt, but at first He wrought irresistibly, at least on some of them ; but afterwards they might resist the grace of God, which several of them did, till they had well-nigh quenched his Spirit. I fear some of them have done it altogether. It is well if their last state be not worse than the first.

113. Tuesday, August 1, 1769, our Conference began at Leeds. (Page 373.) On Thursday I mentioned the case of our brethren at New-York. For some years past, several of our brethren from England and Ireland (and some of them Preachers) had settled in North-America, and had in various places formed societies, particularly in Philadelphia and New-York. The society at New-York had lately built a commodious preaching-house ; and now desired our help, being in great want of money, but much more of Preachers. Two of our Preachers, Richard Boardman and Joseph Pillmoor, willingly offered themselves for the service ; by whom we determined to send over fifty pounds, as a token



of our brotherly love. Several others of our Preachers went over in the following years. As they taught the same doctrine with their brethren here, so they used the same discipline. And the work of God prospered in their hands; so that a little before the rebellion broke out, about two-and-twenty Preachers (most of them Americans) acted in concert with each other, and near three thousand persons were united together in the American societies. These were chiefly in the provinces of Maryland, Virginia, Pennsylvania, and New-York.

114. June 17, 1770, I met the select society in Whitby, consisting of sixty-five members. I believe all of these were saved from sin, and most of them still walked in glorious liberty. Many of them spoke with admirable simplicity; and their word was like fire. Immediately the fire kindled, and spread from heart to heart. At nine, I met the children, most of whom had known the love of God. And several of them were able still to rejoice in God their Saviour. Almost as soon as I began to speak, God spoke to their hearts, and they were ill able to contain themselves. I observed one little maid in particular, who heaved and strove for some time, till at length she was constrained to yield, and broke out into strong cries and tears. In the evening, I met those children only who had tasted that the Lord is gracious. I asked her that cried so violently in the morning, what was the reason of it. She said, "I was so overwhelmed with the power and love of God that I could not hide it. A quarter of a year ago, one Saturday night, I was quite convinced I was a sinner, and afraid of dropping into hell; but on Sunday I felt the pardoning love of God. Yet I had many doubts till Monday evening, when they were all taken away in a moment. After this, I saw and felt the wickedness of my heart, and longed to be delivered from it. And on Sunday I was delivered, and had as clear a witness of this as of my justification. But I was some time off my watch: Then it was not so clear. And people commended me, till by little and little I lost it. Indeed I still feel the love of God; but not as I did then." (Page 400.)

115. Saturday, September 15, I observed a very uncommon concern in the children at Kingswood School, while I was explaining, and enforcing upon them, the first principles of religion. (Page 414.) Tuesday, 18, most of them went

to see the body of Francis Evans, one of our neighbours, who died two or three days before. About seven Mr. Hindmarsh met them all in the school, and gave an exhortation suited to the occasion. It was with great difficulty they contained themselves till he began to pray: Then Alexander Mather and Richard N— cried aloud for mercy; and quickly another and another, till all but two or three were constrained to do the same; and as long as he continued to pray, they continued the same loud and bitter cry. One of the maids, Elizabeth Nutt, was as deeply convinced as any of them. After prayer, Mr. Hindmarsh said, "Those of you that are resolved to serve God may go and pray together." Fifteen of them did so, and continued wrestling with God, with strong cries and tears, till nine o'clock.

116. Wednesday, 19, at the morning prayer many of them cried out again, though not so violently. From this time their whole spirit and behaviour were changed: They were all serious and loving to each other. The same seriousness and mildness continued on Thursday; and they walked together, talking only of the things of God. On Friday evening their concern greatly increased, so that they broke out again into strong cries; and they seemed to lose none of their concern, and spent all their spare-time in prayer.

Sunday, 23, fifteen of them gave me their names, being resolved, they said, to serve God. On Tuesday, during the time of prayer in the evening, they were affected just as the Tuesday before. The two other maids were then present, and were both cut to the heart.

117. Wednesday, 26, "I rode," says Mr. Rankin, "to Kingswood, and, going up stairs, heard one of the children praying in the next room. When he ceased, I went in, and found two others with him: Just then three more came in. I went to prayer. The power of God seemed to rest upon them, and pierced their hearts with deep conviction. The next morning I spent some time with all the children, and then desired those that were resolved to save their souls to come up stairs. Nine of them did so. While I prayed, the power of God came down, so that my voice was drowned by their cries. When I concluded, one of them broke out into prayer in a manner that quite astonished me; and during the whole day a peculiar spirit of seriousness rested on all the children."

118. "On Friday, 28," says Mr. Hindmarsh, "when I came out into the ground, ten of the children quickly gathered round about me, earnestly asking what they must do to be saved: Nor could I disengage myself from them till the bell rung for dinner. All this time we observed that the children who were most affected, learned faster and better than any of the rest. In the evening, I explained to them the nature of the Lord's supper. I then met twelve of them apart, and spoke to each particularly. When I asked one of them, (Simon Lloyd,) 'What do you want to make you happy?' after a little pause, he answered, 'God.' We went to prayer. Presently, a cry arose from one and another, till it went through all, vehemently calling upon God, and refusing to be comforted without the knowledge and love of God. About half an hour after eight, I bade them good night, and sent them up to bed; but Lloyd, Brown, and Robert Hindmarsh slipped aside, being resolved not to sleep till God revealed himself to them. Some of the rest heard them pray, and one and another stole down, some half-dressed, some almost naked. They continued praying by turns near three quarters of an hour, in which time four of them found peace with God. After I had prayed with them, and praised God till half an hour past nine, I desired them to go to bed. The rest did; but those three slipped away, and stayed with Richard Piercy, who was in deep agony of soul, and would by no means be persuaded to rise from his knees. The children, hearing them pray, in a few minutes ran down again. They continued wrestling, with still increasing agonies and tears, till three more found peace with God. About a quarter past ten I went to them again, and insisted upon their going to bed; which all of them did: But quickly one and another stole out of bed, till in a quarter of an hour they were all at prayer again: And the concern among them was deeper than ever, as well as more general; there being only four or five and twenty that were not cut to the heart. However, fearing they might hurt themselves, I sent one of our maids to persuade them to go up; but Jacky Brown, catching hold of her, said, 'O Betty, seek the salvation of your soul! Seek it in earnest! It is not too late; and it is not too soon.' Immediately she fell upon her knees, and burst out into tears and strong cries. The two other maids,

hearing this, ran in, and were presently seized as violently as her. Jacky Brown then began praying for Betty, and continued in prayer near three quarters of an hour. By that time there was a general cry from all the maids and all the boys. This continued till past eleven: We then with much difficulty persuaded them to go to bed. The maids continued below in much distress: But in a quarter of an hour Betty broke out into thanksgiving; the other two remained on their knees, praying as in an agony. I desired them to go into their own room; yet they would not go to bed, but continued in prayer.

119. "On Saturday I was waked between four and five by the children, vehemently crying to God. The maids went to them at five; and first one of the boys, then another, then one and another of the maids, poured out their souls before God. They continued weeping and praying till near nine o'clock, not thinking about meat or drink: Nay, Richard Piercy took no food all the day, but remained in words and groans calling upon God. About nine Diana went into her own room, and prayed partly alone, and partly with Betty. About ten, as Betty was praying, she sunk down as dead; but after some minutes, while Betty was praying on, she started up, praising God with all her might.

120. "Mary, hearing her, broke off her work, and ran unto her in haste. They all remained, praying by turns till twelve, when she lay like one at the point to die; but there was not any answer to prayer, nor any deliverance. About one, all the maids and three of the boys went up stairs, and began praying again; and between two and three Mary likewise rejoiced with joy unspeakable. They all continued till after four, praising the God of their salvation. Indeed, they seemed to have forgotten all things else, and thought of nothing but God and heaven.

"In the evening, all the maids, and many of the boys, were so hoarse they were scarce able to speak: But they were strong in the Spirit, full of love, and of joy and peace in believing.

"Sunday, 30, eight of the children, and three maids, received the Lord's supper, for the first time; and hitherto they are all rejoicing in God, and walking worthy of the Gospcl."

121. Thursday, January 16, 1772, I set out for Luton. Here I was offered the use of the church. The frost was exceeding sharp, and the glass was taken out of the windows. However, for the sake of the people, I accepted of the offer, though I might as well have preached in the open air. There were four or five times as many people as used to come to the room; so I did not repent of my labour. It was with great difficulty that we got through the deep snow to Hertford the next day; and I found the poor children whom Mr. A— kept at school were increased to about thirty boys and thirty girls. I went in immediately to the girls. Almost as soon as I began to speak, some of them burst into tears; and their emotion rose higher and higher; but it was kept within bounds till I began to pray: A cry then arose, which spread from one to another, till almost all cried aloud for mercy, and would not be comforted. But how was the scene changed when I went to the boys! They seemed as dead as stones, and scarce appeared to mind anything that was said; nay, some of them could ill refrain from laughing. However, I spoke on, and set before them the terrors of the Lord. Presently, one was cut to the heart; soon after, another and another; and in ten minutes, the far greater part of them were little less affected than the girls. Except at Kingswood, I have seen no such work of God upon children for above thirty years.

122. Wednesday, June 3, I desired to speak with those in Weardale (a valley in the county of Durham) who believed God had saved them from inward sin. (Page 466.) They were twenty in all; ten men, eight women, and two children. Of one man, and two women, I stood in doubt. The experience of the rest was clear; particularly that of the children, Margaret Sp—, aged fourteen, and Sally Bl—, a year younger. Lord, let neither of these live to dishonour thee! Rather take them unspotted to thyself!

In this part of Weardale, the people in general are employed in the lead-mines. In the year 1749 Mr. Hopper and John Brown came and preached among them. None opposed, and none asked them to eat or drink. Nevertheless, Mr. Hopper made them several more visits. In autumn four found peace with God, and agreed to meet together. At Christmas two young men of Allendale determined to visit Weardale. Before they entered it, they knelt down

on the snow, and besought the Lord, that he would incline some one to receive them into his house. At the first house where they called they were bid welcome; and they stayed there four days. Many were convinced, and some converted to God. One of the young men was Jacob Rowell. They made them several more visits during the winter. In summer twenty lively people were joined together. From that time they increased gradually to thirty-five, and so continued for ten years. They increased, by means of Samuel Meggot, to eighty; but, four years since, sunk to fifty-three. From that time they increased again, and were in August a hundred and twenty.

123. In two respects this society has always been peculiarly remarkable: The one, they have been liberal in providing everything needful for the Preachers: The other, they have been careful to marry with each other; and that, not for the sake of money, but virtue. Hence they assisted each other in bringing up their children. And God has eminently blessed them therein; for, in most of their families, the greatest part of their children above ten years old are converted to God. It was observed, too, that the Leaders were upright men, and truly alive to God. And even when they had no Preacher with them, they met every night for singing and prayer.

124. Last summer, the work of God revived, and gradually increased till the end of November. Then God made bare his arm. Those who were strangers to God felt, as it were, a sword in their bones: Those who knew God, were filled with joy unspeakable. The convictions that seized the unawakened were generally exceeding deep; so that their cries drowned every other voice, and no other means could be used than the speaking to the distressed, one by one, and encouraging them to lay hold on Christ. And this was not in vain. Many that were either on their knees, or prostrate on the ground, suddenly started up; and their very countenance showed that the Comforter was come. Immediately, these began to go about from one to another of those that were still in distress, praying to God, and exhorting them without delay to come to so gracious a Saviour. Many who then appeared quite unconcerned were thereby cut to the heart, and suddenly filled with such anguish as extorted loud and bitter cries. By such a

succession of persons mourning and rejoicing they were frequently detained great part of the night.

125. "On Sunday afternoon, December 1, as William Hunter was preaching," (this is the account given by the Leader,) "the power of God fell on the congregation in a wonderful manner. Many, being cut to the heart, cried aloud for mercy; and ten were added to the society. On Tuesday evening we met at six, but could not part till ten. Four found peace with God, and ran from one to another, exhorting them to believe in Christ. On Wednesday night many were deeply distressed, but none set at liberty. While we were meeting on Thursday night, two were enabled to rejoice in God their Saviour. On Saturday night we met at six, and three of us sung and prayed; but before the third had done, his voice could not be heard for the cries of the people. Seven of these soon arose, blessing and praising God, and went about encouraging others. Many hardened sinners were much affected thereby, and began to cry as loud as they had done; so that we had nothing to do but to stand and see the wonderful work of God. And O how dreadful, yet pleasing, was the sight! All this time many were crying for mercy. Among these were four young men, who remained on their knees five hours together. We endeavoured to break up the meeting at ten; but the people would not go: So that we were constrained to continue till twelve. Near this time, one was asked what he thought of this. He answered, 'I wish it may be all real.' He then turned to go home; but, after taking a few steps, began to cry aloud for mercy. He cried till his strength was quite gone; and then lay as one dead, till about four o'clock in the morning: Then God revealed his Son in his heart. During this meeting, eleven persons found peace with God.

126. "On Sunday morning we met at the common hour, and three of us sung and prayed as usual, till our voice was drowned by the thanksgiving of the new converts, and the cries of convinced sinners. Among the rest, an ancient woman was so struck, that she vehemently cried out, 'Mercy! mercy! O what a sinner am I! I was the first that received them into my house in Weardale, and have heard them almost these thirty years. O pray for me! Mercy! mercy!' It was not long before she found mercy, and mightily rejoiced

in God her Saviour: And about the same time another mourner passed from death unto life.

“We met again at two, and abundance of people came from various parts, being alarmed by some confused reports. We sung and prayed; and the power of God descended. A young man, who had been deeply wounded in the morning, now found One mighty to heal. We then concluded; but many of the people came in again, and others stayed at the door. Among those who came in was one who had been remarkably profligate. He cried for mercy with all his might. Several crowded about to see him; and before we parted, not only he, but five more, were rejoicing and praising God together. We met together on Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday; and by that time, nine more found peace.

“Mr. Rowell came on Tuesday, stayed three days, and joined many new members. Three-and-thirty of these had found peace with God, as did five more in the week following. When Mr. Watson came, he joined many more, eleven of whom were justified. At our meeting on Tuesday, eleven more were filled with the peace of God. Yet one young man seemed quite unconcerned. But suddenly the power of God fell upon him: He cried for two hours with all his might, and then the Lord set his soul at liberty. On Saturday a few met at Mr. Hunter’s room, who were athirst for full sanctification. For this they wrestled with God till a young man found the blessing, as several others have done since. We have ever since continued our meetings, and God has continued his loving-kindness toward us; so that above a hundred and twenty are added to the society, above a hundred of whom are believers.”

127. I left John Fenwick, on Friday, June 5, to examine the society, one by one. This he did on Friday and Saturday. The account of what ensued, he gave in the following words:—

“On Saturday evening God was present through the whole service, but especially towards the conclusion. Then one and another dropped down, till six lay on the ground together, roaring for the disquietude of their hearts. Observing many to be quite amazed at this, I besought them to stand still, and see the salvation of God. But the cry of the distressed soon drowned my voice: So I dismissed the congregation. About half of them went away. I continued to pray with



the rest when my voice could be heard ; when it could not, I prayed without a voice, till after ten o'clock. In this time, four of those poor mourners were clothed with the robes of praise.

“The society now consists of a hundred and sixty-five members, of whom there are but twenty that have not found peace with God. Surely such a work of God has not been seen before in any part of the three kingdoms.

“Forty-three of these are children, thirty of whom are rejoicing in the love of God. The chief instrument God has used among these is Jane Salkeld, a young woman, a school-mistress, who is a pattern to all that believe. A few of her children are, Phebe Featherstone, nine years and a half old, a child of uncommon understanding ; Hannah Watson, ten years old, full of faith and love ; Aaron Ridson, not eleven years old, but wise and stayed as a man ; Sarah Smith, eight years and a half old, but as serious as a woman of fifty ; Sarah Morris, fourteen years of age, is as a mother among them, always serious, always watching over the rest, and building them up in love.

“Mention was made of four young men who were affected on the second Wednesday in December. These, hearing of the roaring of the people, came out of mere curiosity. That evening six were wounded, and fell to the ground, crying aloud for mercy. One of them, hearing the cry, rushed through the crowd to see what was the matter. He was no sooner got to the place, than he dropped down himself, and cried as loud as any. The other three, rushing on, one after another, were struck just in the same manner ; and, indeed, all of them were in such agonies, that many feared they were struck with death. But all the ten were fully delivered before the meeting concluded ; which, indeed, was not till four in the morning.”

128. I waited a few days, before I set down what had lately occurred among the children at Kingswood. From the time God visited them last, several of them retained a measure of the fear of God. But they grew colder and colder, till Ralph Mather\* met them in the latter end of August. Several then resolved to meet in class again, and appeared to have good desires. On Saturday, September 4, he talked with three of them, about four in the afternoon.

These freely confessed their besetting sins, and appeared to be greatly humbled. At five all the children met in the school. During an exhortation then given, first one, then two or three, were much affected. Afterwards, two more were taken apart, who were soon deeply distressed; and one of them (James Whitestone) in less than half an hour found a clear sense of the love of God. Near seven they came down to the boys in the school, and Mr. Mather asked, "Which of you will serve God?" They all seemed to be thunderstruck, and ten or twelve fell down upon their knees. Mr. Mather prayed, and then James Whitestone. Immediately one and another cried out, which brought in the other boys, who seemed struck more and more, till about thirty were kneeling and praying at once. Before half-past nine, ten of them knew that they were accepted in the Beloved. Several more were brought to the birth; and all the children, but three or four, were affected more or less.

Sunday, 5, I examined sixteen of them who desired to partake of the Lord's supper. Nine or ten had a clear sense of the pardoning love of God. The others were fully determined never to rest till they could witness the same confession.

Eighteen of the children from this time met in three bands, besides twelve who met in trial-bands. These were remarkable for their love to each other, as well as for steady seriousness. They met every day; beside which, all the children met in class.

Those who found peace were, James Whitestone, Alexander Mather, Matthew Lowes, William Snowden, John Keil, Charles Farr, John Hamilton, Benjamin Harris, and Edward Keil.

Monday, 6, after Mr. Mather had preached at Pensford, he met the children there. Presently the spirit of conviction fell upon them, and then the spirit of grace and of supplication, till the greater part of them were crying together for mercy with a loud and bitter cry. And all Miss Owen's children but one (two-and-twenty in number) were exceedingly comforted.

129. Friday, 10, I went over to Kingswood, and inquired into the present state of the children. I found part of them had walked closely with God; part had not, and were in heaviness. Hearing, in the evening, that they were got to

prayer by themselves in the school, I went down; but not being willing to disturb them, I stood at the window. Two or three had gone in first; then more and more, till above thirty were gathered together. Such a sight I never saw before, or since: Three or four stood and stared as if affrighted. The rest were all on their knees, pouring out their souls before God, in a manner not easy to be described. Sometimes one, sometimes more, prayed aloud; sometimes a cry went up from them all; till five or six of them who were in doubts before saw the clear light of God's countenance.

Saturday, 12, four of Miss Owen's children desired leave to partake of the Lord's supper. I talked with them severally, and found they were all still rejoicing in the love of God. And they confirmed the account, that "there was only one of their whole number who was unaffected on Monday; but all the rest could then say with confidence, 'Lord, thou knowest that I love thee.'" I suppose such a visitation of children has not been known in England these hundred years! In so marvellous a manner, "out of the mouths of babes and sucklings, God has perfected praise."

130. Tuesday, June 13, 1775, I was not very well in the morning, but supposed it would soon go off. In the afternoon, the weather being extremely hot, I lay down on the grass in Mr. Lark's orchard, at Cockhill. This I had been accustomed to do for forty years, and never remember to have been hurt by it. Only I never before lay on my face; in which posture I fell asleep. I waked a little, and but a little, out of order; and preached with ease to a multitude of people. Afterwards I was a good deal worse. However, the next day I went on a few miles to the Grauge. The table was placed here in such a manner, that all the time I was preaching, a strong and sharp wind blew full on the left side of my head; and it was not without a good deal of difficulty, that I made an end of my sermon. I now found a deep obstruction in my breast; my pulse was exceeding weak and low; I shivered with cold, though the air was sultry hot, only now and then burning for a few minutes. I went early to bed, drank a draught of treacle-and-water, and applied treacle to the soles of my feet. I lay till seven on Thursday, 15, and then felt considerably better. But I found nearly the same obstruction in my breast; I had a low, weak pulse; I burned and shivered by

turns; and if I ventured to cough, it jarred my head exceedingly. In going to Derry-Anvil, I wondered what was the matter, that I could not attend to what I was reading; no, not for three minutes together; but my thoughts were perpetually shifting: Yet all the time I was preaching in the evening, (although I stood in the open air, with the wind whistling round my head,) my mind was as composed as ever. Friday, 16, in going to Lurgan, I was again surprised that I could not fix my attention on what I read: Yet while I was preaching in the evening on the Parade, I found my mind perfectly composed; although it rained a great part of the time, which did not well agree with my head. Saturday, 17, I was persuaded to send for Dr. Lawes, a sensible and skilful Physician. He told me, I was in a high fever, and advised me to lay by; but I told him, that could not be done, as I had appointed to preach at several places, and must preach as long as I could speak. He then prescribed a cooling draught, with a grain or two of camphor, as my nerves were universally agitated. This I took with me to Tanderagee: But when I came there, I was not able to preach, my understanding being quite confused, and my strength entirely gone; yet I breathed freely, and had not the least thirst, nor any pain from head to foot.

I was now at a full stand, whether to aim at Lisburn, or to push forward for Dublin. But my friends doubting whether I could bear so long a journey, I went straight to Derry-Aghy, a gentleman's seat on the side of a hill, three miles beyond Lisburn. Here nature sunk, and I took my bed; but I could no more turn myself therein, than a newborn child. My memory failed as well as my strength, and well nigh my understanding. Only those words ran in my mind, when I saw Miss Gayer on one side of the bed looking at her mother on the other,—

*She sat like patience on a monument,  
Smiling at grief.*

But still I had no thirst, no difficulty of breathing, no pain, from head to foot.

I can give no account of what followed for two or three days, being more dead than alive. Only I remember, it was difficult for me to speak, my throat being exceeding dry. But Joseph Bradford tells me, I said on Wednesday, "It will be determined before this time to-morrow;" that

my tongue was much swollen, and as black as a coal; that I was convulsed all over; and that for some time my heart did not beat perceptibly, neither was there any pulse discernible.

In the night of Thursday, 22, Joseph Bradford came to me with a cup, and said, "Sir, you must take this." I thought, "I will, if I can swallow, to please him; for it will do me neither harm nor good." Immediately it set me a vomiting: My heart began to beat, and my pulse to play again; and from that hour, the extremity of the symptoms abated. The next day I sat up several hours, and walked four or five times across the room. On Saturday I sat up all day, and walked across the room many times, without any weariness. On Sunday I came down stairs, and sat several hours in the parlour. On Monday I walked out before the house; on Tuesday I took an airing in the chaise; and on Wednesday, trusting in God, to the astonishment of my friends, I set out for Dublin.

I did not determine how far to go that day, not knowing how my strength would hold out; but, finding myself no worse at Bannbridge, I ventured on to Newry; and after travelling thirty English miles, I was stronger than in the morning.

Thursday, 29, I went to the Man-of-War, forty Irish miles from the Globe at Newry.

Friday, 30, we met Mr. Simpson, with several other friends, coming to meet us at Drogheda, who took us to his country-seat at James-town, about two miles from Dublin.

Tuesday, July 4, finding myself a little stronger, I preached for the first time; and I believe most could hear. I preached on Wednesday again; and my voice was clear, though weak: So on Sunday I ventured to preach twice, and found no weariness at all. Monday, 10, I began my regular course of preaching morning and evening.

131. From this time, I have, by the grace of God, gone on in the same track, travelling between four and five thousand miles a year, and once in two years going through Great Britain and Ireland; which, by the blessing of God, I am as well able to do now as I was twenty or thirty years ago. About a hundred and thirty of my fellow-labourers are continually employed in the same thing. We all aim at one point, (as we did from the hour when we first

engaged in the work,) not at profit, any more than at ease, or pleasure, or the praise of men ; but to spread true religion through London, Dublin, Edinburgh, and, as we are able, through the three kingdoms ; that truly rational religion, which is taught and prescribed in the Old and New Testament ; namely, the love of God and our neighbour, filling the heart with humility, meekness, contentedness ; and teaching us, on the one hand, whatever we do, to do it all to the glory of God ; and, on the other, to do unto every man what we would they should do unto us. This is our point. We leave every man to enjoy his own opinion, and to use his own mode of worship, desiring only that the love of God and his neighbour be the ruling principle in his heart, and show itself in his life by an uniform practice of justice, mercy, and truth. And, accordingly, we give the right hand of fellowship to every lover of God and man, whatever his opinion or mode of worship be, of which he is to give an account to God only.

132. This is the way (called heresy by Dr. Maclaine and others) according to which we worship the God of our fathers ; and we have known some thousands who walked therein till their spirits returned to God. Some thousands likewise we now know who are walking in the same path of love, and studying to have a conscience void of offence towards God and towards man. All these, as they fear God, so they honour the King, who "is the minister of God unto them for good." They "submit themselves to every ordinance of man, for the Lord's sake." Meantime they expect, that men should say all manner of evil against them, for their Master's sake. But they have counted the cost, and are willing to be as the filth and offscouring of the world. Yea, they have many times shown, that they counted not their lives dear unto themselves, so they might finish their course with joy, and testify the Gospel of the grace of God.

LONDON,  
*November 16, 1781.*

**LETTER**  
TO  
**THE MONTHLY REVIEWERS.**

---

GENTLEMEN,

*September 9, 1756.*

FOR a considerable time I have had a desire to trouble you with a few lines ; but have been prevented, partly by a variety of other business, partly by the small probability of your impartially considering what was said. I will, however, make the trial. If you can read candidly, well ; if not, it is but a little labour lost.

The question I would propose is this : Is it prudent, is it just, is it humane, to jumble whole bodies of people together, and condemn them by the lump ? Is it not a maxim now almost universally received, that there are good and bad in every society ? Why, then, do you continually jumble together, and condemn by the lump, the whole body of people called Methodists ? Is it prudent (just to touch even on so low a consideration) to be constantly insulting and provoking those who do you no wrong, and had far rather be your friends than your enemies ? Is it consistent with humanity, to strike again one who gives no provocation, and makes no resistance ? Is it common justice, to treat with such contempt as you have done in the last month's Review those who are by no means contemptible writers ? Be persuaded, gentlemen, to give yourselves the pains of reading either Mr. Herbert's " Providence," or the verses which Norris entitles " The Meditation ;" and you will find them scarce inferior, either in sense or language, to most compositions of the present age. To speak more freely still : Where is the justice of coupling the hymns of Methodists and Moravians together ? Lay prejudice aside, and read with candour but the very first hymn in our first Hymn-Book ; and then say whether your prose is not as nearly allied to John Bunyan's, as our verse to Count Z——'s.

As, probably, you have never seen the books which you condemn, I will transcribe a few lines :—

THEE, when morning greets the skies  
 With rosy cheeks and humid eyes ;  
 Thee, when sweet declining day  
 Sinks in purple waves away ;  
 Thee will I sing, O Parent Jove,  
 And teach the world to praise and love.

Yonder azure vault on high,  
 Yonder blue, low, liquid sky,  
 Earth, on its firm basis placed,  
 And with circling waves embraced  
 All creating power confess,  
 All their mighty Maker bless.  
 Thou shakest all nature with thy nod ;  
 Sea, earth, and air confess the God :  
 Yet does thy powerful hand sustain  
 Both earth and heaven, both firm and main.

The feather'd souls that swim the air,  
 And bathe in liquid ether there,  
 —The lark, precentor of their choir,  
 Leading them higher still and higher,—  
 Listen and learn ; the' angelic notes  
 Repeating in their warbling throats ;  
 And, ere to soft repose they go,  
 Teach them to their lords below.  
 On the green turf, their mossy nest,  
 The evening anthem swells their breast.  
 Thus, like thy golden chain from high,  
 Thy praise unites the earth and sky.

O ye nurses of soft dreams,  
 Reedy brooks, and winding streams :  
 Or murmuring o'er the pebbles sheen,  
 Or sliding through the meadows green,  
 Or where through matted sedge you creep,  
 Travelling to your parent deep ;  
 Sound His praise by whom you rose,  
 That Sea which neither ebbs nor flows.

O ye immortal woods and groves,  
 Which the enamour'd student loves ;  
 Beneath whose venerable shade,  
 For thought and friendly converse made,  
 Famed Hecadem, old hero, lies,  
 Whose shrine is shaded from the skies,  
 And, through the gloom of silent night,  
 Projects from far its trembling light ;—  
 You, whose roots descend as low  
 As high in air your branches grow,  
 Your leafy arms to heaven extend,  
 Bend your heads, in homage bend ;  
 Cedars and pines, that wave above,  
 And the oak, beloved of Jove !



Now, gentlemen, can you say, between God and your own souls, that these verses deserve the treatment you have given them? I think you cannot. You are men of more understanding. You know they are not contemptible. If any of you will strike a real blot, if you will point out even in public (though that is not the most obliging way) anything justly reprobable in our writings, probably we shall acknowledge and correct what is amiss; at least, we shall not blame you. But every impartial man must blame that method of proceeding which neither consists with justice nor humanity.

Perhaps you may say you have been provoked. By whom? "By Mr. Romaine." I answer, I am not Mr. Romaine; neither am I accountable for his behaviour. And what equity is this? One man has offended you: Therefore you fall upon another. Will it excuse you to say, "But he is called by the same name?" especially when neither is this his own name, but a term of derision. Gentlemen, do to others as you would have them do to you: Then you will no more injure one who never offended you; (unless this offend you, that he does really believe Jesus Christ to be God over all, blessed for ever;) then you will not return hatred for good-will, even to so insignificant a person as

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## SECOND LETTER

TO

THE MONTHLY REVIEWERS.

---

*October 5, 1756.*

REALLY, gentlemen, you do me too much honour. I could scarce expect so favourable a regard from those who are professed admirers of Mr. Aaron Hill's verse, and Mr. Caleb Fleming's prose.

Nevertheless, I cannot but observe a few small mistakes in the eight lines with which you favour me. You say, "We suppose the specimen of Mr. Wesley's Hymns" (the false

spelling is of little consequence) "was sent us for this purpose;" namely, to publish. Truly it was not: It never entered my thought; as, I apprehend, may appear from the whole tenor of the letter wherein those lines were inserted. "And if the Moravians please to select a like sample of what has been done by them, they may expect from us the same justice." Another little mistake: Those lines are not selected; but are found in the very first hymn (as I observed in my last) that occurs in the first verses which my brother and I ever published. "We have received a letter, complaining of our having jumbled the poetry of the Methodists and Moravians in an indiscriminate censure." Not so. The thing chiefly complained of was, 1. Your "jumbling whole bodies of people together, and condemning them by the lump, without any regard either to prudence, justice, or humanity." 2. Your "treating with such contempt those who are by no means contemptible writers,—Mr. Norris and Mr. Herbert." The last and least thing was, your "coupling the hymns of Moravians and Methodists together." It was here I added, "As, probably, you have never seen the books which you condemn, I will transcribe a few lines:" But neither did I give the least intimation of "appealing hereby to the public, in proof of our superiority over the Moravians." This is another mistake.

At first I was a little inclined to fear, a want of integrity had occasioned this misrepresentation; but, upon reflection, I would put a milder construction upon it, and only impute it to want of understanding. Even bodies of men do not see all things; and are then especially liable to err, when they imagine themselves hugely superior to their opponents, and so pronounce *ex cathedra*.

Another instance of this is just now before me. A week or two ago, one put a tract into my hands, in which I could discern nothing of the Christian, gentleman, or scholar; but much of low, dull, ill-natured scurrility and blasphemy. How was I surprised, when I read in your three hundred and fifteenth page, "We have read this little piece with great pleasure!" when I found you so smitten with the author's "spirit, sense, and freedom," his "smart animadversions" and "becoming severity!" O gentlemen! do not you speak too plain? Do not you discover too much at once? especially when you so keenly ridicule Mr. Pike's

supposition, that the Son and Spirit are truly divine? May I ask, If the Son of God is not truly divine, is He divine at all? Is he a little God, or no God at all? If no God at all, how came he to say, "I and the Father are one?" Did any Prophet before, from the beginning of the world, use any one expression which could possibly be so interpreted as this and other expressions were by all that heard Jesus speak? And did he ever attempt to undeceive them? Be pleased, then, to let me know, if he was not God, how do you clear him from being the vilest of men?

I am, gentlemen,

Your well-wisher, though not admirer,

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER TO A FRIEND.

CONCERNING A PASSAGE IN A MONTHLY REVIEW.

DEAR SIR,

CITY-ROAD, *January 25, 1781.*

YESTERDAY, looking over the "Monthly Review" for last October, at page 307, I read the following words:—

"Sir William's vindication" of his own conduct "is not a feeble attempt to rescue his reputation from the obloquy thrown upon it. Mr. Galloway's book is here answered, paragraph by paragraph; and several misrepresentations of important facts and circumstances proved."

I cannot quite agree with this. I think, 1. No unjust obloquy has been thrown upon it. 2. That his vindication is a very feeble attempt to justify his conduct. 3. That he has not answered in a satisfactory manner any one paragraph of Mr. Galloway's book. And, 4. That he has not proved any misrepresentation of any one important fact or circumstance.

I think also, that the account he gives of Mr. Galloway is a very feeble attempt to blacken his character; for a full confutation whereof, I refer the candid reader to his own answer. As to the scurrility Sir William speaks of, I see not the least trace of it in anything Mr. G. has published.

He is above it. He is no "venal instrument of calumny:" He abhors calumny as he does rebellion. But let him answer for himself: Read only the tracts here referred to, and then condemn him if you can.

I am, dear Sir,

Yours, &c.,

JOHN WESLEY.

P.S. I have been frequently attacked by the Monthly Reviewers, but did not answer, because we were not on even ground; but that difficulty is now over: Whatever they object in their "Monthly Review," I can answer in my monthly Magazine; and I shall think it my duty so to do, when the objection is of any importance.

---

## A LETTER

TO

MR. T. H., *alias* PHILODEMAS, *alias* SOMEBODY,  
*alias* STEPHEN CHURCH, *alias* R. W.

[INSERTED IN THE "LONDON MAGAZINE" FOR 1760, PAGE 651.]

---

PATIENCE, dear Sir, patience! or I am afraid your choler will hurt your constitution, as well as your argument. Be composed, and I will answer your queries, "speedily, clearly, and categorically." Only you will give me leave to shorten them a little, and to lay those together which have some relation to each other. Permit me, likewise, before I enter on particulars, to lay a few circumstances before you, which may add some light to the subject, and give you a clearer knowledge of the people with whom you are so angry.

About thirty years since, I met with a book written in King William's time, called "The Country Parson's Advice to his Parishioners." There I read these words: "If good men of the Church will unite together in the several parts of the kingdom, disposing themselves into friendly societies,

and engaging each other in their respective combinations, to be helpful to each other in all good, Christian ways, it will be the most effectual means for restoring our decaying Christianity to its primitive life and vigour, and the supporting of our tottering and sinking Church." A few young gentlemen then at Oxford approved of and followed the advice. They were all zealous Churchmen, and both orthodox and regular to the highest degree. For their exact regularity they were soon nick-named Methodists; but they were not then, or for some years after, charged with any other crime, real or pretended, than that of being righteous over much. Nine or ten years after, many others "united together in the several parts of the kingdom, engaging, in like manner, to be helpful to each other in all good, Christian ways." At first, all these were of the Church; but several pious Dissenters soon desired to unite with them. Their one design was, to forward each other in true, scriptural Christianity.

Presently the flood-gates were opened, and a deluge of reproach poured upon them from all quarters. All manner of evil was spoken of them, and they were used without either justice or mercy; and this chiefly (I am sorry to say it) by the members of our own Church. Some of them were startled at this, and proposed a question, when they were met together at Leeds, whether they ought not to separate from the Church; but after it had been fairly and largely considered, they were one and all satisfied that they ought not. The reasons of that determination were afterwards printed, and lately re-printed and strongly enforced by my brother. *Hinc illæ lacrymæ!*\* This, I presume, has occasioned your present queries. For though you talk of our "Episcopal communion," I doubt not that you are either a Papist or a Dissenter. If I mistake, you may easily set me right, by telling your real name and place of abode.

But in spite of all we could say or do, the cry still continued, "You have left the Church; you are no Ministers or members of it." I answer, as I did fourteen years ago to one who warmly affirmed this, "Use ever so many exaggerations, still the whole of the matter is, 1. I often use extemporary prayer. 2. Wherever I can, I preach the Gospel.

\* This is the source of their regrets.—EDIT.

3. Those who desire to live according to the Gospel, I advise how to watch over each other, and to put from them those who walk disorderly." (*Second Letter to Dr. Church*, Vol. VIII., page 444.) Now, whether these things are right or wrong, this single point I must still insist upon: All this does not prove either that I am no member, or that I am no Minister, of the Church of England. Nay, nothing can prove that I am no member of the Church, till I am either excommunicated, or renounce her communion, and no longer join in her doctrine, and in the breaking of bread, and in prayer. Nor can anything prove I am no Minister of the Church, till I either am deposed from my ministry, or voluntarily renounce her, and wholly cease to teach her doctrines, use her offices, and obey her rubricks.

Upon the same principle that I still preach, and endeavour to assist those who desire to live according to the Gospel, about twelve years ago, I published proposals for printing "A Christian Library; consisting of Extracts from, and Abridgments of, the choicest Pieces of practical Divinity which have been published in the English Tongue." And I have done what I proposed. Most of the tracts therein contained were written by members of our own Church; but some by writers of other denominations: For I mind not who speaks, but what is spoken.

On the same principle, that of doing good to all men, of the ability that God giveth, I published "Primitive Physic; or, an easy and natural Method of curing most Diseases;" and some years after, a little tract, entitled "Electricity made plain and useful." On the same principle, I printed an English, a Latin, a French, and a short Hebrew Grammar, as well as some of the Classics, and a few other tracts, *in usum juventutis Christianæ*.\* This premised, I now proceed to the queries:—

Q. 1. "Why have you not cleared yourself of those reflections that you stand charged with by a learned author?" I have thoroughly cleared myself, in the three letters to that learned author, which were published immediately after his tracts.

Q. 2. "Can you consistently charge your people to attend the worship of our Church, and not Dissenters' meetings?"

I can: This is consistent with all I have written, and all I have done, for many years. "But do you not call our Church a mere rope of sand?" No: Look again into the "Plain Account," and you will see (if you care to see) that those words are not spoken of our Church.

Q. 6. "But do you not hold doctrine contrary to hers?" No. "Do you not make a dust about words?" No. "Do you not bewilder the brains of weak people?" No.

Q. 11. "Do you not, in print, own Episcopacy to be *jure divino*?"\* Not that I remember. Can you tell me where? But this I own, I have no objection to it; nay, I approve it highly.

Q. 16. "But are you not guilty of canonical disobedience to your Bishop?" I think not. Show me wherein.

Q. 17. "Did not you suffer your lay Preachers, at Leeds, to debate whether they should separate from the Church?" Yes, and encouraged them to say all that was in their hearts. "Why did you do this?" To confirm their adherence to it: And they were so confirmed, that only two out of the whole number have since separated from it.

Q. 18. "If most votes had carried the day, what had followed?" If the sky should fall!

Q. 12. "What did you propose by preaching up to the people a solemn covenant?" To confirm them in fearing God, and working righteousness. I shall probably do the same again shortly. And if you desire any farther information, you are welcome to hear every sermon which I preach concerning it.

Q. 13. "Was not this intended to cut them off from ever communicating with any company of Christians but yourselves?" No; nothing less. It was not intended to cut them off from anything, but the devil and his works.

Q. 14. "Do you not commend the Quakers?" Yes, in some things. "And the French prophets?" No.

Q. 15. "Do you not stint your lay Preachers to three or four minutes only in public prayers?" I advise them not usually to exceed four or five minutes, either before or after sermon. (*Preservative*, edit. 1839, page 251.)

Q. 3. "Is not your 'Christian Library' an odd collection of mutilated writings of Dissenters of all sorts?" No. In

the first ten volumes there is not a line from any Dissenter of any sort; and the greatest part of the other forty is extracted from Archbishop Leighton, Bishops Taylor, Patrick, Ken, Reynolds, Sanderson, and other ornaments of the Church of England.

Q. 4. "Is not this declaring that you have a superior privilege beyond all men, to print, correct, and direct as you please?" I think not. I suppose every man in England has the same privilege.

Q. 5. "Is it performed according to the first proposals, and the expectation of the subscribers?" It is performed according to the first proposals; nor could any subscriber reasonably expect more.

Q. 7. "Why did you not, in your New Testament, distinguish those places with Italics where you altered the old translation?" Because it was quite needless; as any who choose it may easily compare the two translations together. "But should you not have given the learned a reason for every alteration?" Yes, if I had written for the learned: But I did not; as I expressly mentioned in the Preface.

Q. 8. "Do you not assume too much in philosophy and physic, as well as in theology?" I hope not.

Q. 9. "Why did you meddle with electricity?" For the same reason as I published the "Primitive Physic,"—to do as much good as I can.

Q. 19. "Are you a Clergyman at all?" Yes. "Are you not a Quaker in disguise?" No. "Did not you betray the Church, as Judas his Master, with a kiss?" No. "If you be in the wrong, God confound your devices!" I say the same thing. "If in the right, may he display it to all people!" Amen! In His own time.

I take this opportunity to answer the queries also which occur in page 614:—

1. "If the operations of the Spirit overpower the natural faculties, must they not destroy free agency?" I neither teach nor believe that the ordinary operations of the Spirit do overpower the natural faculties.

2. "If every man be furnished with an inward light, as a private guide and director, must it not supersede the necessity of Revelation?" This affects the Quakers, not the Methodists, who allow no inward light but what is subservient to the written word, and to be judged thereby: They



are therefore no "enthusiasts," neither is it yet proved that they are "deluded" at all. They follow no *ignis fatuus*, but "search the Scriptures freely and impartially." And hence their "doctrines are not the dogmas of particular men," but are all warranted by Scripture and reason.

I am, Sir,

Your sincere well-wisher,

JOHN WESLEY.

December 12, 1760.

---

## A LETTER

TO

MR. G. R., *alias* R. A., *alias* M. H., *alias* R. W.\*

---

DEAR SIR,

As you are stout, be merciful; or I shall never be able to stand it. Four attacks in one month! and pushed so home! Well, I must defend myself as I can.

Indeed, your first attack, under the character of G. R., is not very desperate. You first give a short history of Montanism, and innocently say, "It would fill a volume to draw a parallel between Montanism and Methodism." According as it was drawn: But if it contained nothing but truth, it would not fill a nutshell. You add, "Such a crude composition is this Methodism, that there is scarce any one pestilent heresy that has infested the Church, but what is an actual part of their doctrine." This is easily said; but till you can prove it, it will pass for nothing.

In your second letter you say, "The present troublers of our Israel are that heterogeneous mass, the Methodists." "Heterogeneous!" a hard word, a very hard word! Pray, Sir, what is the meaning of it? "They are avowed enemies to the doctrine and discipline of the Church." Surely not avowed enemies; (If they are secret ones, which no man can prove :) They flatly disavow any such thing. "Have faithfully copied the worst of men in the worst of times." This

\* This Letter was first inserted in the "London Magazine."—EDIT.

means nothing ; it is mere garniture of the dish. " If such men's enthusiastical notions be the true doctrine of Jesus Christ, better would it be to be a Jew, a Turk, an infidel, than a Christian." This proves nothing but what was pretty plain before ; namely, that you are very angry. " Notions repugnant to common sense, and to the first principles of truth and equity." My fundamental notions are, that true religion is love, the love of God and our neighbour ; the doing all things to the glory of God, and doing to all men as we would be done to. Are these notions repugnant to common sense, or to the first principles of truth and equity ? " What punishment do they deserve ?" they who walk by this rule ? By nature they deserve hell ; but, by the grace of God, if they endure to the end, they will receive eternal life.

In your third letter, you say, " None of the principles of the Methodists have a more fatal tendency than the doctrine of assurance." I allow it : And it is past your skill to prove that this has any fatal tendency at all, unless as you wonderfully explain it in the following words : " They insist that themselves are sure of salvation, but that all others are in a damnable state !" Who do ? Not I, nor any that I know, but Papists. Therefore, all that you add to disprove this, which no one affirms, is but beating the air. " But St. Paul commands us to pass the time of our sojourning here in fear." Indeed he does not ; your memory fails : But St. Peter does, and that is as well.

Your fourth, (for want of a better) is to serve for a reply to my answer. In this you stoutly say, " Sir, your performance is frivolous and fallacious." Very well : But others must judge of that. " Shocks, Sir, or violent operations of the spirit, are too fully evidenced by your trances, ecstasies, and I know not what." I assure you, neither do I ; but if you please to tell me, when you do know a little of the matter, I will give you what satisfaction I can. " These appear in the practices of your followers, and, as such, must destroy free agency." Nay, Sir, you are now too severe ; especially in that keen " as such." " As you then assert such practices, you are (excuse the harshness of the expression) an enemy to religion, and a deceiver of the people." Sir, I do excuse you. I am pretty well used to such expressions : If they hurt not you, they hurt not me.

“Until you publish, in plain, intelligible words, your scheme of principles, it is impossible to say what you are.” I have done it, ten times over, particularly in “The Principles of a Methodist,” the “Appeals to Men of Reason and Religion,” and (what I am not without hope might be intelligible even to you) “Instructions for Children.” “I must be plain with you: You seem, Sir, to have as much knowledge of the Scriptures as a Mahometan.” Sir, I thank you; and I presume you do not expect any other answer to this. “That you are an enthusiast, a very great enthusiast, not I, let your own Journals demonstrably prove.” Nay, why not you? I fear my Journals will not give such proof as will satisfy any impartial person. “As to dogmas, I do not know that it is good English: I know it is false dog-Latin.” Now, I really thought it was neither Latin nor English: I took it to be mere heathen Greek.

Whenever you please to favour the public with your name and place of abode, you may, perhaps, (if I have leisure,) hear further from

Your humble servant and well-wisher,

JOHN WESLEY.

*February 17, 1761.*

---

## A LETTER

TO

THE EDITOR OF THE “LONDON MAGAZINE.”

---

SIR,

1765.

If you please to insert in your Magazine my answer to a letter directed to me in November last, you will oblige

Your humble servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

SIR,

I AM obliged to you for your queries and remarks; and so I shall be to any who will point out anything wherein they think I have been mistaken. It would not be strange

if there should be many mistakes in the "Compendium of Natural Philosophy;" as philosophy is what, for many years, I have only looked into at leisure hours. Accordingly, in the preface of that treatise, I said, "I am thoroughly sensible, there are many who have more ability, as well as leisure, for such a work than me; but as none of them undertakes it, I have myself made some little attempt in the following volumes."

Q. 1. "You say, the sun revolves upon his axis once in twenty-seven hours. Should it not be, once in twenty-seven days nearly?" Yes, it should. This was an error of the press.

Q. 2. "You say, he is supposed to be abundantly larger than the earth. Is it not demonstrable that he is so?" I do not know whether it is or no.

Q. 3. "You tell us, the moon turns always the same side to the earth. Should it not be, nearly the same?" Yes.

Q. 4. "You say, it does not appear that she moves round her own axis. How then do you account for her turning always the same side to the earth?" I think, full as well without the supposition as with it. But I do not undertake to account for anything.

Q. 5. "Why do you say, the moon is supposed to be forty-five times smaller than the earth, when the moon's bulk is nicely known?" It is not known by me, nor, I doubt, by any man else.

Q. 6. "You say, Jupiter is supposed to be twenty-five times larger than the earth; and, in the next page, that his diameter is supposed to be 180,655 miles. If so, is he not 4,096 times larger than the earth?" Undoubtedly. But I do not undertake to defend either one supposition or the other.

Q. 7. "You inform us, that even a good eye seldom sees more than a hundred stars at a time. Do you mean, at one look?" Yes.

Remark 1. "You say, (page 148,) 'Even with respect to the distance of the sun, it is wisest to confess our ignorance, and to acknowledge we have nothing to rest upon here but mere uncertain conjecture.'"

I did not say this of the distance of the sun, in particular. My words are, "With regard to their distance from the

earth, (the distance of all the bodies in the solar system,) there is such an immense difference in the calculations of astronomers, even with respect to the distance of the sun, that it is wisest to confess our ignorance:” Namely, with regard to their distance. (Page 146.)

To prove that we are not ignorant hereof, you say, “The knowledge of the sun’s distance depends on finding its parallax, or the angle that the semi-diameter of the earth appears under at the sun; which angle is so very minute, that an error of a single second will give the distance very considerably greater or less than the true distance.” It will; and therefore I doubt whether the distance of any heavenly body can ever be known by this means.

“But Mr. Keill says, ‘We are assured by various methods made use of to obtain the sun’s parallax, that his distance from us is more than twenty-eight millions of miles.’” He may be assured; but I am not. “He says farther, ‘Two eminent astronomers have since determined the sun’s distance to be about seventy-six millions of miles.’ Now, if the least distance possible is absolutely determined, how can it be wisest to confess our ignorance?” *If it be*: But I doubt it cannot be determined at all; at least, not by the sun’s parallax, “seeing this is so very minute, that an error of a single second will give the distance very considerably greater or less than the true.”

Remark 2. “In page 143, you tell us”—the whole paragraph runs thus: “It is now almost universally supposed, that the moon is just like the earth, having mountains and valleys, seas with islands, peninsulas and promontories, with a changeable atmosphere, wherein vapours and exhalations rise and fall; and hence it is generally inferred, that she is inhabited like the earth, and, by parity of reason, that all the other planets, as well as the earth and moon, have their respective inhabitants.” (I take this to be the very strength of the cause. It was this consideration chiefly which induced me to think for many years, that all the planets were inhabited.) “But after all comes the celebrated Mr. Huygens, and brings strong reasons why the moon is not, and cannot be, inhabited at all, nor any secondary planet whatever. Then” (if the first supposition sinks, on which all the rest are built) “I doubt that we shall never prove that the primary are. And so the whole hypothesis, of

innumerable suns and worlds moving round them, vanishes into air."

In order to prove that there are innumerable suns, you say, (1.) "It is found by observations on the parallax of the earth's orbit, that a fixed star is ten thousand times farther from the sun than we are."

I can build nothing on these observations, till parallaxes can be taken with greater certainty than they are at present. Therefore I shall want proof, that any one fixed star is one thousand times farther from the sun than we are.

(2.) "They are fiery bodies." I suppose they are; but this cannot be proved from their distance, till that distance itself is proved.

(3.) "It is demonstrable that Sirius is as big as the sun." Demonstrate it who can.

(4.) "Seeing the fixed stars are not much less than the sun, they are to be esteemed so many suns." "Not much less!" How is this proved? To argue from the distance is to prove *ignotum per æque ignotum*.\*

"You see, Sir, the hypothesis of innumerable suns is so far from vanishing into air, that it is almost altogether founded on demonstration." Indeed I do not see one tittle of demonstration yet, from the beginning to the end.

In order to prove that the planets are inhabited, you say, (1.) "The earth is spherical, opaque, enlightened by the sun, casting a shadow opposite thereto, and revolving round it in a time exactly proportioned to its distance. The other planets resemble the earth in all these particulars. Therefore they likewise are inhabited." I cannot allow the consequence.

(2.) "The earth has a regular succession of day and night, summer and winter. So probably have all the planets. Therefore they are inhabited." I am not sure of the antecedent. But, however that be, I deny the consequence.

(3.) "Jupiter and Saturn are much bigger than the earth." Does this prove that they are inhabited?

(4.) "The earth has a moon, Jupiter has four, Saturn five, each of these larger than ours. They eclipse their respective planets, and are eclipsed by them." All this does not prove that they are inhabited.

\* A thing unknown, by one equally unknown.—EDIT. Google

(5.) "Saturn's ring reflects the light of the sun upon him." I am not sure of that. And, till the fact is ascertained, no certain inference can be drawn from it.

(6.) "But is it probable God should have created planets like our own, and furnished them with such amazing apparatus, and yet have placed no inhabitants therein?" Of their apparatus I know nothing. However, if all you assert be, the *probability* of their being inhabited, I contend not.

(7.) "They who affirm, that God created those bodies, the fixed stars, only to give us a small, dim light, must have a very mean opinion of the divine wisdom." I do not affirm this; neither can I tell for what other end He created them: He that created them knows. But I have so high an opinion of the divine wisdom, that I believe no child of man can fathom it. It is our wisdom to be very wary how we pronounce concerning things which we have not seen.

Remark 10. "Suppose some intelligent beings in one of the planets, who were

Slaves to no sect, who sought no private road,  
But look'd through nature up to nature's God,

viewed the earth from thence; they would argue it must be inhabited, as we argue the other planets are. But the superstitious would oppose this doctrine, and call it mere uncertain conjecture."

I see no argument in this: But perhaps I do not understand it. Are you applauding the supposed inhabitants of Venus for not being slaves to the Christian sect? Otherwise, what has superstition to do in the case? Why is this dragged in by head and shoulders? If there be superstition here, it is on your side, who believe because you will believe; who assent to what you have no evidence for, and maintain what you cannot prove. At present you are the volunteer in faith: You swallow what chokes my belief.

Remark 3. "You quote Dr. Rogers:" But I do not undertake to defend his hypothesis, or any other. "Our best observators could never find the parallax of the sun to be above eleven seconds." But I cannot depend on their observations; especially when I find one of the chief of them, in computing the distance of the sun, to stride from twenty-eight millions to seventy-six; near fifty millions of miles at

once! After this, let any impartial man judge what stress is to be laid on parallaxes.

“But Dr. Rogers supposes the parallax of the sun to be five minutes, which others cannot find to be above eleven seconds. Why, Doctor, if this be true,” (namely, that the parallax which lately was but eleven seconds is now increased to five minutes,) “the earth has approximated thirty times nearer” (a little harmless tautology) “to the sun.” That is, if both the computation of Mr. Keill, and that of Dr. Rogers, be true. But whoever supposed this? If the one be true, the other is undoubtedly false.

“To conclude: Since there is no arguing against facts, and since the sun’s parallax is not found to exceed eleven seconds, ought you not to give up that hypothesis as absurd and ridiculous?”

Yes; as soon as any of those facts appear. Till then, I neither espouse nor give it up. But I still look upon it as ingenious, and as probable as any other.

Before I conclude, permit me, Sir, to give you one piece of advice. Be not so positive; especially with regard to things which are neither easy nor necessary to be determined. I ground this advice on my own experience. When I was young, I was sure of everything: In a few years, having been mistaken a thousand times, I was not half so sure of most things as I was before: At present I am hardly sure of anything but what God has revealed to man.

Upon the whole, an ingenious man may easily flourish on this head: “How much more glorious is it for the great God to have created innumerable worlds, than this little globe only!” But, after all, I would only ask this one plain question: Suppose there are more worlds than there are sands on the sea shore; is not the universe finite still. It must be; unless it be God. And if it be finite, it can still bear no proportion to Him that is infinite; no more than this ball of earth does. How large soever it be, still, compared to Him, it is as nothing; as the small dust of the balance. Do you ask, then, “What is this spot to the great God?” Why, as much as millions of systems. Great and little have place with regard to us; but before Him they vanish away. Enlarge the bounds of creation as much as you please; still it is as but a drop to the Creator:—



And still the power of His almighty hand  
Can form another world from every sand !

Yet, were this done, there would be no more proportion than there is now between Him and His creatures. In this respect, one world and millions of worlds are just the same thing. Is the earth a cipher, a nothing, to the infinitely great, glorious, wise, and powerful God? So is any number of worlds which can be conceived: So is all finite being to the infinite.

---

## A LETTER

TO

THE EDITOR OF LLOYD'S "EVENING POST."

---

SIR,

*February 26, 1771.*

THE Editor of a monthly publication, pompously called "The Gospel Magazine," Mr. R., has violently fallen upon one and another who did not knowingly give him any provocation. And whereas in other Magazines the accused has liberty to answer for himself, it is not so here: This gentleman will publish only the charge, but not the defence. What can a person thus injuriously treated do? To publish pamphlets on every head would not answer the end; for the answer would not come into near so many hands as the objections. Is there then a better way, than to appeal to candid men in one of the public papers? By which means the antidote will operate both as widely and as speedily as the poison. This method, therefore, I take at last, after delaying as long as I could with innocence.

In the Magazine for last month, there is a warm attack upon my sermon on the death of Mr. Whitefield.

The first charge is against the text, "Let me die the death of the righteous." "How improper," says Mr. R., "to apply the words of a mad Prophet to so holy a man as Mr. Whitefield!" "Improper!" See how Doctors differ! I conceive nothing can possibly be more proper. If Mr. R.

did indeed tell his congregation, some of whom disliking his attacking my poor text before, "Let who will be vexed, I do not care; I will not justify Balaam while I live:" Yet others imagine nothing could be more suitable, than for Balaam junior to use the words of his forefather; especially as he did not apply them to Mr. Whitefield, but to himself. Surely a poor reprobate may, without offence, wish to die like one of the elect. I dare say every one understood me to mean this, the moment he heard the text: If not, the very hymn I sung showed to whom I applied the words:—

"O that without a lingering groan,  
I might the welcome word receive!  
My body with my charge lay down,  
And cease at once to work and live!"

But the main attack is on the sermon itself, wherein I am charged with asserting a gross falsehood in the face of God and the congregation; and that knowing it to be such; namely, "That the grand fundamental doctrines which Mr. Whitefield everywhere preached, were those of the new birth, and justification by faith." "No," says Mr. R., "not at all: The grand fundamental doctrines he everywhere preached, were the everlasting covenant between the Father and the Son; and absolute predestination flowing therefrom."

I join issue on this head. Whether the doctrines of the eternal covenant, and absolute predestination, are the grand fundamental doctrines of Christianity, or not; I affirm again, 1. That Mr. Whitefield did not everywhere preach these; 2. That he did everywhere preach the new birth, and justification by faith.

1. He did not everywhere preach the eternal covenant, and absolute predestination. I never heard him utter a sentence on one or the other. Yea, all the times he preached in West-street chapel, and in our other chapels throughout England, he did not preach those doctrines at all, no, not in a single paragraph; which, by the by, is a demonstration that he did not think them the fundamental doctrines of Christianity.

2. Both in West-street chapel, and all our other chapels throughout England, he did preach the necessity of the new birth, and justification by faith, as clearly as he has done in

his two volumes of printed sermons: Therefore all I have asserted is true, and provable by ten thousand witnesses.

Nay, says Mr. R., "Mr. Whitefield everywhere insisted on other fundamental doctrines, from the foundation of which, the new birth and justification take their rise, with which they are inseparably connected: These are, the everlasting covenant which was entered into by the Holy Trinity, and God the Father's everlasting, unchangeable election of sinners;" (in virtue of which a fiftieth part of mankind shall be saved, do what they will; and the other forty-nine parts shall be damned, do what they can;) "these doctrines are not of a less essential nature than either regeneration, or justification. No, by no means; they are to the full equally essential to the glory of God. Yea, there is an inseparable connexion between them. This is a most essential, a most fundamental point."—*Gospel Magazine*, page 41.

If so, then every one who does not hold it, must perish everlastingly. If, as you here assert, he cannot be justified, then he cannot be saved. If, as you say, he cannot be born again, "he cannot see the kingdom of God."

After asserting this, can Mr. R. ever take the name of catholic love into his mouth? Is not this the very opposite to it? the height and depth of bigotry? Does this spirit do honour to his opinion? Can we conceive anything more horrid? Is it not enough to make a person of humanity shudder? yea, to make his blood run cold? I will not here enter into the merits of the cause; I need not. It is done to my hands. The whole doctrine of predestination is thoroughly discussed in those three tracts lately printed: "An Answer to the Eleven Letters commonly ascribed to Mr. Hervey;" "Arguments against General Redemption considered;" and "An Answer to Elisha Coles." Till these are seriously and solidly refuted, I have no more to say on that head. But this I must aver, that the excluding all from salvation who do not believe the horrible decree, is a most shocking insult on all mankind, on common sense, and common humanity.

I am, &c.,

JOHN WESLEY.

## REMARKS

OR

### MR. H.'S ACCOUNT OF THE GENTOO RELIGION IN HINDOSTAN.\*

---

1. **SOME** years ago, a gentleman published "An exact Translation of the Koran of Mahomet," with a design to contrast it with the Bible; to show how far preferable the Mahometan Bible was to that of the Christians; and, by a plain inference, how great the pre-eminence was of Mahometanism above that of Christianity.

2. As this had not the effect which the writer desired, another gentleman has since published an exact translation of the Indian Koran, that is, the Shastah of Bramah, undoubtedly with the same charitable design,—to contrast this with the Bible, and to show how great is the pre-eminence of Paganism above Christianity.

3. Letting alone a thousand wonderful assertions scattered up and down his work, I would only at present, 1. Give the substance of this curious book, in the words of its admirer; 2. Examine what he says concerning the antiquity of it, and concerning the nations that receive it as sacred; 3. Observe some instances of this writer's esteem for the Bible; and conclude with some cursory remarks.

4. And, first, I would give the substance of this curious book, in the words of its admirer: "The rebellious angels groaned in hell for six millions of years. Then God relented. He retired into himself, and became invisible to all the angels for five thousand years. Then he appeared again, and said, 'Let the fifteen regions of purgation and purification appear, for the residence of the rebellious angels; and let them be brought from hell to the lowest of these regions.' And it was so. And he prepared bodies for their prison, and said, 'Herein they shall undergo eighty-

\* These Remarks were first published in "Lloyd's Evening Post," Nov. 30, 1774; and afterwards inserted in the "Arminian Magazine," for 1785.—EDIT.

seven transmigrations, for their punishment and purgation. Then they shall animate the form of a cow, and, afterward, the form of a man. This is their eighty-ninth transmigration. If they now repent, and do good works, they shall pass hence into the second region of punishment and purification; and so successively through the eighth, and then through the ninth, even the first region of purification.'

"The souls, accordingly, that animate every mortal form of man, beast, bird, fish, or insect, are fallen angels, in a state of punishment for their rebellion against God.

"When God began to create the world, he fought with two giants for five thousand years. Then he commanded his first-born creature, Birmah, to create the fifteen regions of punishment and purgation. And Birmah straightway formed a leaf of betel, and thereon floated on the flood Chaos. Then Bistnoo, his second-made creature, transformed himself into a mighty boar, and, descending into the abyss, brought up the Earth on his back. Then issued from him a mighty tortoise, and a mighty snake, and he put the snake erect on the back of the tortoise, and put the Earth on the head of the snake.

"Time from the creation was divided into four ages; the first, of 3,200,000 years; the second, of 1,600,000; the third, of 800,000; and the fourth, of 400,000; six millions in all. The world will continue 359,126 years longer."

5. Such is the substance of this wonderful book! Doubtless fit to be paralleled with the Bible! As to the origin of it, it thus bears witness to itself: "Above four thousand eight hundred and seventy-four years ago, an angel, having received the laws of God, written in the language of angels, came down to Indostan; and, assuming a human form, translated it into the language of the country, calling it Chartah Bhade Shastah of Bramah; that is, 'the Four Scriptures of the mighty Spirit,' which he promulgated as the only means of salvation."

I am, in the second place, to examine what Mr. H. says concerning the antiquity of this book, and concerning the nations that receive it as sacred.

As to its antiquity, it bears this testimony: "For a thousand years the Shastah remained pure; but then some of the Bramins corrupted it; and still more about five hundred years after, which was 3,374 years ago."

6. But what proof induced Mr. H. to receive, and to give, this amazing system to the world? Why, says he, "This account we had from some of the Bramins, and from the most learned of the laity. And in the earliest ages the Bramins were famed for their virtue and wisdom, by the concurrent testimony of all antiquity." "Testimony of all antiquity!" Pray cite a few of those testimonies, with the names of the authors that lived four or five thousand years ago. You know there are no such in the world. Is there a line extant of any author before Moses? Or can we prove that there were any letters in the world before him? And he lived little above three thousand years since.

7. But "Pythagoras and Zoroaster visited them as early as the time of Romulus." I doubt the fact. But how early did Romulus live? Not six-and-twenty hundred years ago. As to Zoroaster, a learned man has clearly proved him to be no other than Moses himself.

8. Equally doubtful is the antiquity of those nations who receive this book as sacred. Nay, "Indostan," you say, "by their own accounts, was peopled as early as most other parts of the known world. And the first invaders of it found the inhabitants a potent, civilized, wise, and learned people." Doubtless "their own accounts" affirm this; but what authors confirm these accounts? I know none. Therefore I rank them with the "Tales of the Fairies."

9. But by what nations are they received as sacred? "They were universally professed," says Mr. H., "by all the nations of Gentoos some thousand years before Christ. The metempsychosis, or transmigration of souls, in particular, which runs through their whole divinity, was held in the most early ages by at least four-fifths of the inhabitants of the earth; and the Gentoos were eminently distinguished in the most early times. Their great antiquity is proved by the perpetuity of their doctrine through a succession of so many ages;" that is, the antiquity of their doctrine proves its antiquity!

10. I am, in the third place, to observe some instances of Mr. H.'s esteem for the Christian Bible. "I profess myself," says he, "an unworthy, though zealous, subscriber to the pure, original Scriptures." But for fear you should not understand him, he immediately adds, "and propagate no system, but what coincides with every religious creed

that has been, or is now, professed throughout the known world." "With every religious creed!" Nay, if it coincides with Paganism, or Mahometanism, it certainly does not coincide with Christianity. For both of these, you well know, are irreconcilable with that book which the Christians receive as the word of God.

11. Let us observe more particularly what esteem Mr. H. has for Moses, the Law, the Prophets, and the New Testament.

As to the first, he avers, "The detail which Moses gives of the creation, and the fall of man, is clogged with too many incomprehensible circumstances, to gain our belief that it can be understood literally." Hence arises his anger at what he calls "Milton's diabolical conceits;" because Milton has shown that detail to be not only simple, easy, and comprehensible, but consistent with the highest reason, and altogether worthy of God. Again: "To suppose the Indians less the care of God than the Israelites;" that is, to suppose he ever had a peculiar people, whom he regarded more than other nations, which, it is certain, Moses every where supposes,—"This is to arraign his justice."

12. As to the law of Moses, he decently affirms, "Nothing but the devil himself could have invented bloody sacrifices, so manifestly repugnant to the true spirit of devotion, and abhorrent to" (abhorred of) "God."

This is a home-thrust both at the Mosaic law, and at St. Paul, who asserts, that "without shedding of blood there is no remission."

13. As to the Prophets, he cuts them all off at a stroke. For "God's prescience of the actions of free agents is utterly repugnant and contradictory to the very nature and essence of free agency." If so, either man is a mere machine, or there never was any prophecy from the beginning of the world. Consequently, Isaiah and all the Prophets were mere impostors; yea, and Jesus of Nazareth too.

This strikes at the New as well as the Old Testament; for it contains numerous prophecies. So here the mask quite falls off. Accordingly, he laughs at "the reveries of Paul;" and tells us, in express terms, that "only the words of Christ are the pure, original Scripture." Nay, and not all of them; for some of them are predictions of the actions of free agents.

14. And, lest you should draw any argument in favour of Christianity from the death of the martyrs, he tells you, (and they may believe it that can,) "The contempt of death is the character of the Gentoo nation. Every Gentoo meets death with a steady, noble, and philosophical resignation." But how can we reconcile this with the character he gives of them elsewhere? His words are, "The Gentoos in general are as degenerate, crafty, and wicked a people, as any in the known world; if not eminently more so."

15. To finish all, and to complete the full contrast between the doctrines of the Bible and the Shastah, he adds, "The fundamental points of religion were impressed on the heart of man at his creation. The principles of these primitive, original truths, graven on the souls of all men, are these: 1. The being of a God, who is the Creator and Preserver of all things. 2. The existence of three prime created beings. 3. The creation of angels. 4. The rebellion of part of them, and their fall from heaven. 5. The immortality of the soul. 6. A state of future rewards and punishments. 7. That man is now in a state of punishment, for sins committed in a prior state. 8. That one angel tempted the other angels, and is now the tempter of men. 9. That one or more mediators are necessary to bring men back to God. 10. That there is an intermediate state of punishment and purification between death and heaven. 11. The existence of a golden age, wherein men used no animal food. And, 12. The ministration of angels. These were the primitive truths revealed by God to man, and the only ones necessary to men's salvation!"

16. What a strange hotchpotch is here! What a wonderful jumble of truth and falsehood together! Are these twelve articles of his creed "the fundamental points of religion?" And are they all so "impressed on the heart of every man, as never to be effaced?" Why, they never were impressed on my mind yet: Several of them I no more believe than I do the Koran. I never met with an American Indian who believed half of them; nor an uninstructed African who believed one of them: Unless, perhaps, the being of a God. And is the belief of these propositions "necessary to man's salvation?" I cannot but repeat the observation, wherein experience confirms me more and more; namely, They that do not believe the Bible will



believe anything. They may believe Voltaire, or the Shastah. They may believe that a man is able to put himself into a quart bottle!

---

## SOME REMARKS

ON

ARTICLE X. OF MR. MATY'S NEW REVIEW,  
FOR DECEMBER, 1784.

---

1. A DAY or two ago this Review fell into my hands, which contains a letter from the Rev. Mr. Badcock. I have not the pleasure of knowing this gentleman; but I esteem him for his useful and ingenious publications. And I think it my duty to inform both him and the public better, of some points wherein they have been misinformed.

2. He says, "Mr. Samuel Wesley, of Epworth, in Lincolnshire, was sent to the University." This is not accurate. He was educated for some years at a Dissenting Academy, from which he then privately retired, and entered himself at Exeter-College, in Oxford. "His heroic poem, 'The Life of Christ,' excited the ridicule of the wits." His own account of it was, "The cuts are good; the notes pretty good; the verses so so." "At a very advanced age he published a Latin work on the Book of Job, which was never held in any estimation by the learned." I doubt that. It certainly contains immense learning; but of a kind which I do not admire.

3. "He married a woman of extraordinary abilities, the daughter of Dr. Samuel Annesley." (Dr. Annesley and the then Earl of Anglesey were brothers' sons.) "Samuel, his eldest son, was a noted Jacobite." Nay, he was no more a Jacobite than he was a Turk. And what amends can Mr. Badcock or Mr. Maty make, for publishing this egregious falsehood? "Many of his political satires remain unpublished, on account of their treasonable tendency." Here is a double mistake: For, (1.) He never published

anything political, whether satirical or not. (2.) He never wrote anything of a treasonable tendency; he sacredly avoided it. "In his rage of Jacobitism, he poured out the very dregs of it on Royalty itself." No, never. He never wrote, much less published, one line against the King. I speak it from personal knowledge, having often heard him say, "If it reflects on the King, it is none of mine." His constant practice may be learnt from those lines, in the *Battle of the Sexes* :—

"Forgive the voice that useful fiction sings,  
Not impious tales of deities impure;  
Not faults of breathless Queens, or living Kings,  
In open treason, or in veil obscure."

"Time, however, changed the satirist against Sir Robert into an humble suppliant." Nay, I do not believe he ever wrote a line to Sir Robert, either in verse or prose.

4. "Mrs. Wesley lived long enough to deplore the extravagance of her two sons, John and Charles; considering them as 'under strong delusions, to believe a lie.'" By vile misrepresentations she was deceived for a time. But she no sooner heard them speak for themselves, than she was thoroughly convinced, they were in no delusion, but spoke "the words of truth and soberness." She afterwards lived with me several years, and died rejoicing and praising God.

5. I was born in June, 1708, and was between six and seven years old, when I was left alone in my father's house, being then all in flames; till I was taken out of the nursery-window, by a man strangely standing on the shoulders of another. Those words in the picture, "Is not this a brand plucked out of the burning?" chiefly allude to this.

6. "He had early a very strong impression of his designation to some extraordinary work." Indeed not I: I never said so; I never thought so; I am guiltless in this matter. The strongest impression I had till I was three or four and twenty was,

*Inter sylvas Academi quarere verum;\**

and afterwards, (while I was my father's Curate,) to save my own soul and those that heard me. When I returned

\* This quotation from Horace is thus translated by Boscawen :—

"To Academic groves in search of truth."—EDIT. Google

to Oxford, it was my full resolve to live and die there ; the reasons for which I gave in a long letter to my father, since printed in one of my Journals. In this purpose I continued, till Dr. Burton, one of the Trustees for Georgia, pressed me to go over with General Oglethorpe, (who is still alive, and well knows the whole transaction,) in order to preach to the Indians. With great difficulty I was prevailed upon to go, and spend upwards of two years abroad. At my return, I was more than ever determined to lay my bones at Oxford. But I was insensibly led, without any previous plan or design, to preach, first, in many of the churches in London, then in more public places ; afterwards in Bristol, Kingswood, Newcastle, and throughout Great Britain and Ireland. Therefore all that Mr. Badcock adds, of the incidents that "gave an additional force" to an impression that never existed, is very ingenious ; yet is in truth a castle in the air.

7. It is true, that for a while I admired the Mystic writers. But I dropped them, even before I went to Georgia ; long before I knew or suspected anything as to justification by faith. Therefore all that follows of my "making my system of divinity more commodious for general use ;" and of "employing myself to search for some common bond, whereby the most dissonant sects might have a centre of union ;" having no foundation to stand upon, falls to the ground at once. I had quite other work while I was at Oxford ; being fully engaged, partly with my pupils, and partly with my little offices, being Greek Lecturer, and Moderator of both the classes.

8. "His dexterity in debate has been so long known, that it is almost become proverbial." It has been my first care for many years, to see that my cause was good ; and never, either in jest or earnest, to defend the wrong side of a question. And shame on me, if I cannot defend the right, after so much practice ; and after having been so early accustomed to separate truth from falsehood, how artfully soever they were twisted together.

9. If the poem on Religious Discourse "delineates the disposition and character of the author," it does not delineate mine ; for I was not the author, but Mr. John Gambold. What becomes then of that good-natured remark ?—"The wonder is not, that John Wesley should have shown an inclination to insult the memory of a sober Divine ; but that

Samuel Wesley should have been disposed to show lenity to a Whig of the Revolution." Mistake upon mistake! (1.) Those marginal notes were not wrote by Samuel, but Charles Wesley. He told me so this very day. (2.) Both my father and all his sons have always praised God for the happy Revolution. I let Bishop Warburton alone. He is gone to rest; I well hope, in Abraham's bosom.

10. "Mr. Wesley had a very important end in view." What end, but to save sinners? What other end could I possibly have in view? or can have at this day? "Deep projects of a subtle mind." Nay, I am not subtle, but the veriest fool under the sun, if I have any earthly project at all now! For what do I want which this world can give? And, after the labour of fourscore years,

No foot of land do I possess,  
 No cottage in the wilderness;  
 A poor wayfaring man,  
 I dwell awhile in tents below,  
 Or gladly wander to and fro,  
 Till I my Canaan gain.

CITY-ROAD,  
 January 11, 1785.

JOHN WESLEY.

## THOUGHTS ON A LATE PUBLICATION.

1. SOME time since a celebrated book fell into my hands, "An Account of the Pelew Islands." I looked it over, but in a cursory manner, being straitened for time. Having now a little more leisure, I took it again, and went through it with more attention, particularly the latter part, which is by far the most laboured: And the more I read and considered, the more convinced I was, that, if this account be true, the Bible is not true; for the Bible affirms, not in one place only, but through the whole tenor of it, that all mankind are "by nature dead in trespasses and sins." But in this treatise we read not only of a man, but a nation who are by nature free from sin, without any ill tempers, without anything blamable either in their words or actions.

Nay, they are described, not only as negatively good, free from every evil temper and action, but as positively so, as adorned in a high degree with benevolence, and every amiable quality. It is true, the author allows them to have some infirmities; among which, perhaps, some may reckon polygamy, theft, and murdering all their prisoners in cool blood; but even for the last of these, he makes a handsome apology, on the foot of political wisdom.

2. Such a nation, the unblamable Ethiopians, Homer supposes to have lived two or three thousand years ago: But if there ever was, or is now, such a nation in the world, the Scriptures are a falsity; and the inspired writers, so called, talked at random, and were utterly ignorant of human nature: Nor did any writer do justice to mankind, till the account of the Pelew Islands was published.

3. I make no doubt but Captain Wilson sailed from England in the *Antelope*, in the East India Company's service; neither of his being shipwrecked on the coral-reef, not very far from China. I readily believe, that the inhabitants of the neighbouring island showed him and his men no small kindness; and that one of them, a youth of an amiable temper and uncommon understanding, (whether he was a Prince, any more than Tomo Chachi was a King, I cannot tell,) accompanied him in his return to London, and some months after died of the small-pox: But I can in nowise believe, that he, or Abba Thulle, or any of his subjects, were taught all that is right by the light of nature, and enabled, by the power of nature, to practise all that is good. To suppose this, is to sap the foundation of revelation, and to destroy Christianity at a stroke; seeing, if this supposition be admitted, there is no need of it at all. If, therefore, this be the judgment of Captain Wilson, and Mr. Keate, why should they personate Christians any more?

4. But I cannot admit this supposition at all. Perhaps I have conversed, in fourscore years, (between forty and fifty of which I have, at an average, travelled four thousand miles a year,) with more persons than these two gentlemen put together; and many of them Indians of various nations, Creeks, Cherokees, Chickasaws, and no ways infected with Christianity: But one such man as Abba Thulle, Raa Kook, or Arra Kooker, I have not found. Nor therefore can I believe that there is, I will not say a nation, but an indivi-

dual upon earth, who are either born without shame, as Captain Cook affirms the nations of Otaheite to be; or to be wholly unblamable, both in their tempers and actions, as Captain Wilson affirms the nations of Pelew to be.

5. I do not say that either Captain Wilson or his historian designed, by this publication, to strike at the root of the Christian revelation, by showing that it was grounded on a palpable falsehood, namely, the fall of man; but I say again, that if their account be true, if mankind are faultless by nature, naturally endued with light to see all necessary truth, and with strength to follow it,—that smooth sophister Reynal is in the right; revelation is a mere fable; we can do perfectly well without it: Witness Lee Boo, Abba Thulle, and all his subjects; nay, witness all Captain Wilson's crew, (except one, who happened to give his fellow a bloody nose,) and we may seriously say, with a great man, "Indeed I do not see that we have much (or any) need of Jesus Christ."

6. I cannot, therefore, but earnestly advise all those who still believe the Scriptures to be of God, to beware of this, and all other books of this kind, which either affirm or insinuate that there are any Heathens in the world who, like the supposed nations of the Pelew Islands, are unblamable by nature; since, if there be any such, all revelation is needless, and the Christian revelation utterly false.

JOHN WESLEY.

PECKHAM,  
*December 30, 1789.*

---



---

## THOUGHTS

UPON

BARON MONTESQUIEU'S "SPIRIT OF LAWS."

[PRINTED IN THE YEAR 1781.]

---

1. As some of my friends desire I would give them my thoughts on "The Spirit of Laws," I do it willingly, and in the plainest manner I can; that, if I am wrong, I may be

the sooner set right. I undertook the reading of it with huge expectation, hoping to find an invaluable treasure; as the author is seldom spoken of, but as the Phoenix of the age, a prodigy of understanding; and the book is everywhere spoken of as the highest effort of genius that ever was. Accordingly, as late as it has appeared in an English dress, it is already come to the eleventh edition; and who knows but in a few years more it may come to the two-and-twentieth?

2. Yet I cannot but observe, that in several places the translator does not seem to understand the original; that there is, in the last London edition, a great number of typographical errors; and that, not in a few places, either the translator or the printer has made absolute nonsense.

3. But whence is it that such a multitude of people so hugely admire, and highly applaud, this treatise? Perhaps nine in ten of them do this because others do: They follow the cry without why or wherefore: They follow one another, like a flock of sheep; they run on, because many run before them. It is quite the fashion; and who would be out of the fashion? As well be out of the world. Not that one half of these have read the book over; nor does one in ten of them understand it. But it is enough that "every one commends it; and why should not I too?" especially as he seems greatly to admire himself, and upon occasion to commend himself too; though in a modest, decent way; not in that fulsome manner which is common among modern writers.

4. Others admire him because of his vast learning, testified by the numerous books he refers to; and yet others, because he is no bigot to Christianity, because he is a free and liberal thinker. I doubt whether many gentlemen do not admire him on this account more than on all the others put together; and the rather, because he does not openly attack the religion of his country, but wraps up in the most neat and decent language the remarks which strike at the root of it.

5. But it cannot be denied that he deserves our commendation upon several accounts. He has an extremely fine imagination, and no small degree of understanding. His style is lively, and, even under the disadvantage of a translation, terse and elegant. Add to this, that he has many

remarks which I suppose are perfectly his own ; at least, I never remember to have seen them in any either ancient or modern writer. Now, when all these things are considered, is it any wonder that he should be received with so high and general applause ?

6. "Why, then, do not you concur with the general voice? Why do not you pay him the same admiration?" Without any preface or apology, I will tell you my reasons; and then let you or any candid man judge whether they are not sufficient.

I do not greatly admire him, (1.) Because so large a part of his book, I believe little less than half of it, is dry, dull, unaffecting, and unentertaining; at least, to all but Frenchmen. What have I or any Briton to do with the petty changes in the French government? What have we to do with a long, tedious detail of the old, obsolete, feudal laws? Over and above that we cannot find any use therein, that the knowledge of these things answers no one reasonable purpose, it touches none of the passions; it gives no pleasure, no entertainment, to a thinking mind. It is heavy and tedious to the last degree. It is as insipid as the Travels of Thomas Coryat.

7. I do not admire him, (2.) Because I think he makes very many remarks that are not just; and because he gives us many assertions which are not true. But all these he pronounces as *ex cathedra*, with an air of infallibility; as though he were the Dictator not only of France, but of Europe; as though he expected all men to bow before him.

8. But what I least of all admire is, his laying hold on every opportunity to depreciate the inspired writers; Moses, in particular. Indeed, here his prudence and decency seem to fail him; and he speaks of the Jewish Lawgiver with as little respect or reserve as he would of Lycurgus, Romulus, or Numa Pompilius.

9. These are some of the reflections which readily occurred to me from a cursory reading of this celebrated author. I add but one more: What is the meaning of his title-page? I am afraid of stumbling at the threshold. What does he mean by "the Spirit of Laws?" After reading the whole book, I really do not know. The words give me no idea at all; and the more I study, the less I comprehend them. The author never defines them at all. I verily believe he



did not comprehend them himself. I believe he had no clear or determinate ideas affixed to those words. And was he not likely, when he set out with his head in a mist, to go on in a wonderful manner? Other talents he undoubtedly had; but two he wanted,—religion and logic. Therefore, he ought to be read warily by those who are not well grounded in both.

10. Upon the whole, I think Baron Montesquieu was wholly unworthy of the violent encomiums which have been bestowed upon him. I think he excelled in imagination, but not in judgment, any more than in solid learning. I think, in a word, that he was a child to Monsieur Pascal, Father Malebranche, or Mr. Locke.

---



---

## LETTER

TO

THE REVEREND MR. FURLY.

---

DEAR SIR,

LIVERPOOL, *July 15, 1764.*

I HAVE had many thoughts since we parted, on the subject of our late conversation. I send you them just as they occur. "What is it that constitutes a good style?" Perspicuity, purity, propriety, strength, and easiness, joined together. When any one of these is wanting, it is not a good style. Dr. Middleton's style wants easiness: It is stiff to a high degree. And stiffness in writing is full as great a fault as stiffness in behaviour. It is a blemish hardly to be excused, much less to be imitated. He is pedantic. "It is pedantry," says the great Lord Boyle, "to use a hard word, where an easier will serve." Now, this the Doctor continually does, and that of set purpose. His style is abundantly too artificial: *Artis est celare artem*;\* but his art glares in every sentence. He continually says, "Observe how fine I speak:" Whereas, a good speaker

\* It is the perfection of art to conceal itself.—EDIT.

seems to forget he speaks at all. His full round curls naturally put one in mind of Sir Cloudesley Shovel's peruke, that "eternal buckle takes in Parian stone." Yet this very fault may appear a beauty to you, because you are apt to halt on the same foot. There is a stiffness both in your carriage and speech, and something of it in your very familiarity. But for this very reason you should be jealous of yourself, and guard against your natural infirmity. If you imitate any writers, let it be South, Atterbury, or Swift, in whom all the properties of a good writer meet. I was myself once much fonder of Prior than Pope; as I did not then know that stiffness was a fault. But what in all Prior can equal, for beauty of style, some of the first lines that Pope ever published?—

"Poets themselves must die, like those they sung,  
Deaf the praised ear, and mute the tuneful tongue;  
E'en he whose heart now melts in tender lays,  
Shall shortly want the generous tear he pays.  
Then from his eyes thy much-loved form shall part;  
And the last pang shall tear thee from his heart:  
Life's idle business at one gasp be o'er,  
The Muse forgot, and thou beloved no more."

Here is style! How clear, how pure, proper, strong; and yet how amazingly easy! This crowns all; no stiffness, no hard words; no apparent art, no affectation; all is natural, and therefore consummately beautiful. Go thou and write likewise. As for me, I never think of my style at all; but just set down the words that come first. Only when I transcribe anything for the press, then I think it my duty to see every phrase be clear, pure, and proper. Conciseness (which is now, as it were, natural to me) brings *quantum sufficit* of strength. If, after all, I observe any stiff expression, I throw it out, neck and shoulders.

Clearness in particular is necessary for you and me; because we are to instruct people of the lowest understanding. Therefore we, above all, if we think with the wise, yet must speak with the vulgar. We should constantly use the most common, little, easy words (so they are pure and proper) which our language affords. When I had been a member of the University about ten years, I wrote and talked much as you do now. But when I talked to plain people in the castle, or the town, I observed they gaped and stared. This quickly obliged me to alter my style, and

adopt the language of those I spoke to. And yet there is a dignity in this simplicity, which is not disagreeable to those of the highest rank.

I advise you sacredly to abstain from reading any stiff writer. A by-stander sees more than those that play the game. Your style is much hurt already. Indeed, something might be said, if you were a learned infidel, writing for money or reputation. But that is not the case: You are a Christian Minister, speaking and writing to save souls. Have this end always in your eye, and you will never designedly use any hard word. Use all the sense, learning, and time you have; forgetting yourself, and remembering only, those are the souls for whom Christ died; heirs of a happy or miserable eternity!

I am

Your affectionate friend and brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## THOUGHTS

ON

THE CHARACTER AND WRITINGS OF MR. PRIOR.

[PRINTED IN THE YEAR 1782.]

---

1. A VERY ingenious writer has lately given us a particular account of the character and Works of Mr. Prior. But it was not likely to be a just one, as he formed it chiefly on the testimony of very suspicious witnesses; I mean, Mr. Pope and Mr. Spence. I object both to one and the other. They depreciated him to exalt themselves. They viewed him with no friendly eye; looking upon him (particularly Mr. Pope) as a rival; whom, therefore, they rejoiced to depress.

2. Mr. Pope gives it as his opinion, that he was fit only to make verses. What can be more unjust? He was fit for transactions of the most difficult and delicate nature. Accordingly, he was entrusted with them at Paris, and acquitted himself to the full satisfaction of his employers.

He was really fit for everything ; for writing, either in verse or prose ; for conversation, and for either public or private business.

3. But Mr. Spence says, " His life was irregular, negligent, and sensual. He descended to the meanest company. The woman with whom he cohabited was a despicable drab of the lowest species. One of his wenches, perhaps Chloe, stole his plate, and ran away with it."

I do not believe one word of this: Although I was often in his neighbourhood, I never heard a word of it before. It carries no face of probability. Would Bishop Atterbury have kept up an acquaintance with a man of such a character? Would that accomplished nobleman, the then Earl of Oxford, have given him a place even in his friendship? I am well assured, my eldest brother would have had no acquaintance with him, had he been such a wretch as Mr. Spence describes.

4. Others say, his Chloe was ideal. I know the contrary. I have heard my eldest brother say her name was Miss Taylor ; that he knew her well ; and that she once came to him (in Dean's Yard, Westminster) purposely to ask his advice. She told him, " Sir, I know not what to do. Mr. Prior makes large professions of his love ; but he never offers me marriage." My brother advised her to bring the matter to a point at once. She went directly to Mr. Prior, and asked him plainly, " Do you intend to marry me, or no ?" He said many soft and pretty things ; on which she said, " Sir, in refusing to answer, you *do* answer. I will see you no more." And she did see him no more to the day of his death. But afterwards she spent many hours, standing and weeping at his tomb in Westminster Abbey.

5. As to his writings, I cannot but think Mr. Prior had not only more learning, but a stronger natural understanding, than Mr. Pope. But this is the less observable, because Mr. Prior always wrote *currente calamo*,\* having little time to correct anything ; whereas Mr. Pope laboured every line, and polished it with the utmost exactness. Prior's praise is by no means that of correctness. He has many unpolished, hasty, half-formed lines, which he would not (or did not) take the pains to correct. I can therefore by no means subscribe to that sentence, " What he obtains above mediocrity seems

\* With a rapid pen.—EDIT. Digitized by Google

to be the effort of struggle and travail." Surely, no. What he frequently obtains, as far above Pope's "Messiah," as that is above Quarles's "Emblems," seems to be the effort of a genius not inferior in strength to any beside Milton. But "his words are put by constraint into their places, where they do their duty, but do it sullenly." Nay, I reply, most of his words are as natural and unconstrained, as even those of Waller; though they would certainly have done their duty better, had he taken more pains with them. "He extends his sense from one couplet to another; but without success." I think, with great success. I will give the first instance that occurs to my memory:—

"Happiness, object of that waking dream,  
Which we call life, mistaking; fugitive theme  
Of my pursuing verse; ideal shade,  
Notional good, by fancy only made,  
And by tradition nursed; fallacious fire,  
Whose dancing beams mislead our fond desire;  
Cause of our care, and error of our mind!  
O hadst thou ever been by Heaven design'd  
For Adam and his mortal race, the boon  
Entire had been reserved for Solomon."

Were ever lines extended from couplet to couplet with more success than these? Is there any constraint here? What lines can flow more free, more easy, more natural?

6. But "his numbers commonly want ease, airiness, lightness, and facility." I cannot possibly be of this opinion. Wherever this is proper, as in all his tales, and in "Alma," his numbers have certainly the greatest airiness, lightness, and facility. Nay, "but even what is smooth is not soft." No? What do you think of "The Lady's Looking-Glass?" (to take one instance out of fifty.) Where will you show me any softer numbers than these?—

"Celia and I the other day  
Walk'd o'er the sand-hills to the sea:  
The setting sun adorn'd the coast,  
His beams entire, his fierceness lost;  
And on the bosom of the deep  
The waves lay only not asleep.  
The nymph did like the scene appear,  
Serenely pleasant, calmly fair:  
Soft fell her words, as flew the air."

In truth, the general fault of Prior's poetry is this: It is not too much, but too little, laboured. by Pope filed and

polished every line; Prior set his words down as fast as he could write, and scarce polished any of them with any accuracy, at least only here and there. And the reason is plain: Pope lived by his writings; Prior did not. And again: Pope was a man of much leisure; Prior a man of much business.

7. But to descend from generals to particulars: His tales are certainly the best told of any in the English tongue. And it matters not, whether they were ever told before or no. They never were in the English language. I instance only in two of them,—“The Lady’s Looking-Glass,” (mentioned before,) and “The English Padlock.” In both the diction is pure, terse, easy, and elegant, in the highest degree. And the moral both of one and the other may be of excellent use; particularly that of the latter:—

“Be to her virtues very kind;  
Be to her faults a little blind;  
Let all her ways be unconfined,  
And clap your padlock—on her mind.”

8. But “his amorous effusions have neither gallantry nor tenderness. They are the dull exercises of one trying to be amorous by dint of study. When he tries to act the lover, his thoughts are unaffecting and remote. In his amorous pedantry he exhibits the College.”

Surely, never was anything more distant from the truth! “Neither gallantry, nor tenderness!” For gallantry, I know not well what it means. But never man wrote with more tenderness. Witness the preface to “Henry and Emma,” with the whole inimitable poem: Witness the story of “Abraham.” Are these “the dull exercises of one trying to be amorous by dint of study?” Are the thoughts in these “unaffecting and remote?” yea, “amorous pedantry of a College?” O no! They are the genuine language of the heart. “Unaffecting!” So far from it, that I know not what man of sensibility can read them without tears.

9. But it is said, “‘Henry and Emma’ is a dull and tedious dialogue, which excites neither esteem for the man, nor tenderness for the woman.” Does it not? Then I know not with what eyes, or with what heart, a man must read it. “Dull and tedious!” See how Doctors differ! One who was no bad poet himself, and no bad judge of poetry, describing love, says,—

"The' immortal glories of the nut-brown maid  
Emblazon'd lively on his shield appear ;"

and always spoke of this very poem as one of the finest in the English language.

10. However, "'Alma' never had a plan, nor any drift or design." The drift and design of it is tolerably plain. It is a strong satire on that self-conceited tribe of men, who pretend to philosophize upon everything, natural or spiritual. It keenly exposes those who continually obtrude their own systems upon the world, and pretend to account for everything. His design is, if possible, to make these men less wise in their own conceit, by showing them how plausibly a man may defend the oddest system that can be conceived ; and he intermixes many admirable reflections, and closes with a very striking conclusion ; which points out, where one would least expect it, that "all is vanity."

11. The strangest sentence of all is that which is passed upon "Solomon:" "It wants the power of engaging attention. Tediousness is the most fatal of all faults. The tediousness of this poem"—Did any one ever discern it before? I should as soon think of tediousness in the second or sixth *Æneid* ! So far from it, that if I dip in any of the three books, I scarce know where to leave off. No ! This poem does not "want the power of engaging the attention" of any that have a taste for poetry ; that have a taste for the strongest sense expressed in some of the finest verses that ever appeared in the English tongue.

I cite but one passage for all. It stands in the first book :—

"Now, when my mind has all the world survey'd,  
And found that nothing by itself was made ;  
When thought has raised itself by just degrees,  
From valleys crown'd with flowers, and hills with trees,—  
From all the living that four-footed rove  
Along the shore, the meadow, or the grove ;  
From all that can with fins or feathers fly  
Through the aerial or the watery sky ;  
From the poor reptile with a reasoning soul,  
That miserable master of the whole ;  
From this great object of the body's eye,  
This fair half-round, this ample azure sky,  
Terribly large and wonderfully bright,  
With stars unnumber'd and unmeasured light ;  
From essences unseen, celestial names,  
Enlightening spirits, ministerial flames,

Angels, dominions, potentates, and thrones,  
 All that in each degree the name of creature owns ;—  
 Lift we our reason to that sovereign Cause,  
 Who bless'd the whole with life, and bounded it with laws ;  
 Who forth from nothing call'd this comely frame,  
 His will and act, his word and work, the same ;  
 To whom a thousand years are but a day,  
 Who bade the light her genial beams display,  
 And set the Moon, and taught the Sun his way ;  
 Who, waking Time, his creature, from the source  
 Primeval, order'd his predestined course ;  
 Himself, as in the hollow of his hand,  
 Holding obedient to his high command  
 The deep abyss, the long-continued store,  
 Where months, and days, and hours, and minutes pour  
 Their floating parts, and thenceforth are no more.  
 This Alpha and Omega, First and Last,  
 Who like the potter in a mould has cast  
 The world's great frame, commanding it to be  
 Such as the eyes of sense or reason see ;  
 Yet, if he wills, may change or spoil the whole ;  
 May take yon beauteous, mystic, starry roll,  
 And burn it, like an useless parchment scroll ;  
 May from its basis in one moment pour  
 This melted earth  
 Like liquid metal, and like burning ore ;  
 Who sole in power, at the beginning said,  
 ' Let sea, and air, and earth, and heaven be made,  
 And it was so ; ' and when he shall ordain  
 In other sort, has but to speak again,  
 And they shall be no more : Of this great theme,  
 This glorious, hallow'd, everlasting name,  
 This God, I would discourse."

12. Now, what has Mr. Pope in all his eleven volumes  
 which will bear any comparison with this? As elegant a  
 piece as he ever wrote was, "Verses to the Memory of an  
 Unfortunate Lady." But was ever anything more exqui-  
 sitely injudicious? First, what a subject! An eulogium  
 on a self-murderer! And the execution is as bad as the  
 design: It is a commendation not only of the person, but  
 the act! —

" Is it in heaven a crime to love too well ?  
 To bear too tender or too firm a heart ?  
 To act a lover's or a Roman's part ? "

Yes, whatever men may think, it is a crime, and no small  
 one, with Him, that sitteth in heaven, for any worm on earth  
 to violate the canon He hath fixed against self-murder.  
 Nor did any one ever do this out of firmness of heart, but



for want of firmness. "A Roman's part?" Nay, no Roman ever acted this part, but out of rank cowardice. This was the case of Cato in particular. He did not dare to receive a favour from Cæsar.

13. But go on:—

*"Ambition first sprung from your high abodes,  
The glorious fault of angels and of gods."*

Consummate nonsense! "Of angels and of gods!" What is the difference? Are not these angels and gods the very same? that is, in plain English, devils! Are these subjects of panegyric, or fit to be recommended to our imitation? And if the fault they were guilty of were so glorious, what cruelty was it to cast them into hell for it!

But what comfort does the poet provide for the woman that was guilty of this glorious fault? Why, this:—

*"Yet shall thy grave with rising flowers be dress'd,  
And the green turf lie light upon thy breast."*

Who would not go to hell, to have the green turf grow upon his grave? Nay, and primroses too! For the poet assures her,—

*"There the first roses of the spring shall blow!"*

The conclusion of this celebrated poem is not the least remarkable part of it:—

*"Life's idle business at one gasp be o'er,  
The Muse forgot, and thou beloved no more!"*

"Idle business" indeed! If we had no better business than this, it is pity that ever we were born! But was this all the business of his life? Did God raise him from the dust of the earth, and breathe into him a living soul, for no other business than to court a mistress, and to make verses? O what a view is here given of an immortal spirit, that came forth from God, and is going back to God!

14. Upon the whole, I cannot but think that the natural understanding of Mr. Prior was far stronger than that of Mr. Pope; that his judgment was more correct, his learning more extensive, his knowledge of religion and of the Scriptures far greater. And I conceive his poetical abilities were at least equal to those either of Pope or Dryden. But as poetry was not his business, but merely the employment of his leisure hours, few of his pieces are so highly finished as

most of Mr. Pope's are. But those which he has taken the pains to polish (as the "Ode to the Memory of Colonel Villiers," the "Paraphrase on the Thirteenth of the Corinthians," and several parts of "Solomon") do not yield to anything that has been wrote either by Pope, or Dryden, or any English poet, except Milton.

---

## THOUGHTS

ON

THE WRITINGS OF BARON SWEDENBORG.

---

1. "I WAS born," says the Baron, "in the year 1689. My father, Jasper Swedenborg, was Bishop of Westragothia. King Charles the Twelfth appointed me Assessor in the Metallic College, in which office I continued till the year 1747, when I quitted the office, to give myself wholly to the new function which the Lord had called me to. In 1719 I was ennobled by Queen Ulrica Eleonora, and named Swedenborg. I am a Fellow of the Royal Academy of Sciences, at Stockholm. In the year 1734 I published the '*Regnum Minerale*,' in three volumes folio; and in 1738 I took a journey into Italy, and stayed a year at Venice and Rome.

"In the year 1743 the Lord was pleased to manifest himself to me in a personal appearance, to open in me a sight of the spiritual world, and to enable me to converse with spirits and angels; and this privilege I have enjoyed ever since. From that time I began to publish various unknown *arcana*, that have been either seen by me, or revealed to me, concerning God, the spiritual sense of Scripture, the state of man after death, heaven and hell, and many important truths." This is dated, "London, 1769." I think he lived nine or ten years longer.

2. Many years ago, the Baron came over to England, and lodged at one Mr. Brockmer's, who informed me, (and the

same information was given me by Mr. Mathesius, a very serious Swedish Clergyman, both of whom were alive when I left London, and, I suppose, are so still,) that while he was in his house he had a violent fever; in the height of which, being totally delirious, he broke from Mr. Brockmer, ran into the street stark naked, proclaimed himself the Messiah, and rolled himself in the mire. I suppose he dates from this time his admission into the society of angels. From this time we are undoubtedly to date that peculiar species of insanity which attended him, with scarce any intermission, to the day of his death.

3. In all history I find but one instance of an insanity parallel to this: I mean, that related by the Roman poet, of the gentleman at Argos, in other respects a sensible man,—

*Qui se oredebat miros audire tragædos,  
In vacuo lætus sessor plausorque theatro,—*

“who imagined himself to hear admirable tragedies, and undoubtedly saw as well as heard the actors, while he was sitting alone, and clapping them in the empty theatre.” This seems to have been a purely natural disorder, although not easy to account for. Whether anything preternatural was added in the case of the Baron, I do not undertake to determine.

4. The accounts of those “admirable tragedies” which he has published take up many quarto volumes. I have read little more of them than what we have in English, except his inimitable piece, *De Nuptiis Cœlestibus*,—“Of the Marriages in Heaven.” To the reading of this, I acknowledge, I was invited by the newness of the subject; and I cannot doubt, but the same circumstance (though they were not sensible of it) contributed much to the pleasure which those pious men, Mr. Cl., Mr. Ha., and Mr. Cl—s, have received from his writings. The same pleasure they naturally desired to impart to their countrymen, by translating, publishing, recommending, and propagating them with their might. They doubtless found an additional pleasure from the huge admiration wherewith many received them; and I should not wonder if some of these should be adopted into the society of angels, just as the Baron himself was; nay, I cannot but apprehend, that they have already attained to a degree of the same illumination.

5. Desiring to be thoroughly master of the subject, I procured the translation of the first volume of his last and largest theological work, entitled, "True Christian Religion." (The original the Baron himself presented me with a little before he died.) I took an extract thereof from the beginning to the end, that I might be able to form a more accurate judgment. And one may trace, through the whole, remains of a fine genius, "majestic, though in ruins!" From the whole I remark, that what Mr. Law oddly imputes to Sir Isaac Newton is truly imputable to the Baron: He "ploughed with Jacob Behmen's heifer," and that both in philosophy and divinity. But he far exceeded his master: His dreams are more extraordinary than those of Jacob himself.

6. Nothing can be more extraordinary than his manner of expounding the holy Scriptures; a specimen of which he has given in his exposition of the Decalogue, in which he undertakes to show, not only the literal and spiritual, but even the celestial, meaning of each commandment. For example:—

"By the fourth commandment, in the spiritual sense, is meant the regeneration and reformation of man. The work of regeneration is successive." This is borrowed from Jacob Behmen. "Answering in its several stages to man's conception, formation in the womb, his birth and his education. The first act of the new birth is reformation; the second act of it is regeneration." That is, in plain English, the second act of the new birth is the new birth!

"In a spiritual sense, by honouring father and mother is meant revering and loving God and the church. In a celestial sense, by father is meant revering and loving God and the church. In a celestial sense, by father is meant God; by mother, the communion of saints.

"The celestial meaning of the sixth commandment is, Thou shalt not hate God.

"Committing adultery, in a spiritual sense, is adulterating the word of God.

"Stealing, in the celestial sense, is the taking away divine power from the Lord."

7. I will oblige the reader with a few more of his extraordinary expositions:—

"In Scripture, by a garden, a grove, woods, are meant,

wisdom, intelligence, science; by the olive, the vine, the cedar, the poplar, and the oak, are meant the good and truth of the church, under the different characters of celestial, spiritual, rational, natural, and sensual; by a lamb, an ox, a sheep, a calf, a goat, are meant innocence, charity, and natural affection; by Egypt is signified what is scientific; by Ashur, what is rational; by Edom, what is natural; by Moab, the adulteration of good; by Ammon, the adulteration of truth; by Jacob is meant the church natural; by Israel, the church spiritual; and by Judah, the church celestial."

Can any person of common understanding defend any of these expositions? Are they not so utterly absurd, so far removed from all shadow of reason, that, instead of pronouncing them the dictates of the Holy Ghost, we cannot but judge them to be whims of a distempered imagination? A thousand more, equally absurd, are to be found in all his writings; but I believe these are abundantly sufficient to show the man.

8. Equally extraordinary is the account which the Baron gives of charity and faith:—

"When a man keeps the Ten Commandments, charity follows of course.

"Charity consists in living well.

"Charity consists in willing what is good."

That both these accounts are wrong is certain; but who can reconcile one with the other?

"There can be no faith in an invisible God."

This is bold indeed! Was it intended to confute St. Paul, making use of that very expression in describing the faith of Moses, "He endured as seeing Him that was invisible?"

"Faith in general is a belief that whoever lives well, and believes right, shall be saved."

This definition is quite ambiguous: Believing right may have a hundred different meanings. And it is utterly false, if that expression means any more than a belief "that God is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him."

Rather, faith in general is "a divine evidence of things unseen."

"The Lord is charity and faith in man; and man is charity and faith in the Lord."

I make no scruple to affirm, this is as arrant nonsense as was ever pronounced by any man in Bedlam.

9. Be this a specimen of the Baron's skill in expounding the Scriptures. Come we now to his memorable Visions and Revelations.

Any serious man may observe, that many of these are silly and childish to the last degree; that many others are amazingly odd and whimsical; many palpably absurd, contrary to all sound reason; and many more, contrary, not only to particular texts, but to the whole tenor, of Scripture.

These are interspersed with all the doctrines which he delivers, in order to put them beyond all doubt. The grand error which we learn from his whole work is, that there are not three persons in one God. This stares you in the face, almost in every page, from the beginning to the end of his book. So in the very first chapter,

#### OF GOD THE CREATOR,

we read, "God is one, in essence and person, and Jesus Christ is He.

"Jesus Christ is Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

"Before the creation of the world, there was no Trinity, but it was provided and made when God was manifested in the flesh, and then existed in the Lord Jesus Christ."

"A Trinity of divine persons existing before the creation of the world, is a Trinity of Gods."

10. But he is not content with denying the Trinity. He goes much farther than this: He excludes all that believe it from salvation, and counts it the most damnable of all heresies.

"The church is now in so ruinous a state, that there are scarce any traces left of its ancient glory. And this has come to pass, in consequence of their dividing the divine Trinity into three persons, each of which is declared to be God and Lord. This is the true source of all the Atheism in the world."

I believe no Arian, Socinian, or Mahometan ever affirmed this before.

Again: "The Nicene and Athanasian doctrine concerning a Trinity, have given birth to a faith which has entirely overturned the Christian church."

Nay, Bishop Bull has indisputably proved, that this faith was delivered to the saints long before the Nicene Council sat, and before Athanasius was born.

Yet again: "He that confirmeth himself in a plurality of gods, by a plurality of persons, becomes like a statue formed with movable joints, in the midst of which Satan stands and speaks through its mouth."

So all that believe the Trinity are, according to his charitable sentence, possessed by the devil!

11. To confound all the Trinitarians at a stroke, he adds this memorable relation:—

"In the spiritual world (which lies in the midst between heaven and hell, having heaven above and hell below) are climates and zones as in the natural. The frigid zones are the habitation of those first spirits, who, while on earth, were lazy and indolent. Having once a desire to visit them, I was carried in the spirit to a region covered with snow." (Remember, this region was in the other world!) "It was on the Sabbath-day; and I saw a number of men, that is, human spirits, who had their heads covered with lions' skins, by reason of the cold;" (or who knows, but the poor spirits might have been frozen to death?) "their bodies, with the skins of leopards; and their legs and feet, with bears' skins. I also observed several riding in chariots, made in the shape of dragons with horns; they were drawn by small horses without tails, which ran with the impetuosity of terrible, fierce beasts. They were all flocking towards a church, in which hung a tablet inscribed, 'A divine Being, consisting of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, in essence one, but in persons three.'"

He has abundance of relations to the same purpose. I will add but one more:—

"I once saw a spirit as lightning falling from heaven. I asked him the reason of it. He replied, 'I was cast down, because I believed that God the Father and God the Son are two persons.' All the angels believe they are but one person; and every word that contradicts this, causeth in them the same pain, as if they should snuff up some pungent powder into their nostrils, or as if one should bore their ears through with an awl. And every one has a place in heaven according to his idea of God."

O no; this is a deadly mistake! Every one has a place

in heaven, not according to his ideas, but according to his works.

But notwithstanding all his new revelations, I believe, according to the old one, "There are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Spirit; and these three are one."

For the term "person" I contend not. I know no better: If any does, let him use it.

12. Let us now inquire, what is the Baron's own belief concerning the Trinity.

#### OF THE LORD THE REDEEMER.

"The Lord received his soul from Jehovah, and the divinity of the Father was the Lord's soul.

"The humanity whereby God sent himself into the world was the Son of God.

"The passion of the cross was the final temptation which the Lord endured as the grand Prophet; and it was the means of the glorification of His humanity; that is, of its union with the divinity of the Father."

No. There is not a word in all the Bible concerning any such union of the humanity of Christ with the divinity of the Father. He was then glorified, when He was received again into the glory which He had before the world began.

13. What then is redemption?

"Bringing the hells under subjection, and reducing the heavens into order. God's omnipotence in accomplishing this work was an effect of His humanity." Strange indeed! "It is now believed, that His passion on the cross was the very act of His redemption. No: The act of His redemption consisted in this, that He accomplished the last judgment which was executed in the spiritual world, and then separated the sheep from the goats, and drove out of heaven those that were united to the dragon. He then formed a new heaven of such as were found worthy, and a new hell of such as were found unworthy, and by degrees reduced all things in each place to order. By these acts He united Himself to the Father, and the Father Himself to Him."

"The Lord is now accomplishing redemption; that is, subduing the hells, and bringing the heavens into order;



which was begun in the year 1757, together with the last judgment, executed at the same time."

What heaps of absurdity are here! only fit to have a place in Orlando Furioso.

Redemption is, "bringing the hells into subjection." When were they not in subjection to the Almighty? "And reducing the heavens into order." When was heaven, the abode of angels, out of order? "God's omnipotence was an effect of his humanity." Blasphemy, joined with consummate nonsense. "He by degrees reduced them to order." "By degrees?" No: A word, a nod from Jehovah was sufficient. "By these acts He united Himself to the Father." Blasphemous nonsense again. "The last judgment was executed in the year 1757." This is the top of all the Barou's discourses!

"It was once granted me to speak to the mother Mary. She appeared in heaven just over my head, and said, she was the mother of the Lord, as He was born of her; but that when He was made God, He put off all the humanity He had from her. And therefore she is unwilling any should call Him her son, because in Him all is divine."

In all this jumble of dissonant notions, there is not one that is supported by any scripture, taken in its plain, obvious meaning. And most of them are as contrary to Scripture as to common sense.

14. But here follows as curious an assertion as any: "Christ redeemed the angels as well as men. The angels could not have stood," (mark the proof!) "unless the Lord had wrought this redemption, because the whole angelic heaven with the church on earth is as a single man, whose internal is the angelic heaven, and whose external is the church. To be more particular: The highest heaven is the head; the second and lowest heaven are the breast and middle region of the body. The church on earth is the loins and the feet; the Lord is the soul of the whole man. Wherefore, unless the Lord had effected redemption, this whole man must have been destroyed; the feet and loins must have perished by the defection of the lowest heaven; the region of the breast, by the defection of the second heaven; and then the head, being left without a body, must of necessity have fallen to decay."

Surely such an argument has not often been seen! But

it is full as good as the conclusion drawn from it ; which is utterly inconsistent with the declaration of St. Paul, " He took not upon Himself the nature of angels " in order to redeem them ; but only that of man, in order to redeem lost mankind.

## OF THE HOLY GHOST.

" The Holy Ghost is not God Himself, but the divine operation of God.

" The Holy Ghost is divine truth. Therefore our Lord Himself is also the Holy Ghost.

" The divine operation, signified by the Holy Ghost, consists in reformation and regeneration ; and, in proportion as these are effected, in renovation, vivification, sanctification, and justification ; and, in proportion as these are effected, in purification from evils, remission of sins, and final salvation."

Whoever is acquainted with the process of the work of God in the soul, must see, with the fullest evidence, that a man talking of it after this rate, is, if not a madman, ignorant of all vital religion.

15. Another grand truth which the Baron flatly denies is, justification by faith ; and he not only denies it, but supposes the belief of this also to exclude all that believe it from salvation.

" Do not you know that Luther has renounced his error with respect to justification by faith ? and, in consequence thereof, is translated into the societies of the blessed ?

" The bottomless pit, mentioned Rev. ix. 2, is in the south-east quarter. Here all those are confined, who adopt the doctrine of justification by faith alone ; and such of them as confirm that doctrine by the word of God are driven forth into a desert, and mixed with Pagans."

However, they need not stay there always ; for the Baron assures us, that on " believing that God is not wind, but a man, they will be joined to heaven."

And we may hope the time is near ; for he informs us, that " some months ago, the Lord called together his twelve Apostles, and sent them forth through the whole spiritual world, as formerly through the natural, with a commission to preach the Gospel."

So if men have not saving faith in this world, they may have it in the world to come.

But indeed there is no room for any justification in the Scripture sense, that is, forgiveness, if, as he vehemently asserts, (after Jacob Behmen,) that God was never angry. "It is extravagant folly," says he, "to teach that God can be angry and punish; nay, it is blasphemy," says this bold man, "to ascribe anger to God." Then the Scripture is full of blasphemy; for it continually ascribes anger to God, both in the Old and the New Testament. Nay, our Lord himself is a blasphemer; for he ascribes anger to God: "His lord was wroth;" yea, wroth to such a degree, that "he delivered him to the tormentors. So likewise shall your heavenly Father do also unto you." (Matt. xviii. 34, 35.) In flat opposition to which the Baron affirms, "God cannot sentence man to damnation!"

To those who affirm, with Jacob Behmen, the Baron, and most of the Mystics, that there is no wrath in God, permit me to recommend the serious consideration of only one more passage of Scripture: "And the Kings of the earth, and the great men, and every bondman, and every freeman, said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of Him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: For the great day of His wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?" (Rev. vi. 15—17.) Here I would ask, (1.) Is not "He that sitteth on the throne" distinct from "the Lamb?" (2.) Is not "the Lamb" Jesus Christ? God and man? (3.) Is no wrath ascribed to Him in these words? Who but a madman can deny it? And if there was no wrath in the Lamb, what were all these afraid of? a shadow that never had any real existence? Would the Baron have told them, "It is extravagant folly to suppose that God can be angry at all?"

16. But it is no wonder that he should utter such bold assertions, seeing he judges himself to be far wiser, not only than the inhabitants of this, but than those of the other, world. "I was amazed," says he, (in one of the visits he favoured them with,) "that people who had resided some time in the spiritual world, should be so ignorant still. Lest they should continue so, I waved my hand as a token for them to listen." He informs you farther, that "some of them fell into fits,"—hysterical or epileptic?

Again: "Being on a time in a conversation with angels, there joined us some spirits lately arrived from the other

world. I related many particulars touching the world of spirits, which were before unknown to them."

Yet again: "Being in the world of spirits, I observed a paved way, quite crowded with spirits. I was informed, it was the way which all pass, when they leave the natural world. I stopped some of them, who did not yet know that they had left it, and questioned them about heaven and hell. They seemed altogether ignorant of them. I was amazed, and said, 'There is a heaven and a hell; and you will know this, when your present stupidity is dispelled. Every spirit, for a few days after death, imagines he is still alive in the world.'" No, not an hour; not a single moment! It is absolutely impossible. "'This is now the case with you.' So saying, the angels dispelled their ignorance: On which they exclaimed, 'O, where are we?' We said, 'You are no longer in the natural world, but in the spiritual.' They cried out, 'Then show us the way to heaven.' We said, 'Follow us.' They did so. The keepers of the gate opened it, and let us all in; but when those who receive strangers examined them, they said instantly, 'Begone; for ye have no conjunction with heaven.' So they departed and hastened back."

17. Permit me now to mention a few of his peculiar sentiments, before I proceed to those relative to the world of spirits.

"These truths are implanted in the understanding, in a place inferior to the soul."

What place is that, in the understanding, which is inferior to the soul?

"Faith enters into man from the soul, into the superior regions of the understanding."

Is then the soul placed between the superior and inferior region of the understanding?

"The human understanding is, as it were, the refining vessel, wherein natural faith is changed into spiritual faith."

I cannot at all comprehend this. It is quite above my understanding.

"The human mind is an organized form, consisting of spiritual substances within, and of natural substances without, and, lastly, of material substances."

Nay, natural substances must be either matter or not matter. But indeed the mind is not matter, but spirit.

“Every man at death casteth off the body, and retains the soul only, with a circumambient accretion, which is derived from the purest parts of nature. But this accretion in those admitted into heaven is undermost, and the spiritual part uppermost; whereas in such as go to hell it is uppermost, and the spiritual part undermost. Hence a man-angel speaks by influence from heaven; a man-devil by influence from hell.”

“The form of God is truly and verily human; for God is true and very man.”

But the Scripture says, “God is not a man.” Which shall I believe? the Bible or the Baron?

This is my grand objection to the Baron’s whole system relative to the invisible world; that it is not only quite unconnected with Scripture, but quite inconsistent with it. It strikes at the very foundation of Scripture. If this stands, the Bible must fall.

18. The account which he gives of the creation is this: “By the light and heat proceeding from the spiritual sun, spiritual atmospheres were created. These being three, three heavens were formed, one for the highest angels, another for angels of the second degree, and the third for the lowest angels. But the spiritual universe could not subsist without a natural universe. Therefore the natural sun was created at the same time; and by means of his light and heat, three natural atmospheres were formed, enclosing the former, as the shell of a nut does the kernel.” So then the spiritual world is enclosed in the natural! I thought it had been “in the midst between heaven and hell!” “By means of these atmospheres the terraqueous globe was formed, to be the abode of man and other animals. So God did not create the universe out of nothing, but by means of the spiritual sun.”

But out of what did he create the spiritual sun? It was created, unless it was eternal. Therefore this, or something else, was created out of nothing, unless some creature was co-eternal with its Creator. So that we must come, at last, to something created out of nothing; and this alone is properly creation. In this sense it was that “God in the beginning created the heavens and the earth.” And what a sublimity is there, with the utmost simplicity, in the Mosaic account of the creation! How widely different

from the odd, whimsical account of the Baron and Jacob Behmen !

19. He informs you farther, "There is a full correspondence between angels and men." Of what kind? Not the wisest mortal can guess, till the Baron unfolds the mystery. "There is not a single society in heaven which does not correspond with some part or member in man. One society in heaven is in the province of the heart or pancreas. Others are in correspondence with the spleen or the stomach, with the eye or the ear, and so on. The angels also know in what district of any part of man they dwell. I have seen a society of angels, consisting of many thousands, which appeared as a single man.

"And God joins all the heavenly societies in one, that they may be as a single man in his sight. Yea, and he joins together the congregations in hell, that they may be as a single infernal form. He separates these from heaven by a great gulf, lest heaven should be an occasion of torment to them. When I had informed an assembly of spirits of these things, which they did not know before, the spirits which wore hats departed, with their hats under their arms. In the spiritual world, the intelligent spirits wear hats; but the stupid wear bonnets, because they are bald, and baldness signifies stupidity."

I really think this needs no comment. He that can receive it, let him receive it.

20. "As angels and spirits are men, (for no angel was ever created such,) so they have divine worship; they have preaching in their temples; they have books and writings; particularly the word of God.

"The word, kept in the temples of the spiritual world, shines like a star of the first magnitude, sometimes like the sun; and from the radiance that encompasses it, there are beautiful rainbows formed about it. Yea, when any verse of it is wrote on paper, and the paper thrown into the air, that paper emits a bright light of the same form with the paper itself. And if any one rubs his hands, face, or clothes against the word, they emit a strong light, as I have often seen; but if any one who is under the influence of falsehood looks at the word, as it lies in the holy repository, it appears to him quite black. If he touches it, it occasions an explosion, attended with a loud noise; and he is thrown

to a corner of the room, where he lies as dead for the space of an hour. If he write any passage of it on a piece of paper, and the paper be thrown up toward heaven, the same explosion follows, and the paper is torn to pieces and vanishes away."

Observe: These things could only be done by the almighty power of God. And can anyone think the all-wise God would work all these miracles for no end?

21. "Every verse communicates with some particular society in heaven; and the whole communicates with the universal heaven. Therefore, as the Lord is God, so also heaven is the word." Exquisite nonsense and self-contradiction!

"There was an ancient word extant in the world, previous to that given to the children of Israel." I cannot believe it. I believe there were no letters in the world, till God wrote the two tables. "This word is preserved in heaven; and also in Great Tartary.

"I have conversed with angels who came from Great Tartary, and informed me, the Tartars have had it time immemorial. They said, likewise, that in this word is contained the 'Book of Jasher,' mentioned Joshua x. 13, and the book called 'The Wars of the Lord,' mentioned Numbers xxi. 14. They told me that they cannot endure any foreigner to come among them; that the spirits from Tartary are separated from others, dwelling in a more eminent expanse; and they do not admit among them any from the Christian world. The cause of this separation is, because they are in possession of another word."

What, and do they envy it to others? And does this envy occasion their being so inhospitable? One may boldly say, this information never came from the angels of God!

#### OF HEAVEN AND HELL.

22. Many of the preceding errors are not small; neither are they of little importance. But of far greater importance are the accounts he gives us "concerning Heaven and Hell." I have now his treatise on this subject lying before me; a few extracts from which I shall lay before the reader:—

"Many learned Christians, when they find themselves,

after death, in a body, in garments, and in houses, are in amazement."

And well they may be; since the Scripture gives us not the least intimation of any such thing.

"I have conversed with all whom I knew in the body, after their departure from it; with some for months, with some a year; and with many others, in all, I suppose, a hundred thousand; many of whom were in heaven, and many in hell."

Perhaps, in a course of years, the gentleman of Argos might see an hundred thousand actors.

"Spirits are men in human form; and still they see, hear, and enjoy their senses."

"When they enter the other world, they retain the same face and voice that they had before; but, after a time, these are changed, according to their predominant affection, into beauty or deformity."

"As soon as they arrive, all who were relations, friends, or acquaintance before, meet and converse together, having a perfect remembrance of each other. But they are soon parted, according to the different lives they had led, and no more see or know one another."

"Arians find no place in heaven, but are gradually divested of the power of thinking right on any subject. At length they either become mutes, or else talk foolishly, moping about with their arms hanging down before them, like paralytics or idiots."

"When a man dies, he is equally in a body as before, nor is there to all appearance the least difference; only it is a spiritual body, freed from all the grossness of matter; so he seems to himself to be as he was in this world, and knows not as yet that he has passed through death. He possesses every outward and inward sense that he possessed before; and he who took delight in studying, reads and writes as before. He leaves nothing behind him but his earthly covering: He takes with him his memory; retaining all that he ever heard, saw, read, learned, or thought in the world, from his infancy to his leaving it."

Who is able to reconcile this either with Scripture, philosophy, or common sense?

"After death, the examining angels inspect a man's face, and commence their inquest, which begins at the fingers of



each hand, and is from thence continued throughout the whole body."

Was ever so odd a thing imagined as this examining spirits from the fingers' ends?

23. "The new comers are tried by good spirits. They are known from turning themselves frequently to certain points of the compass, and from taking the ways that lead thereto, when they are left alone.

"Men eminently holy are taken to heaven immediately after death; and men eminently wicked cast into hell. But most spirits go through three states before they enter either hell or heaven.

"In the first, men do not know that they are dead. This may continue a week, a month, a year. Men and their wives commonly continue together a longer or shorter time, according as they agreed in this world. But if they had lived in variance, they usually break into strife and quarrelling, even unto fighting. Yet they are not totally separated till they enter their second state.

"The second state is their inferior state, in which both the good and bad, being stripped of all disguise and all self-deceit, see and show what spirit they are of.

"The third state is a state of instruction for them to go to heaven.

"But few spirits go to heaven till they have undergone vastation. This is performed in subterraneous places, where some pass through very painful discipline. Here they are divested of all earthly affections, without which admission into heaven would be attended with danger. The region appointed for vastation is under the feet, and surrounded with infernals. Evil spirits are employed in the vastation of the good."

Then the wicked do not cease from troubling, neither are the weary at rest!

How exceeding small is the difference between the Romish and the Mystic purgatory!

24. "Spirits that desire to go to heaven are told that God denies entrance into heaven to no one; and if they desire it, they may be admitted into it, and stay there. Some of them accordingly were admitted; but no sooner did they enter, than they were struck with the influx of the heavenly light, and seized with such a heartfelt agony, that they were

racked with infernal pains, and, being mad with anguish, cast themselves down headlong.

“ Sometimes hypocrites insinuate themselves into heaven. But they presently feel an inward anguish, on which they cast themselves headlong into hell among their fellows.”

But how did they pass the great gulf? Is it filled up since the time of Dives and Lazarus?

25. Let us now consider what account the Baron gives of the inhabitants of heaven :—

“ God sometimes appears in heaven in an angelical form, but commonly as a sun; not horizontally or vertically, but before the face of the angels, in a middle attitude. He appears in two places; in one before the right eye, in the other before the left eye. Before the right, He appears as a perfect sun; before the left, as a bright moon, of the same size with our moon, and surrounded with many lesser moons.”

How agrees this poor, low, childish account, with that grand one of the Apostle’s, “ Who dwelleth in the light which no man can approach; whom no man hath seen, nor can see?” (1 Tim. vi. 16.) No, nor men-angels, as the Baron calls them.

“ There is not an angel in heaven that was created such, nor a devil that was once a good angel; but all the angels and all the devils were formerly men upon earth.”

This grand position of the Baron, which runs through all his Works, that all angels and devils were once men, without which his whole hypothesis falls to the ground, is palpably contrary to Scripture. We read in the thirty-eighth chapter of Job, “ When I laid the foundations of the earth, the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy.” But man was not yet created. Therefore, these sons of God were not, nor ever had been, men.

On the other hand, we read, 2 Cor. xi. 3, “ The serpent,” that is, the devil, “ beguiled Eve through his subtilty.” But this devil could not have been a man; for Abel, the first man that died, was not yet born.

“ The angels are of both sexes, and there is marriage in heaven as well as on earth. Their beatitudes of spiritual conjugal love may be reckoned up to many thousands.”

How is this consistent with our Lord’s words, “ In the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in

marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven?" (Matt. xxii. 30.)

"The angels are not always in the same state, with regard to love and wisdom: Sometimes their love is intense; sometimes not. When it is lowest, they may be said to be in the shade, and in the cold, as their brightness is obscured, and their state unjoyous. They are eclipsed and in a joyless state; otherwise, they would be carried away by self-love."

What! Can the angels in heaven be "carried away by self-love?" Then they may drop into hell.

"The angels of the highest heaven are naked, because they are in perfect innocence." (I thought all the angels had been in perfect innocence.) "The next in flame-coloured robes, the lower in white.

"The angels of an inferior heaven cannot converse with those of the superior; neither can they see them when they look up, their heaven being veiled, as it were, with a dark mist: Nor can the superior angels converse with them, without being deprived of their wisdom.

"Divine influx passes from God to man through his forehead; from the lower angels, all round from his forehead and temples; from the highest angels, through the back part of his head."

26. It would be tedious to point out the particular oddities and absurdities in the preceding account. It may suffice to remark in general, that it contains nothing sublime, nothing worthy the dignity of the subject. Most of the images are low, and mean, and earthly, not raising, but sinking, the mind of the reader; representing the very angels of God in such a light, as might move us, not to worship, but despise them. And there is a grossness and coarseness in his whole description of the invisible world, which I am afraid will exceedingly tend to confirm rational infidels in a total disbelief of it.

27. But the most dangerous part of all his writings I take to be the account which he gives of hell. It directly tends to familiarize it to unholy men, to remove all their terror, and to make them consider it, not as a place of torment, but a very tolerable habitation.

"In hell," says he, "there appear bats and owls, and likewise wolves, tigers, rats, and mice; and these grow thorns and thistles, briars and brambles. But these some-

times disappear; and then nothing is to be seen but heaps of stones, and fens full of croaking frogs."

Yes, much more is to be seen, in his "Treatise of Heaven and Hell." Hear his own words:—

"I was allowed to look into the hells: There are three hells, as well as three heavens: Some of them appeared like caverns in rocks, first proceeding far horizontally, then descending, either perpendicularly or by windings, to a great depth. Some resembled the dens of wild beasts; others, the subterraneous works in mines. Most of them are of three degrees of descent; the uppermost dark, the lowest of a fiery appearance. In some hells appear, as it were, ruins of houses, in which infernal spirits skulk. In the milder hells are a kind of rude cottages; in some places like a city with streets and lanes, inhabited by infernal spirits, that live together in hatred, quarrellings, and fighting even to blood, while in the streets thefts and robberies are committed. There are also gloomy woods in which the spirits wander like wild beasts; and caves, into which some, when pursued by others, fly for refuge. Moreover, there are sandy deserts, with ragged rocks and scattered cottages; and to these deserts the worst spirits are at last driven."

28. But how does this agree with what we read in the Scripture concerning hell-fire?

The Baron answers: "Hell-fire is not a material fire, but it is the love of self and the world, together with all the inordinate passions and evil concupiscences springing therefrom. They who are in hell have no sensation of heat or burning, but only such kind of heat as inflames their evil passions. But this heat is turned into intense cold, on any influx of heat from heaven. At such times, the infernals are seized with a convulsive shivering, like people in an ague-fit."

It was said, "Evil spirits cast themselves into hell of their own accord." How does this come to pass? "There exhale from hell into the world of spirits certain fetid vapours, which evil spirits are greedily fond of. For as was the sin which each was fond of in this life, such is the stink of which he is fond in the next. Thus they that had perverted divine truths, delight in urinous smells; misers, in such smells as proceed from swine and putrefying flesh; while such as lived in sensual pleasures, find their gratification in ordure; and hence we may perceive whence melancholy and lowness of

spirits proceed. Those spirits that delight in things indigested and putrid, such as meats corrupted in the stomach, hold their confabulations in such sinks of uncleanness in man as are suitable to their impure affections. These spirits are near the stomach; some higher, some lower, and occasion uneasiness of mind; but this anguish, those who know no better, ascribe to disorders of the stomach or bowels."

But to return: "From every particular hell, exhale effluvia from the qualities of the spirits therein. These striking the senses of those that are of similar affections, excite in them the most grateful perceptions. They presently turn to the quarter whence those effluvia rise, and hasten to be there. On their first arrival, they are received with a show of kindness; but it lasts only a few hours; then they are vexed all manner of ways. And these miseries are called hell-fire.

"Gnashing of teeth means, the various disputes and wranglings of such as are in error."

How egregiously trifling is this account! So puerile, so far beneath the importance of the subject, that one who did not know the character of the writer, might naturally imagine he was turning it into burlesque.

29. But the masterpiece of all he has wrote upon the head, you have in the following account, which I transcribe at large, that the pious reader may know how to judge of this highly-illuminated author:—

"The state of those who enter the other world is as follows:—1. As soon as they die, they do not know for some days but that they are living in the former world." This is a favourite sentiment of the Baron; but how palpably absurd! "2. They then see they are in the world of spirits, which is between heaven and hell." No: This will never agree with our Lord's words, "To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise:" Neither with those, "The rich man also died; and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torment." Here was no interval; but as soon as ever he had left the earth, he was lifting up his eyes in hell! "3. The new spirit is led about to various societies, good and bad, and examined how he is affected by one or the other. 4. If he is affected with good, he is introduced to good ones of various kinds, till he comes to a society corresponding with his own natural affection. He there puts off the natural, and puts on the spiritual, affection; and then is taken up into heaven." How utterly

contrary is this roundabout way, to the plain words of Scripture, "The poor man died, and was carried of angels into Abraham's bosom!" See, the instant the soul left the body, it was lodged in the paradise of God. "5. They who have no affection to good are introduced to the evil societies of various kinds, till they come to one that corresponds with their evil affections." O no! The devil and his angels will make shorter work with those that know not God. "6. Such as formerly enjoyed power and authority are made rulers over societies; but as they knew not how to use their authority, after a few days they are degraded from it. I have seen such spirits, when they were removed from one society to another, and invested with power in each; yet, after a short time, degraded in all. 7. After frequent degradations they do not care to engage in any other public office, but retire and sit down in sadness, till they are removed into a desert, where there are cottages for their habitations. There work is given them to do; and in proportion as they do it, they receive food; but if they do it not, they are kept fasting, till hunger forces them to work. Food in the spiritual world is like the various kinds of food in our world; and it is given from heaven by the Lord to every one, according to the services he performs; for to him who does no service, no food is given." Did ever mortal before so practise the art of sinking? give so poor, low, gross an account of the other world? But he proceeds: "8. After some time, they are disgusted with all employment; and then they go out of their cottages, and sit down in solitude and indolence: But as no food is given them, they grow hungry, and think of nothing but how they may get something to eat. Some of whom they ask alms, say, 'Come with us, and we will give you work and meat too.'" Can anyone believe this,—that spirits suffer hunger, and are obliged to go a-begging? "9. They work awhile; but then leave their work, and betake themselves to company, till their masters turn them off. 10. On their dismissal, they see a path that leads to a sort of cavern. The door is opened, and they enter in, and ask whether any food is to be had there. Being answered, 'There is,' they ask leave to stay there, and leave is given them. Then they are brought into the cavern, and the door is shut after them. The governor of the cavern comes, and says, 'Ye are never to leave this place more. Behold your companions. They all

work hard; and, in proportion to their work, they receive food from heaven.' Their companions then tell them, 'Our governor knows for what work every one is best suited. He enjoins it daily; and when we have finished our work, we receive our food.'" O how much more comfortable is the condition of these spirits in hell, than that of the galley-slaves at Marseilles, or the Indians in the mines of Potosi! "'But if we will not finish our work, we receive neither food nor clothes.'" Clothes! I never knew before that we should want any in the other world. "If any does mischief to another, he is thrown into a corner of the cavern, upon a couch of cursed dust." Does he mean of hot ashes? "Here he is miserably tormented, till the governor sees he repents; and then he is taken off, and ordered again to his work." Was ever anything more curious, or more encouraging to men that resolve to live and die in their sins? You see, there is place for repentance even in hell! If he repent of his sins even there, though he may be tormented a while, yet the devil, seeing him penitent, will have mercy upon him! But here is more comfort still: "Everyone in hell is at liberty to walk, converse, and to sleep, when he has done his work. He is then"—surely such a thought never entered into the heart of a Christian before!—"He is then led into the inner part of the cavern, where there are harlots, and he is permitted to take one for himself." Amazing! So the Christian Koran exceeds even the Mahometan! Mahomet allowed such to be in paradise; but he never thought of placing them in hell! The Baron should have concluded here; for nothing can exceed this. But he adds: "Hell consists of such caverns, which are nothing but eternal work-houses. The work of those who were unjust judges is to prepare vermilion, and to mix it up into a paint, to paint the faces of harlots. The most abandoned spirits are driven into a wilderness, and compelled to carry burdens."

So here is the uttermost punishment that is allotted for the worst of all the damned spirits!

30. I will add but one more of the Baron's dreams, to illustrate one of the preceding: "Satan was once permitted to ascend out of hell with a woman to my house. She was of the tribe of Sirens, who can assume all figures, and all habits of beauty and ornament. All such are harlots in the world of spirits. I asked Satan if the woman was his

wife. He answered, 'Neither I, nor any in our society, have wives: She is my harlot.' She then inspired him with wanton lust, and he kissed her and cried, 'Ah, my Adonis!' I said, 'What do thou and thy companions think of God?' He said, 'God, heaven, angels, and the like, are all empty words.' I answered, 'O Satan, thou hast lost thy understanding! Recollect that thou hast lived in another world!' Immediately his recollection returned, and he saw his error. But the cloud soon returned upon his understanding, and he was just the same as before."

31. Having now taken a sufficient view of the Baron's reveries, let us turn to the oracles of God. What saith the Scripture? What account does God himself give of the state of wicked men after death? Not to multiply texts, I will cite a very few out of many that might be produced: "Tophet is ordained of old: He hath made it deep and large:" (God himself, not man:) "The pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the Lord, as a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it." (Isaiah xxx. 33.) "If thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: It is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire; where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched." (Mark ix. 47, 48.) "Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels." (Matt. xxv. 41.) "Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of His power." (2 Thess. i. 9.) And in what condition are those that are punished with this everlasting destruction? Do they eat, and drink, and wear apparel, and choose themselves harlots, and walk, and enjoy sweet sleep? Nothing less. If the word of God is true, if "the Scripture cannot be broken," the wicked, one and all, "are cast into a lake of fire burning with brimstone." (Rev. xix. 20.) Yea, "whosoever is not found written in the book of life, will be cast into the lake of fire." (xx. 15.) But they will not eat, or drink, or converse, or dally with women; neither will they sleep there. For "they have no rest, day nor night; but the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever!"

32. Who illuminated either Jacob Behmen, or Baron Swedenborg, flatly to contradict these things? It could not be the God of the holy Prophets; for He is always consist-



ent with himself. Certainly it was the spirit of darkness. And indeed "the light which was in them was darkness," while they laboured to kill the never-dying worm, and to put out the unquenchable fire! And with what face can any that profess to believe the Bible, give any countenance to these dreamers? that filthy dreamer, in particular, who takes care to provide harlots, instead of fire and brimstone, for the devils and damned spirits in hell! O my brethren, let none of you that fear God recommend such a writer any more! much less labour to make the deadly poison palatable, by sweetening it with all care! All his folly and nonsense we may excuse; but not his making God a liar; not his contradicting, in so open and flagrant a manner, the whole oracles of God! True, his tales are often exceeding lively, and as entertaining as the tales of the fairies: But I dare not give up my Bible for them; and I must give up one or the other. If the preceding extracts are from God, then the Bible is only a fable: But if "all Scriptures are given by inspiration of God," then let these dreams sink into the pit from whence they came.

WAKEFIELD,  
May 9, 1782.

JOHN WESLEY.

## REMARKS

ON

THE COUNT DE BUFFON'S "NATURAL HISTORY."

[PRINTED IN THE YEAR 1782.]

Malebranche maintains an odd conceit  
As ever enter'd Frenchman's pate.

PRIOR.

BUT is not the Count de Buffon's first conceit full as odd? —that the earth (and so every other planet) is only a slice of the sun, cut off from it by the stroke of a comet. (Page

64.) He that would take pains to confute this wild theory, must have little to do.

In consequence of this, he supposes all the inner part of the earth to be glass, and strains every natural phenomenon to support his hypothesis. He is certainly a man of a most lively imagination: Pity that his judgment is not equal to it.

Many of his thoughts are quite singular. So: "The upper stratum of the earth, from which all animals and vegetables derive their growth and nourishment, is nothing but a composition of the decayed particles of animal and vegetable bodies." (Vol. i., page 12.) Impossible! Was it composed of decayed animals and vegetables before any animal or vegetable had decayed?

"The earth was covered with the sea for many ages, and thereby the strata therein were formed." (Page 15.) I believe all the upper strata were formed by the deluge; though no man can tell how. Yet I allow, the sea has covered many countries, which are now far distant from it. And I suppose some mountains were then formed by the flux and reflux of it, in the manner he describes.

"The vapours exhaled from the earth deposit mud, of which, mixed with particles of animal and vegetable substances, or rather with particles of stone and sand, the upper stratum of the earth is composed." (Page 161.)

How is this consistent with what was said before?—This upper stratum of the earth is "nothing but a composition of the decayed particles of animals and vegetables." (Page 12.) And how is the following sentence consistent with it?—"Vegetables derive more of their substance from the air and from water than from the earth." (Page 168.)

"All stones were originally a soft paste." (Page 173.) It is probable that most stones were.

"Clay and sand are substances of the same kind." (Page 184.) I doubt this cannot be proved.

"Glass is the true elementary earth; and all mixed bodies are only glass in disguise." (*Ibid.*) Perfectly new! Believe it who can.

"If flints remain long exposed to the air, and unmoved, their upper surface is always white." (Page 185.) "Expose to the air the hardest and blackest flint, and in less than a year the colour of its surface will be changed, and it will

gradually lose its hardness." Not so. The flints of which most of the churches in Norwich are built, have lost nothing of their hardness; and the surface, though exposed to the air, has not changed colour at all, in two or three hundred years.

"Crystals are an exudation of flints." (Page 199.) I doubt it.

"Red porphyry is composed of the prickles of the sea-hedgehog. At Ficin, in Burgundy, there is a red stone that is entirely composed of them, and there is a considerable stratum of it." (Page 213.)

"The number of sea-shells is so great in every part of the earth, it is absolutely impossible that all the fish which inhabited those shells should live at the same time." (Page 221.) "Neither have we any proof that the earth was entirely dissolved at the time of the deluge." (Page 222.)

I believe, therefore, that some of those shells were deposited by the deluge; but most of them in succeeding ages.

"Some mountains in Switzerland exceed the highest of the Pyrenees three thousand two hundred yards. Many mountains in Asia are higher than any in Europe. Atlas in Afric is at least as high as those of Asia." (Page 231.)

Nay, Dr. Shaw, who measured it, informs us, that the height of it is only six hundred yards! Does this exceed the Pyrenees, or mountains in Switzerland? It is not half the height of Snowdon-Hill.

"Mountains do not furnish springs, except at their bottom." (Page 232.) They do; often on their sides, sometimes at the very top; especially when a higher mountain is near.

"My theory rests on four facts: 1. That the earth, to a considerable depth, consists of parallel strata, which were once soft." I think this is highly probable. "2. That the sea did for many ages cover the whole earth." I think this is highly improbable; though it has doubtless covered many parts of it for some time. "3. That the tides, and other motions of the waters, have produced many inequalities in the bottom of the sea." This is unquestionable. "4. That the figure and corresponding angles of the mountains have risen from the same cause." (Page 243.) Probably this is true of some mountains, not of all.

“The surface of rivers from bank to bank is not level. When a river swells suddenly, the middle of it is higher than the sides, sometimes two or three feet. But near the mouth, the middle is lower than the sides.” This is a curious observation.

“There are often currents of air, directly contrary to each other, one above the other. But this never lasts long; for its general cause is, the resistance of some large cloud, which reflects the wind in a direction contrary to its natural course, but is soon dissipated.” (Page 376.) A just solution of that odd phenomenon.

“In Cerem, an island near Amboyne, it is winter in the north part, while it is summer in the south. And the interval between these two seasons is not above three or four leagues.” (Page 388.)

“In Egypt a south wind prevails in summer, which is so hot as to stop respiration. It prevails still more terribly along the Persic Gulf, suffocating all persons who fall within its vortex.” (Page 389.) The same blows in summer along the Red Sea.

“Whirlpools are occasioned by contrary currents of water, and whirlwinds by contrary currents of air.” (Page 397.)

“Tufa is an imperfect substance, between stone and earth, and deriving its origin from both, by the intervention of rain-water.”

“Of the changes of land into sea, and of sea into land. I believe these changes have been very frequent.” (Page 482.)

The sum is, 1. “The whole of what is now dry land was once covered by the sea. 2. The tides, and other movements of the sea, perpetually detach, from the coasts and from the bottom of the sea, shells and matter of every sort. And these are deposited in other places in the form of sediments, and give rise to the horizontal strata there. 3. Most of the inequalities on the surface of the globe have arisen from the motions of the waters of the sea; and most mountains were formed by the successive accumulation of these sediments. 4. The currents which followed the direction of these inequalities, afterward bestowed on them their present figure, that is, their corresponding angles. 5. Most of the matter detached from the coasts, or the bottom of the sea, were deposited in the form of a fine impalpable powder,” (this I doubt,) “which entirely filled

the cavities of shells. 6. The horizontal strata, which have been formed by these accumulations, which were at first soft, hardened as they dried; and the perpendicular fissures arose from their drying. 7. The surface of the earth has been disfigured by many vicissitudes;—rain, frost, rivers, winds, subterraneous fires, earthquakes, inundations, whereby the sea has alternately changed places with the dry land, especially in the first ages after the creation.”

Vol. ii. The Count's theory of the earth is wild and whimsical enough, but it is innocent. I cannot say so much for his theory of generation, which I take to be utterly inconsistent both with reason and Scripture. To prepare the way for it, he first endeavours to confound the distinction between animals and vegetables; between which all men but himself know there is an essential, unalterable difference; every animal having a degree of self-motion and sensation; neither of which any vegetable has. Then he substitutes for the plain word “generation” a quaint word of his own, “reproduction,” in order to level man not only with the beasts that perish, but with nettles or onions.

Vol. ii., p. 15: He lays the foundation of his wonderful theory: “The Creator” (I exceedingly doubt whether he believes there is any such being) “has put no fixed limits between animals and vegetables.” 2. “The production of an animal requires a smaller exertion of nature than the producing a vegetable, or rather no exertion at all.” Marvellous indeed! 3. “Animation or life is a property belonging to all matter.” And is not thought too?

“Every animal or vegetable contains in every part of it a germ or embryo of the same species, which may be expanded into a whole of the same kind with that of which it is a part.” (Page 16.)

This is the nature of a polypus; but who can show that there is any other such animal in the world? I deny that a worm is such. It is not true that every part of this contains a whole. Show me, who can, any animal but a polypus, which has “a power of multiplying by all its parts.” Till then, the foundation of this whole theory totters. Till then we cannot believe that “there exists in nature an infinity of organic, living particles, of the same substance with organized beings:” (Page 18:) A position that directly leads to Atheism. So does his denial of any final causes in the

world: (Page 69:) This is Atheism barefaced. For if God did not create all things for determinate ends, he did not create them at all.

All writers upon generation suppose either spermatie worms or eggs. But both of these systems he thinks impossible. His grand objection is: "How inconceivably minute must those animalcula have been when in the loins of the first man!" This may confound our imagination, but is no argument at all, unless he could confute that well-known demonstration of Dr. Keill, that "any given particle of matter may be so extended as to fill any given space," (suppose a million times larger than that occupied by the solar system,) "and yet the pores of it shall not exceed any given magnitude." Would not any man of sense, who has read and considered this, see the weakness of Buffon's main argument?

But, says he, "The pre-existent germs in the first man are not inanimate embryos, included within each other, but real animals." (Page 137.) Yes, according to his hypothesis, but not according to ours. As to difficulties in accounting for the manner of generation, they will not weigh a straw with a man of reflection. For how are we obliged to account for it at all? Let it lie among the inscrutable secrets of our Creator.

All that I learn from his experiments is, to doubt whether the supposed seminal animalcula are alive at all; and indeed to doubt concerning the whole tribe of microscopic animalcula whether there be any real life in them. I rather think that "these moving bodies are not real animals, as they exist in the seminal fluids of both sexes, and in the flesh of all animals, and in the seeds of all plants." (Page 212.)

"It is then apparent that all parts of animals and of vegetables are composed of living organic particles." (Page 214.) Not at all. It is no more apparent that they are living, than that they are rational.

At page 330 the Count totally denies that children are marked in consequence of their mothers' longing. Is this affectation or ignorance? But he aims at accounting for it: "The marks of fruits are always yellow, red, or black." No. My own mother longed for mulberries. In consequence of this, my eldest brother had all his life a mulberry on his neck. And both the size and colour varied just like those

of a real mulberry. Every spring it was small and white; it then grew larger, exactly as real mulberries do, being greenish, then red, then a deep purple, as large and of as deep a purple as any mulberry on the tree.

"All animals but man are totally void of reason." (Page 367.) You may as well say, they are totally deprived of sight. Only put the plain word understanding for the equivocal word reason; and can you say, They are all totally void of understanding? No man dares affirm it.

"Smiles and tears are peculiar to the human species." (Page 376.) No; stags, and even oxen, shed tears. An ox will weep much, if separated from his yoke-fellow.

"According to Simpson's tables, above a fourth part of children die in the first year; more than a third in two years; and at least one half in the first three years.

"May we be enabled to write the history of the critical period, without exciting any ideas but what are strictly philosophical; with that philosophical apathy which annihilates every loose desire." (Page 401.)

And after this grave declaration, he will enlarge upon virginity, impotence, castration, infibulation, (never heard of before in England,) in such a manner as a modest Heathen or Mahometan would be ashamed of!

It was at first my design to go through the whole of the Count's work; but I dare not spend my time so idly. Although the Edinburgh translator has shortened it much, it is still intolerably long and tedious; and the author's fancy so vastly outruns his judgment, that he asserts a hundred palpable falsehoods. But what shocks a serious reader most is, his obscenity and his Atheism. The former glares even where one would least expect it: In describing, for instance, a horse and a mule. I wonder how he missed a similar piece of natural history relating to that noble animal, a sow. As to his Atheism, I was for some time in doubt; as he often names God to grace his page. But I can doubt no longer: As he openly professes and defends materialism, and every materialist is an Atheist, I cannot set him down for any other. But, were more proof wanting, that curious sentence, vol. iii., page 505, is plain enough:—"In most beings, there are fewer useful or necessary parts than those which are useless or redundant. But as we wish to refer everything to a certain end, when parts have no apparent

uses, we either suppose that their uses are concealed from us, or invent relations which have no existence." He that asserts this, must totally deny a wise Creator: Consequently, he must either believe that chance created the world, or that it existed from eternity. In either case, he denies the being of a God. I cannot, therefore, but place the Count de Buffon as far beneath Voltaire, Rousseau, and Hume, (all of whom acknowledge the being of a God,) in religion as in understanding.

---

## REMARKS

UPON

MR. LOCKE'S "ESSAY ON HUMAN UNDERSTANDING."

---

PEMBROKE, *April 28, 1781.*

FOR some days I have employed myself on the road in reading Mr. Locke's "Essay on Human Understanding:" And I do not now wonder at its having gone through so many editions in so short a time. For what comparison is there between this deep, solid, weighty treatise, and the lively, glittering trifle of Baron Montesquieu? As much as between tinsel and gold; between glass-beads and diamonds. A deep fear of God, and reverence for his word, are discernible throughout the whole: And though there are some mistakes, yet these are abundantly compensated by many curious and useful reflections. I think, therefore, a little time will be well employed in pointing out those little mistakes, and in extracting some of the most useful passages of that excellent treatise.\*

I think that point, "that we have no innate principles," is abundantly proved, and cleared from all objections that have any shadow of strength. And it was highly needful to prove the point at large, as all that follows rests on this foundation; and as it was at that time an utter paradox both in the philosophical and the religious world.

\* The "passages" here referred to were inserted by Mr. Wesley in the fifth, sixth, and seventh volumes of the *Arminian Magazine*.—EDIT. by Google



That all our ideas come from sensation or reflection, is fully proved in the Second Book. And why should any one be angry at his using the word "idea" for "whatever is the object of the mind in thinking?" Although, it is true, it is his favourite word, which he often thrusts in not so properly.

That "Socrates asleep and Socrates awake is not the same person," (Book II., chap. i., sec. 11,) I can by no means allow. This odd assertion depends upon another, which will be considered by and by.

The operations of the mind are more accurately divided by Aristotle than by Mr. Locke. They are three, and no more: Simple apprehension, judgment, and discourse. It seems Mr. Locke only gives a new name to simple apprehension, terming it perception. Of judgment and reason, he speaks in the Fourth Book. Discerning, comparing, compounding, abstracting, are species of judgment. Retention, or memory, refers to them all.

Complex ideas are most awkwardly divided (I fear, chiefly through affectation of novelty) into modes, substances, and relations. (Chap. xii.) How much clearer is the vulgar division of beings into the ten classes called "predicaments;" or into the two,—substances and accidents! If the word "mode" has any determinate meaning, it is only another term for accidents. And are not relations one species of accidents? So that Mr. Locke's discovery comes to this,—Complex ideas are either modes, substances, or a particular sort of modes!

When accidents are termed *modus entis* or *entium*, in Latin, the phrase seems proper enough. But why any man should squeeze it into the English tongue, I know not; since the old word "accidents" is full as good: And we may retain it without any danger of "running into the notion, that accidents are a sort of real beings."

"What is it determines our will with regard to our actions? Some uneasiness a man is under." (Chap. xxi., sec. 31.) Not always. Pleasure determines it as often as pain. But "desire is uneasiness." It is not: We desire to enjoy pleasure as much as to avoid pain. But desire differs *toto genere*, both from one and the other. Therefore, all that follows, about pain alone determining the will, is wrong from end to end.

“If it be asked, What is it moves desire? I answer, Happiness, and that alone.” (Chap. xxi., sec. 41.) How flatly does that contradict all that went before, where it is said, “Uneasiness alone causes desire!”

“Section 8.—An animal is a living organized body; and, consequently, the same animal, as we have observed, is the same continued life communicated to different particles of matter, as they happen successively to be united to that organized living body. And whatever is said of other definitions, ingenuous observation puts it past doubt, that the idea in our minds, of which the sound ‘man’ in our mouths is the sign, is nothing else but of an animal of such a certain form; since I think I may be confident, that whoever should see a creature of his own shape and make, though it had no more reason than even a cat or a parrot, would call him still a man; or whoever should hear a cat or a parrot discourse, reason, and philosophize, would call or think it nothing but a cat or a parrot; and say the one was a dull, irrational man, and the other a very intelligent, rational parrot. A relation we have, in an author of great note,\* is sufficient to countenance the supposition of a rational parrot. His words are:—

“‘I had a mind to know from Prince Maurice’s own mouth, the account of a common, but much credited, story, that I had heard so often from many others, of an old parrot he had in Brazil, during his government there, that spoke, and asked and answered common questions, like a reasonable creature; so that those of his train there generally concluded it to be witchery or possession; and one of his Chaplains, who lived long afterwards in Holland, would never from that time endure a parrot, but said, they all had a devil in them. I had heard many particulars of this story, and assevered by people hard to be discredited, which made me ask Prince Maurice what there was of it. He said, with his usual plainness and dryness in talk, there was something true, but a great deal false, of what had been reported. I desired to know of him, what there was of the first. He told me short and coldly, that he had heard of such an old parrot when he came to Brazil; and though he believed nothing of it, and it was a good way off, yet he had so much curiosity as to send for it; that it was a very great

and a very old one; and when it came first into the room where the Prince was, with a great many Dutchmen about him, it said presently, *What a company of white men are here!* They asked it what he thought that man was, pointing at the Prince. It answered, *Some General or other.* When they brought it close to him, he asked it, *D'où venez vous?* It answered, *De Marinnan.* The Prince, *A qui estes-vous?* The parrot, *A un Portugais.* Prince, *Que fais-tu là?* Parrot, *Je garde les poules.* The Prince laughed, and said, *Vous gardez les poules?* The parrot answered, *Ouy, moy, et je sçay bien faire;*\* and made the chuck four or five times that people use to make to chickens, when they call them. I set down the words of this worthy dialogue in French, just as Prince Maurice said them to me. I asked him in what language the parrot spoke; and he said, in Brazilian. I asked whether he understood Brazilian: He said, No; but he had taken care to have two interpreters by him, the one a Dutchman that spoke Brazilian, and the other a Brazilian that spoke Dutch; that he asked them separately and privately, and both of them agreed in telling him just the same thing that the parrot said. I could not but tell this odd story, because it is so much out of the way, and from the first hand, and what may pass for a good one; for I dare say this Prince, at least, believed himself in all he told me, having ever passed for a very honest and pious man. I leave it to naturalists to reason, and to other men to believe, as they please upon it."

According to the foregoing account it is evident, Mr. Locke thinks, "consciousness makes personal identity;" that is, knowing I am the same person, makes me the same person. Was ever a more palpable absurdity? Does knowing I exist, make me exist? No; I am before I know I am; and I am the same, before I can possibly know I am the same. Observe, "before" here refers to the order of thinking, not to the order of time.

"Person," says he, "is a thinking intelligent being." Is

\* The dialogue between the Prince and the parrot may be thus rendered into English:—Prince.—"Whence come ye?" Parrot.—"From Marinnan." Prince.—"To whom do you belong?" Parrot.—"To a Portuguese." Prince.—"What do you there?" Parrot.—"I look after the chickens." The Prince laughed, and said, "You look after the chickens?" The parrot answered, and said, "Yes, I; and I know well enough how to do it."—EDIT.

it so? Then the same soul is the same person; and that whether it be conscious of being the same or not; and whether it be joined to this or that body. But to constitute the same man, there must be the same body as well as the same soul. But how can this be, seeing the body is changing every moment? That I deny. I deny that the human body changes at all, from the cradle to the grave. By the body I understand that system of vessels which we bring with us into the world, which from that moment is distended more and more in every part, by the adhesion of earthly particles, which circulate through, not only the veins and arteries, but every fibre of its frame. Now this does not, cannot change at all: It neither increases nor diminishes. The blood is in a continual flux; it is not the same for two moments together. But then flesh and blood is not the body; it is only the body's temporary clothing. If this be totally changed every seven years, the body is the same. And, therefore, it is the same man, although he has put on another coat.

Let none then seek a knot in a bulrush. The case is plain, unless it be puzzled by art. I call Cato the same person all his life, because he has the same soul. I call him the same man, because he has the same body too, which he brought into the world.

But what blessed work will Mr. Locke's hypothesis make! If there be no personal identity without consciousness, then Cato is not the same person he was at two months old; for he has no consciousness at all of what he was then. Nay, I have no more consciousness of what I was or did at two years old, than of what Julius Cæsar did. But am I not the same person I was then?

Again: If, consciousness ceasing, identity ceases, a draught of Lethe would change a man into another person. Yea, or if a fever wiped what was past out of the memory, he would not be the same person, nor consequently accountable either to God or man for anything that he, that is, another person, had done before.

There may, therefore, be identity without consciousness. Consequently, although the latter usually accompanies the former, yet it is not the same thing. Yea, and consciousness may be without identity. I know the fact. There is a species of madness, which makes a man conscious of

things he never did, and of words he never spoke. Is he therefore accountable for them? So he thinks; but God's thoughts are not as his thoughts.

Upon the whole, if you take the word "person" for a thinking intelligent being, it is evident, the same soul, conscious or unconscious, is the same person. But if you take it for the same soul, animating the same human body, (in which sense I have always taken it, and I believe every one else that has not been confounded by metaphysical subtlety,) then you and I and every man living is the same person from the cradle to the grave. And God will accordingly reward every man, or every person, (equivalent words,) according to his own works; and that whether he be conscious of them or no; this will make no manner of difference. What every individual man or person sows here, he will reap in eternity.

In reading over the second volume of Mr. Locke's *Essay*, I was much disappointed: It is by no means equal to the first. The more I considered it, the more convinced I was, 1. That his grand design was, (vain design!) to drive Aristotle's *Logic* out of the world, which he hated cordially, but never understood: I suppose, because he had an unskilful master, and read bad books upon the subject. 2. That he had not a clear apprehension. Hence he had few clear ideas; (though he talks of them so much;) and hence so many confused, inadequate definitions. I wonder none of his opponents hit this blot.

I have not time to point out half the mistakes in this volume. I can only make a few cursory strictures.

All along he dotes upon ideas, and frequently puzzles the cause by dragging in the word needlessly and improperly.

Page 3. "To what is it that names, in the use of language, are immediately applied?" Did he know what he meant? If he did, how crude and indistinct is the expression!

Page 4. All this chapter Dean Aldrich comprises in three lines: *Vox est signum rei vel conceptus ex instituto vicarium: Primò declarat conceptum; deinde supponit pro re.* "A word is a sign purposely put for a conception or thing: It first expresses your thought; then the thing you think of."

Page 11. Here his hatred of logic breaks out: "Defining

by genus and difference may be the shortest way, yet I doubt whether it be the best." Then what is the best? No man living can tell a better than this; only if we do not know the difference, we must assign the properties.

Page 21. "The disputes of the schools." I doubt whether Mr. Locke had ever a clear idea of that term. What does he mean by them in, "O ye schoolmen!" But who are they? all the commentators upon Aristotle in the fifteenth and sixteenth century? Did he read them all? Did he ever read one of them through? I doubt, not. Then he should not rail at he knew not what.

Page 22. A man need only read the first chapter of Genesis, to be convinced that God made every species of animals "after its kind;" giving a peculiar essence to each, whether we know that real essence or no.

Page 26. I wish he had understood the three rules of definition, and he would have wrote far more intelligibly than he did.

"The jargon of the schools." (*Ibid.*) What does that term mean? I doubt he had no clear idea of this.

Page 37. "Species and their essences have no real existence in things." Moses says otherwise; and so does Mr. Locke, page 44: "By real essence, I mean that real constitution of anything which is the foundation of all its properties. But this we do not know." True; but it exists. Yet this he denies again, page 50, and page 53, where he says, "Species are not distinguished by generation." Certainly they are: A man generates a man; a dog, a dog; a crow, a crow; and so in other both plants and animals. If there are any exceptions, (as in monsters,) this does not vacate the general rule.

Page 63. "Nature makes many things which agree in their inward frame and constitution: But it is not this real essence that distinguishes them into species." Surely it is: Yet he strangely adds, "The boundaries of the species are made by man." No; by the almighty Creator.

"Each abstract idea makes a distinct species." (*Ibid.*) What! Does my idea of them make a horse, a cow, and a dog, three distinct species? Would not these species be equally distinct, if I had no idea of them at all?

Page 71. The chapter about particles I do not understand; nor does Mr. Locke seem to understand himself

He aims at something, but makes nothing out. *Operosee nihil agit.*

Page 82. "The simple ideas that co-exist in substances." No: Ideas exist only in the mind.

Page 83. "The complex ideas of substances are very different on different men." What then? They are not so different but that all men know a horse from a cow, a crow from a pigeon, and iron from gold.

Page 98. "Logic has much contributed to the obscurity of language." The abuse of logic has; but the true use of it is the noblest means under heaven to prevent or cure the obscurity of language. To divide simple terms according to the logical rules of division, and then to define each member of the division according to the three rules of definition, does all that human art can do, in order to our having a clear and distinct idea of every word we use. Had Mr. Locke done this, what abundance of obscurity and confusion would have been prevented!

Page 99. "Though the word 'man' signifies nothing but a complete idea of properties united in a substance; yet we commonly suppose it to stand for a thing having a real essence on which those properties depend." I do suppose it; and so does everyone that has common sense.

Page 100. "It is a false supposition, that there are certain precise essences by which things are distinguished into species." It is a most true supposition. The Scripture asserts it; and all experience agrees thereto.

Page 140. "Possibly we shall never be able to know whether any mere material being thinks or not." I wonder Mr. Locke did not rather give up this absurd sentence, than defend it through thick and thin.

Page 201. "Man or gold, used for species of things, constituted by real essences, stand for we know not what." Yes, we know what they stand for perfectly well; and no sophister can persuade us to the contrary.

Whatever Mr. Locke says against the terms "essence" or "species," he can find no better words. But I impute this to his violent spleen against logic, which he never rightly understood.

Page 206. "Put a piece of gold separate from the reach and influence of all other bodies." Where is that? Certainly beyond the fixed stars.

Page 209. "Judgment may reach farther." Had he any clear idea affixed to this term.

I think the two next chapters, "Of Maxims, and Of Trifling Propositions," are very true and very useless.

Page 272. "The faculty which supplies the place of knowledge, is judgment. The mind has these two faculties: By knowledge it certainly perceives the agreement or disagreement of ideas; by judgment it presumes them to agree or disagree without perceiving it."

O where are clear ideas now? Is knowledge a faculty of the mind? Or was ever judgment taken before for presuming what we do not know? What a vile abuse of words is here!

Judgment is that operation of the mind which pronounces things to agree or disagree. This is all that the word properly means; and refers as much to certain as to probable things.

Page 277. The chapter Of the Degrees of Assent is quite unsatisfactory. Dean Aldrich says more upon that head in twelve lines than Mr. Locke does in twelve pages.

Page 283. "Any testimony, the farther off it is from the original truth, the less force it has." Nay; the testimony on which we believe the resurrection of Christ, has as much force now as seventeen hundred years ago.

Page 288. "Reason is assisting to all our other intellectual faculties, and contains two of them; namely, sagacity, and illation." What a jumble of ideas! "Reason is that faculty which contains two others,—sagacity and illation!" No mortal ever found this out before. By illation, I suppose he means, the inferring one thing from another. Why, then, can he not say plainly, like other men, "The mind has three operations,—simple apprehension, judgment, and discourse?" But if reason be a faculty of the mind, (usually termed the understanding,) it contains them all three; that is, operates all these ways.

Page 290. Here comes his main attack upon logic, by that marvellous invention of substituting juxta-position of ideas in the place of syllogism. But Bishop Browne has so thoroughly confuted this, (in his Essay on "Human Understanding,") that to add anything more is quite superfluous.

Page 300. "I take notice of one manifest mistake in the rules of syllogism,—that particular premises prove nothing."



Can anything show more clearly his total ignorance of logic?

From a careful consideration of this whole work, I conclude that, together with several mistakes, (but none of them of any great importance,) it contains many excellent truths, proposed in a clear and strong manner, by a great master both of reasoning and language. It might, therefore, be of admirable use to young students, if read with a judicious Tutor, who could confirm and enlarge upon what is right, and guard them against what is wrong, in it. They might then make their full use of all the just remarks made by this excellent writer, and yet without that immoderate attachment to him which is so common among his readers.

WHITEHAVEN,

JOHN WESLEY

May 28, 1781.

---



---

## REMARKS

ON

### MR. BRYANT'S "ANALYSIS OF ANCIENT MYTHOLOGY."\*

---

I BELIEVE this is one of the most remarkable books in its kind, which has been published for some centuries. The author is a person of a strong understanding, deeply acquainted with ancient literature, and has, by much thought, extracted abundance of truth from a vast heap of absurd fables. Many of his discoveries, indeed, do not admit of certainty, but they are highly probable; and of many others, all circumstances considered, we cannot reasonably doubt.

I doubt most of what he terms radicals, as I know not how to answer that question, "In what language does *ai*, *cia*, *air*, &c., signify thus or thus?" Not in Hebrew; not

\* These remarks form the introduction to a series of extracts from the work, inserted by Mr. Wesley in the sixth and seventh volumes of the Arminian Magazine.—EDIT.

in Syriac; not in Arabic; not in any language that I have the least knowledge of. Therefore I question whether they mean so in any language that is now, or ever was, upon earth. Whatever then is built on this foundation, can be no more than probable.

If you say, "It means so in the Ammonian language," I ask, How do you know that? Did you ever see a book wrote in that language? No, nor a single sentence. This, therefore, leaves us just as much in the dark as we were before.

One defect more seems to run through the whole work, —entire want of method. Had the dissertations, which are strangely huddled together, been placed in any regular order, they would have been far more agreeable and more intelligible than they are at present.

---

## THOUGHTS UPON TASTE.

[PUBLISHED IN THE YEAR 1780.]

---

1. A FEW weeks ago I read with care and attention a celebrated "Essay on Taste." I cannot say, but I entered upon it with great expectation, as I knew the author to be a man of understanding, and one whose natural abilities were improved by a considerable share of learning. I knew likewise that the performance itself had been highly and generally applauded; yea, that the Doctor had been honoured with the medal which is yearly given by the Society to him that produces the best performance on the subject proposed.

2. Yet, to speak the plain truth, I cannot affirm that it altogether answered my expectation. It did not appear to me to be wrote upon a good plan, neither to be well digested. And there are assertions almost in every chapter, which are exceeding disputable. Many of these I could not clearly affirm; some of them I utterly deny. Neither could I find, in the whole tract, any clear, just definition of the subject.

So that after all he has said, one would still be puzzled to answer the question, "What is taste?"

3. But is there any better book upon the subject extant? I do not conceive there is. At least I have not seen it; although there are some ingenious thoughts of Mr. Addison upon it in "The Spectator." And nearly related to this is his fine "Essay on the Pleasures of Imagination." But taste is a more extensive word. It does not relate to the imagination only.

4. It may be the more difficult to understand the precise meaning of the word, because there are so few words that are synonymous to it. I do not recollect any, either in Greek or Latin; no, nor yet in the English language. Indeed we have some which are generally supposed to be nearly equivalent with it. So a man of taste is almost the same with a man of genius, a man of sense, or a man of judgment; but none of these mean exactly the same thing.

5. "Most languages," says Mr. Addison, "make use of this metaphor, to express that faculty of mind which distinguishes the most concealed faults and nicest perfections in writings." But this definition is far too narrow: For taste refers to other things, as well as writings. And when he adds, "It is that faculty of the soul which discovers the beauties of an author with pleasure, and his imperfections with dislike;" this is too narrow still; for taste is concerned with many things beside authors.

6. What then is taste, in the general meaning of the word? It is certainly a faculty of the mind, analogous to the sense of taste. By the external sense we relish various foods, and distinguish one from the other. By the internal, we relish and distinguish from each other various foods offered to the mind. Taste is therefore that internal sense which relishes and distinguishes its proper object. By relishes, I mean, perceives with pleasure; for in the common acceptation of the word, we are not said to have a taste for displeasing, but only for pleasing, objects. And as various as those objects are, so various are the species of taste.

7. Some of these are objects of the understanding. Such are all speculative truths; particularly those of a metaphysical or mathematical nature. So we say, a man has a taste for metaphysics; which is more than to say, he has judgment therein. It implies over and above, that he has a

relish for them ; that he finds a sweetness in the study of them. And when we say, a man has a taste for the mathematics, we mean by that expression, not only that he is capable of understanding them, but that he takes pleasure therein.

8. Another species of taste is that which relates to the objects that gratify the imagination. Thus we are accustomed to say, a man has a taste for grandeur, for novelty, or for beauty ; meaning thereby, that he takes pleasure in grand, in new, or in beautiful objects, whether they are such by nature or by art. And herein there is an unbounded variety. I mean, in the different tastes of men ; some having a taste for grandeur, some for beauty. Some, again, have a taste for one kind of beauty ; and others for another. Some have a taste for the beauties of nature ; others for those of art. The former for flowers, meadows, fields, or woods ; the latter for painting or poetry. But some have a taste both for the one and the other.

9. But is there not likewise a kind of internal sense, whereby we relish the happiness of our fellow-creatures, even without any reflection on our own interest, without any reference to ourselves ? whereby we bear a part in the prosperity of others, and rejoice with them that rejoice ? Surely there is something still in the human mind, in many, if not in all, (whether by nature, or from a higher principle,) which interests us in the welfare, not only of our relatives, our friends, and our neighbours, but of those who are at the greatest distance from us, whether in time or place. And the most generous minds have most of this taste for human happiness.

10. May we not likewise observe, that there is a beauty in virtue, in gratitude, and disinterested benevolence ? And have not many, at least, a taste for this ? Do they not discern and relish it, wherever they find it ? Yea, does it not give them one of the most delicate pleasures whereof the human mind is capable ? Is not this taste of infinitely more value, than a taste for any or all the pleasures of imagination ? And is not this pleasure infinitely more delicate, than any that ever resulted, yea, or can result, from the utmost refinements of music, poetry, or painting ?

11. As to taste in general, internal as well as external taste seems to belong to all mankind, although infinitely

diversified both as to the objects and the degrees of it. When therefore we say, "A man has no taste," the words are not to be taken strictly, as if he had absolutely no taste at all in any of the foregoing senses; seeing every man living has, more or less, an internal, as well as external, taste. But they are to be understood in a limited sense. He has no taste, suppose, for metaphysics: He has no discernment, and he has no pleasure, in things of this abstracted nature. Another man has no taste for mathematics: He has neither pleasure nor judgment therein. Meantime the mathematician has no taste either for poetry or music: He does not discern, and he does not relish, the beauties either of one or the other. But every one of these has some internal taste, how dull soever it be.

12. A dull taste is properly one that is faint and languid, that has no lively perception of its object. But sometimes, by a man of a dull taste, we mean one that relishes dull things: Suppose dull, low compositions in music or poetry, or coarse and worthless pictures. But this is more properly termed a bad taste. So one is hugely pleased with the daubing of a sign-post; another with doggerel verses; and a third, with the heavenly music of a pair of bagpipes! Almost every town and every village supplies us with instances of the same kind. We sometimes call this a false taste, as it supposes things to be excellent which are not. In many, it is natural: They have had this wrong turn ever since they were born. But in others, it is gradually acquired either by reading or conversation. Then we term it a vitiated taste: Of this, too, there are abundant instances.

13. On the other hand, he has a good, a just, or a true taste, who discerns and relishes whatever, either in the works of nature or of art, is truly excellent in its kind. This is sometimes termed a correct taste; especially when it is delighted more or less, according to the greater or smaller degree of excellence that is in the object. This differs very little, if at all, from a fine taste; especially as Mr. Addison defines it,—“that faculty of the mind which discerns with pleasure all the beauties of writing:” Should it not be rather, “which discerns all that is grand or beautiful, in the works both of art and nature?”

14. Such a taste as this is much to be desired, and that on many accounts. It greatly increases those pleasures of

life, which are not only innocent, but useful. It qualifies us to be of far greater service to our fellow-creatures. It is more especially desirable for those whose profession calls them to converse with many; seeing it enables them to be more agreeable, and consequently more profitable, in conversation.

15. But how shall a man know whether he is possessed of this faculty or not? "Let him," says Mr. Addison, "read over the celebrated works of antiquity," (to know whether he has a taste for fine writing,) "which have stood the test of so many ages and countries; or those works among the moderns, which have the sanction of the politer part of our contemporaries. If, upon the perusal of such writings, he does not find himself delighted in an extraordinary manner; or if, upon reading the admired passages in such authors, he finds a coldness and indifference in his thoughts, he ought to conclude, not (as is most common among tasteless readers) that the author wants those perfections which have been admired in them, but that he himself wants the faculty of discerning them."

16. But how can a man acquire this taste? It "must in some degree be born with us; as it often happens, that those who have other qualities in perfection are wholly void of this. But though it may in some measure be born with us, there are several means of improving it, without which it will be very imperfect and of little use to the person that possesses it. The most natural means is, to be conversant with the writings of the best authors. One that has any taste either discovers new beauties, or receives stronger impressions from the masterly strokes of a great author every time he peruses him."

17. "Conversation with men of genius is another means of improving our natural taste. It is impossible for a man of the greatest parts, to consider anything in its whole extent. Every man, beside general observations upon an author, forms some that are peculiar to his own way of thinking. So that conversation will naturally furnish us with hints which we did not attend to, and make us enjoy other men's parts and reflections as well as our own." Besides, if we converse freely with men of taste, and incite them to "open the window in their breast," we may learn to correct whatever is yet amiss in our taste, as well as to

supply whatever we or they perceive to be still wanting; all which may be directed to that glorious end, the "pleasing all men for their good unto edification."

---

## THOUGHTS

ON

### THE POWER OF MUSIC.

---

1. By the power of music, I mean, its power to affect the hearers; to raise various passions in the human mind. Of this we have very surprising accounts in ancient history. We are told, the ancient Greek musicians in particular were able to excite whatever passions they pleased; to inspire love or hate, joy or sorrow, hope or fear, courage, fury, or despair; yea, to raise these one after another, and to vary the passion just according to the variation of the music.

2. But how is this to be accounted for? No such effects attend the modern music; although it is confessed on all hands, that our instruments excel theirs beyond all degrees of comparison. What was their lyre, their instruments of seven or ten strings, compared to our violin? What were any of their pipes, to our hautboy or German flute? What, all of them put together, all that were in use two or three thousand years ago, to our organ? How is it then, that, with this inconceivable advantage, the modern music has less power than the ancient?

3. Some have given a very short answer to this, cutting the knot which they could not untie. They have doubted, or affected to doubt, the fact; perhaps have even denied it. But no sensible man will do this, unless he be utterly blinded by prejudice. For it would be denying the faith of all history; seeing no fact is better authenticated. None is delivered down to us by more unquestionable testimony; such as fully satisfies in all other cases. We have, therefore, no more reason to doubt of the power of Timotheus's music, than that of Alexander's arms; and we may deny his taking

Persepolis, as well as his burning it through that sudden rage which was excited in him by that musician. And the various effects which were successively wrought in his mind (so beautifully described by Dryden, in his Ode on St. Cecilia's Day) are astonishing instances of the power of a single harp, to transport, as it were, the mind out of itself.

4. Nay, we read of an instance, even in modern history, of the power of music not inferior to this. A musician, being brought to the King of Denmark, and asked, whether he could excite any passion, answered in the affirmative, and was commanded to make the trial upon the King himself. Presently the Monarch was all in tears; and, upon the musician's changing his mood, he was quickly roused into such fury, that, snatching a sword from one of his assistants' hands, (for they had purposely removed his own,) he immediately killed him, and would have killed all in the room, had he not been forcibly withheld.

5. This alone removes all the incredibility of what is related concerning the ancient music. But why is it that modern music, in general, has no such effect on the hearers? The grand reason seems to be no other than this,—the whole nature and design of music is altered. The ancient composers studied melody alone; the due arrangement of single notes; and it was by melody alone, that they wrought such wonderful effects. And as this music was directly calculated to move the passions, so they designed it for this very end. But the modern composers study harmony, which, in the present sense of the word, is quite another thing; namely, a contrast of various notes, opposite to, and yet blended with, each other, wherein they,

*Now high, now low, pursue the resonant fugue.*

Dr. Gregory says, "This harmony has been known in the world little more than two hundred years." Be that as it may, ever since it was introduced, ever since counterpoint has been invented, as it has altered the grand design of music, so it has well-nigh destroyed its effects.

6. Some indeed have imagined, and attempted to prove, that the ancients were acquainted with this. It seems, there needs but one single argument to demonstrate the contrary. We have many capital pieces of ancient music, that are now in the hands of the curious. Dr. Pepusch,



who was well versed in the music of antiquity, (perhaps the best of any man in Europe,) showed me several large Greek folios, which contained many of their musical compositions. Now is there, or is there not, any counterpoint in these? The learned know there is no such thing. There is not the least trace of it to be found: It is all melody, and no harmony.

7. And as the nature of music is thus changed, so is likewise the design of it. Our composers do not aim at moving the passions, but at quite another thing; at varying and contrasting the notes a thousand different ways. What has counterpoint to do with the passions? It is applied to a quite different faculty of the mind; not to our joy, or hope, or fear; but merely to the ear, to the imagination, or internal sense. And the pleasure it gives is not upon this principle; not by raising any passion whatever. It no more affects the passions than the judgment: Both the one and the other lie quite out of its province.

8. Need we any other, and can we have any stronger, proof of this, than those modern overtures, voluntaries, or concertos, which consist altogether of artificial sounds, without any words at all? What have any of the passions to do with these? What has judgment, reason, common sense? Just nothing at all. All these are utterly excluded, by delicate, unmeaning sound!

9. In this respect, the modern music has no connexion with common sense, any more than with the passions. In another, it is glaringly, undeniably, contrary to common sense; namely, in allowing, yea, appointing, different words to be sung by different persons at the same time! What can be more shocking to a man of understanding than this? Pray, which of those sentences am I to attend to? I can attend to only one sentence at once; and I hear three or four at one and the same instant! And, to complete the matter, this astonishing jargon has found a place even in the worship of God! It runs through (O pity! O shame!) the greatest part even of our Church music! It is found even in the finest of our anthems, and in the most solemn parts of our public worship! Let any impartial, any unprejudiced person say, whether there can be a more direct mockery of God.

10. But to return: Is it strange, that modern music does

not answer the end it is not designed for? and which it is in no wise calculated for? It is not possible it should. Had Timotheus "pursued the resonant fugue," his music would have been quite harmless. It would have affected Alexander no more than Bucephalus; the finest city then in the world had not been destroyed; but

*Persepolis stares, Cyrius arx alta maneres.\**

11. It is true, the modern music has been sometimes observed to have as powerful an effect as the ancient; so that frequently single persons, and sometimes numerous assemblies, have been seen in a flood of tears. But when was this? Generally, if not always, when a fine solo was sung; when "the sound has been an echo to the sense;" when the music has been extremely simple and inartificial, the composer having attended to melody, not harmony. Then, and then only, the natural power of music to move the passions has appeared. This music was calculated for that end, and effectually answered it.

12. Upon this ground it is, that so many persons are so much affected by Scotch or Irish airs. They are composed, not according to art, but nature; they are simple in the highest degree. There is no harmony, according to the present sense of the word, therein; but there is much melody. And this is not only heard, but felt, by all those who retain their native taste; whose taste is not biassed (I might say, corrupted) by attending to counterpoint and complicated music. It is this, it is counterpoint, it is harmony, (so called,) which destroys the power of music. And if ever this should be banished from our composition, if ever we should return to the simplicity and melody of the ancients, then the effects of our music will be as surprising as any that were wrought by theirs; yea, perhaps they will be as much greater, as modern instruments are more excellent than those of the ancients.

INVERNESS,

JOHN WESLEY.

June 9, 1779.

\* Mr. Wesley has here altered a line of Virgil, and applied to Persepolis that which was said concerning Troy. It stands thus in the *Æneid*:—

*Trojaque nunc staret, Priamique arx alta maneres;*

and is thus translated by Pitt:—

"Old Priam still his empire would enjoy,

And still the towers had stood, majestic Troy."—EDIT.

A THOUGHT  
ON  
THE MANNER OF EDUCATING CHILDREN.

[PRINTED IN THE YEAR 1783.]

---

1. A GENTLEMAN with whom I was conversing a while ago, was speaking largely on the manner of educating children. He objected strongly to the bringing them up too strictly; to the giving them more of religion than they liked; to the telling them of it too often, or pressing it upon them whether they will or no. He said he never pressed it upon his own children, but only spoke of it occasionally in their hearing; and if they appeared affected, then answered their questions, or perhaps spoke to them directly. He thought that the common methods that are used in those that are called religious schools, of talking about divine things continually, and daily pressing it upon children, did abundantly more harm than good; especially if any severity were used: And concluded with saying, that those children who had been trained up in this manner, as soon as the restraint was taken off, were commonly worse than others.

2. As all this was perfectly new to me, I made little answer for the present; but it put me upon much thought. I knew it was quite agreeable to the sentiments of Rousseau in his "Emilius;" the most empty, silly, injudicious thing that ever a self-conceited infidel wrote. But I knew it was quite contrary to the judgment of the wisest and best men I have known. I thought, If these things are so, how much mischief have we done unawares! How much hurt has Miss Bosanquet (now Mrs. Fletcher) been doing in the world for many years! How much more have the Miss Owens done, spoiling twenty children at a time! How much mischief is Miss Bishop likely to do! Perhaps more than even Miss Owen! Above all, how much mischief has

been done, and is now doing, at Kingswood, where (if this hypothesis be true) we are continually ruining fifty children at a time!

3. "But be this as it may, I urge the matter of fact against such an education. The children educated thus are, when grown up, actually worse than other men or women." I doubt the fact; nay, that is not enough, I totally deny it. As frequently as this has been affirmed, it is notoriously false. Some few, and very few, of those women that were brought up by Miss Bosanquet or Miss Owen, either never were converted to God, (perhaps never convinced of sin,) or have "made shipwreck of the faith," and, at the same time, of its attendant, a good conscience. And undoubtedly these would be worse than others; than those who had not so grieved the Holy Spirit of God. The same may be said of some of those men that were educated at Kingswood School. If they quenched the Spirit, they would be worse than those that never were partakers of it. But this proves nothing, unless it were a general case; which is not by any means true. Many, both of the women who were educated by Miss Bosanquet or Miss Owen, and of the men who were educated at Kingswood, are holy in heart and in life, and trust they shall praise God to all eternity that ever they saw those schools.

4. Yet I allow that what is commonly called a religious education frequently does more hurt than good; and that many of the persons who were so educated are sinners above other men, yea, and have contracted an enmity to religion, which usually continues all their lives. And this will naturally be the case, if either the religion wherein they are instructed, or the manner of instructing them, be wrong. But in most of those that are termed religious schools, there is a grand error either in the former or the latter instance.

5. With regard to the former, how few are there of those that undertake the education of children, who understand the nature of religion, who know what true religion is! some of them supposing it to be barely the doing no harm, the abstaining from outward sin; some, the using the means of grace, saying our prayers, reading good books, and the like; and others, the having a train of right opinions, which is vulgarly called faith. But all these, however

common in the world, are gross and capital errors. Unless religion be described as consisting in holy tempers; in the love of God and our neighbour; in humility, gentleness, patience, long-suffering, contentedness in every condition; to sum up all, in the image of God, in the mind that was in Christ; it is no wonder if these that are instructed therein are not better, but worse, than other men. For they think they have religion, when, indeed, they have none at all; and so add pride to all their other vices.

6. But suppose those that educate them judge right with regard to the nature of religion, they may still be mistaken with regard to the manner of instilling it into children. They may not have the spirit of government, to which some even good men are utter strangers. They may habitually lean to this or that extreme, of remissness or of severity. And if they either give children too much of their own will, or needlessly and churlishly restrain them; if they either use no punishment at all, or more than is necessary, the leaning either to one extreme or the other may frustrate all their endeavours. In the latter case, it will not be strange if religion stink in the nostrils of those that were so educated. They will naturally look upon it as an austere, melancholy thing; and if they think it necessary to salvation, they will esteem it a necessary evil, and so put it off as long as possible.

7. But does it follow, that we ought not to instil true religion into the minds of children as early as possible? Or, rather, that we should do it with all diligence from the very time that reason dawns, laying line upon line, precept upon precept, as soon and as fast as they are able to bear it? By all means. Scripture, reason, and experience jointly testify that, inasmuch as the corruption of nature is earlier than our instructions can be, we should take all pains and care to counteract this corruption as early as possible. The bias of nature is set the wrong way: Education is designed to set it right. This, by the grace of God, is to turn the bias from self-well, pride, anger, revenge, and the love of the world, to resignation, lowliness, meekness, and the love of God. And from the moment we perceive any of those evil roots springing up, it is our business immediately to check their growth, if we cannot yet root them out. As far as this can be done by mildness, softness, and gentleness,

certainly it should be done. But sometimes these methods will not avail, and then we must correct with kind severity. For where tenderness will not remove the fault, "he that spareth the rod, spoileth the child." To deny this is to give the lie to the God of truth, and to suppose we can govern better than Him. For, "whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth."

8. In the name of God, then, and by the authority of His word, let all that have children, from the time they begin to speak or run alone, begin to train them up in the way wherein they should go; to counterwork the corruption of their nature with all possible assiduity; to do everything in their power to cure their self-will, pride, and every other wrong temper. Then let them be delivered to instructors (if such can be found) that will tread in the same steps; that will watch over them as immortal spirits, who are shortly to appear before God, and who have nothing to do in this world but to prepare to meet Him in the clouds, seeing they will be eternally happy, if they are ready; if not, eternally miserable.

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## THOUGHTS ON GENIUS.

---

1. I HAVE for many years desired to see something, long or short, accurately written on the term "genius." It is a word almost in every one's mouth, and one that is used by abundance of writers; yet, I doubt, it is not well understood by one in a hundred of them that use it. I rejoiced, therefore, to hear that so eminent a writer as Dr. Gerard had published an Essay on the subject. But when I read it, I was disappointed of my hope: It did not in any degree answer my expectations. The ingenious and very learned author did not seem to understand the term at all: Nor could I find one proper definition of it throughout the whole treatise.

2. I hoped, however, to find full satisfaction on the head in Mr. Duff's "Essay on Original Genius;" although I was

surprised to observe it had been published above twenty years before the other. But I was disappointed again. Indeed, it undoubtedly contains many judicious remarks. But even here, what should have been done in the very beginning is not done at all. I want to know, first of all, What do you mean by "genius?" Give me a definition of it. Pray tell me this, before you say anything more about it. This is common sense. Without this, you may ramble as long as you please; and leave me just as wise as I was.

3. The word "genius" was used by the ancient Romans for a superior being, good or bad, who, they supposed, attended every one from his birth to his death. But in this sense of the word it has nothing to do with the present question; wherein it means either a quality of the human mind, or a man endued with that quality. Thus we say indifferently, He *is* a genius, or *has* a genius. I would here take it in the latter sense, for the quality which denominates a man a genius.

4. It is evident that genius, taken in this sense, is not invention; although that may possibly bear some relation to it. It is not imagination; although this may be allowed to be one ingredient of it. Much less is it an association of ideas: All these are essentially different from it. So is sensation, on the one hand; and so are memory and judgment, on the other: Unless by judgment we mean (as many do) strength of understanding. It seems to be an extraordinary capacity of mind; sometimes termed extraordinary talents. This may be more or less extensive; there may be a kind of general genius, or an extraordinary capacity for many things; or a particular genius, an extraordinary capacity for one particular thing; it may be, for one particular science, or one particular art. Thus Homer and Milton had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for poetry. Thus Euclid and Archimedes had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for geometry. So Cicero had a genius for oratory, and Sir Isaac Newton for natural philosophy. Thus Raphael and Michael Angelo had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for painting. And so Purcell and Handel (to mention no more) had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for music. Whereas, Aristotle, Lord Bacon, and a very few beside, seem to have had an universal genius, an

extraordinary capacity to excel in whatever they took in hand.

5. It may be allowed that the word is frequently taken in a lower sense. But it has then a word prefixed to it, to restrain its signification. So we say, A man has a middling genius, or a little genius. But it is generally taken for an extraordinary capacity, of whatever kind.

6. Genius in philosophy, poetry, and oratory seems to imply a strong and clear understanding, connected with an unusually extensive and lively imagination. In which respect it may truly be said, not only of a poet, but also of an orator and philosopher, *Nascitur, non fit*: "He has this endowment by nature, not by art." Yet it may be granted, that art may exceedingly improve what originally sprung from nature. It may receive assistance, likewise, from the memory; (nearly related to the imagination;) and also from the passions, which on various occasions enliven and strengthen the imagination.

7. It may be observed, I purpose to abstain from using the word reason or judgment; because the word understanding is less equivocal; and I would always use one and the same word to express one and the same idea.

8. Both the writers above mentioned suppose taste also to be essential to genius. And, indeed, it does seem to be, if not an essential part, yet an essential property of it. Taste is here a figurative word, borrowed from the sense of tasting, whereby we are enabled first to judge of, and then to relish, our food. So the intellectual taste has a twofold office: It judges, and it relishes. In the former respect, it belongs to the understanding; in the latter, to the imagination.

9. To sum up all: Perhaps genius may be defined, an extraordinary capacity for philosophy, oratory, poetry, or any other art or science; the constituent parts whereof are a strong understanding, and a lively imagination; and the essential property, a just taste.

JOHN WESLEY.

LAMBETH,  
November 8, 1787.



## THOUGHTS ON MEMORY.

---

**THERE** is a near relation between memory, reminiscence, and recollection. But what is the difference between them? Wherein do they differ from each other? Is not memory a natural faculty of the mind which is exerted various ways? And does it not exert itself sometimes in simply remembering, sometimes in reminiscence or recollection? In simply remembering things, the mind of man appears to be rather passive than active. Whether we will or no, we remember many things which we have heard or seen, said or done; especially if they were attended with any remarkable pleasure or pain. But in reminiscence, or recalling what is past, the mind appears to be active. Most times at least, we may or may not recall them, as we please. Recollection seems to imply something more than simple reminiscence; even the studious collecting and gathering up together all the parts of a conversation or transaction, which had occurred before, but had in some measure escaped from the memory.

But there is one sort of memory, which it seems more difficult to understand than any other. You pronounce or hear a discourse, or copy of verses, which fixes upon your memory. Afterwards you can repeat, in your mind, the words you spoke or heard, without ever opening your lips, or uttering any articulate sound. There is a kind of inward voice (so we may term it, for want of a better expression) which, like an echo, not only repeats the same words without the least variation, but with exactly the same accent, and the same tone of voice. The same echo repeats any tune you have learned, without the least alteration. Now, how is this done? By what faculty of the mind, or the body, or both conjointly? I am as sure of the fact, as I am that I am alive. But who is able to account for it? O how shall we comprehend the ever-blessed God, when we cannot comprehend ourselves!

JOHN WESLEY.

YARMOUTH,  
October 21, 1789.

## THOUGHTS ON SUICIDE.

---

It is a melancholy consideration, that there is no country in Europe, or perhaps in the habitable world, where the horrid crime of self-murder is so common as it is in England! One reason of this may be, that the English in general are more ungodly and more impatient than other nations. Indeed we have laws against it, and officers with juries are appointed to inquire into every fact of the kind. And these are to give in their verdict upon oath, whether the self-murderer was sane or insane. If he is brought in insane, he is excused, and the law does not affect him. By this means it is totally eluded; for the juries constantly bring him in insane. So the law is not of the least effect, though the farce of a trial still continues.

This morning I asked a Coroner, "Sir, did you ever know a jury bring in the deceased *felo de se*?" He answered, "No, Sir; and it is a pity they should." What then is the law good for? If all self-murderers are mad, what need of any trial concerning them?

But it is plain our ancestors did not think so, or those laws had never been made. It is true, every self-murderer is mad in some sense, but not in that sense which the law intends. This fact does not prove him mad in the eye of the law: The question is, Was he mad in other respects? If not, every juror is perjured who does not bring him in *felo de se*.

But how can this vile abuse of the law be prevented, and this execrable crime effectually discouraged?

By a very easy method. We read in ancient history, that, at a certain period, many of the women in Sparta murdered themselves. This fury increasing, a law was made, that the body of every woman that killed herself should be exposed naked in the streets. The fury ceased at once.

Only let a law be made and rigorously executed, that the body of every self-murderer, Lord or peasant, shall be hanged in chains, and the English fury will cease at once.

LIVERPOOL,

April 8, 1790.

JOHN WESLEY.

Digitized by Google

## OF THE GRADUAL IMPROVEMENT OF NATURAL PHILOSOPHY.\*

---

1. NATURAL philosophy treats both of God himself, and of his creatures, visible and invisible. Of these I purpose to speak, in such a manner as to ascend from the consideration of man through all the orders of things, as they are farther and farther removed from us, to God the centre of all knowledge. (I mean, of visible things: Of the invisible world we cannot know much, while we dwell in houses of clay.) Thus speculative philosophy ascends from man to God; practical descends from God to man.

2. The most ancient nations, the Egyptians and Hebrews in particular, philosophized much concerning God, and concerning genii, good or evil spirits, of an order superior to man. What they taught concerning the visible world related chiefly to its origin, the changes it was to undergo, and its final dissolution. But on all these heads they only delivered to their posterity what they had received from their forefathers.

3. Among the Greeks, Thales Milesius and his followers applied themselves with great industry to discover, with the best helps they had, the material causes of natural things: They were succeeded by others, who more curiously searched into the structure of natural bodies. Here the foundation of natural history was laid, in various observations on plants, animals, and other things. And herein the endeavours of Aristotle and Theophrastus in particular are to be commended. Yet, in other respects, Aristotle did not promote, but rather obstruct, the knowledge of nature; for he made philosophy as unintelligible by his abstract and metaphysical notions, as Plato, Pythagoras, and others did, by their ideas, numbers, and symbols.

\* This article forms the introduction to Mr. Wesley's "Compendium of Natural Philosophy," in five volumes, 12mo. The work was compiled from various authors; but the introduction and conclusion appear to have been his own composition.—EDIT.

4. In succeeding times, when the four Greek sects, the Platonic, Peripatetic, Epicurean, and Stoic, divided the western world between them, the Platonists almost confined themselves and their opinions to the subject of divinity; the Peripatetics regarded little but logic; the Stoics little but moral philosophy; and the Epicureans had small concern about any, being immersed in sensual pleasures: So that none of them made any considerable improvement in any branch of natural philosophy.

5. When the utter barbarism which followed was a little dispelled, Aristotle began to reign. His followers (the Schoolmen, as they were called) might have improved natural philosophy, if (like their master) they had diligently cultivated the knowledge of nature, and searched out the properties of particular things. But it was their misfortune to neglect what was commendable in him, and to follow only what was blameworthy; so as to obscure and pollute all philosophy with abstract, idle, vain speculations. Yet some of them, after the Arabians had introduced the knowledge of chemistry into Europe, were wise above the age they lived in, and penetrated so far into the secret recesses of nature, as scarce to escape the suspicion of magic. Such were Roger Bacon and Albertus Magnus.

6. After the revival of learning, as all other branches of philosophy, so this in particular, received new light. And none was more serviceable herein than Lord Bacon; who, well understanding the defects of the school philosophy, incited all lovers of natural philosophy to a diligent search into natural history. And he himself led them the way, by many experiments and observations.

7. After this, not single persons only, but whole societies applied themselves carefully to make experiments; that, having accurately observed the structure and properties of each body, they might the more safely judge of its nature. And the advantages which have arisen from hence manifestly appear from the Memoirs of the Royal Society at London; of the Academy of Sciences at Paris; and those of the same kind in Germany, as well as several other parts of Europe.

8. To mention but a few of the late discoveries in each branch of natural philosophy: With regard to the structure of a human body, how many things have modern anatomists discovered, which were either little understood by the

ancients, or wholly unknown to them! Such, for instance, is the circulation of the blood, discovered by Dr. William Harvey, whose "Anatomic Exercitations" concerning it were first published in the year 1628. Such were the lacteal veins, discovered first in brutes by Casper Asellius, of Cremona; and soon after in men. Such the thoracic duct, and receptacle of the chyle, observed first by Dr. John Pecquet, of Paris, whereby the whole course of the blood is now clearly understood.

9. Dr. Harvey improved natural philosophy by another no less eminent discovery; for he was the first of the moderns that showed all animals to be generated from eggs. That the ancients knew and taught this, (Orpheus in particular,) cannot reasonably be doubted. But as the knowledge of it was entirely lost, to revive was the same thing as to invent it. It is obvious, how great a light this pours upon that dark subject, with regard to the generation of men, as well as of other animals.

10. Another remarkable discovery in the last century was that of the transfusion of the blood. The blood of a young, lively, healthy animal was transfused, by means of a small silver tube, properly adjusted, into the veins of another, which was old, weak, and sickly. And the effect amazed all the beholders. When the experiment was tried before several of the Royal Society, a feeble, worn-out dog, ready to die with age, and hardly able to trail his legs after him, was no sooner filled with young blood, than he leaped up as from sleep, shook himself, and ran up and down, as lively and active as a puppy. In France the experiment has been made upon men, and with as surprising success. What pity that so important an experiment should ever fall into disuse! that it is not still repeated upon proper occasions! especially where all other means fail.

11. It cannot be denied, that Physicians have signally improved this branch of philosophy, as they have continual opportunities of making new discoveries in the human body. In diseases themselves, the wonderful wisdom of the Author of nature appears; and by means of them many hidden recesses of the human frame are unexpectedly discovered. The powers of medicines also, variously exerting themselves, lay open many secrets of nature.

12. And how many things in all bodies, as well as in the

human, which eluded all the art and industry of the ancients, have the moderns discovered by the help of microscopes! although these are not properly a modern invention; it being certain something of this kind was in use many hundred years ago. There are several works of great antiquity still extant; the beauties of which cannot even be discerned, much less could they have been wrought, by the finest naked eye which ever was in the world. Such is that seal, now in the cabinet of the King of France, allowed to be at least fifteen hundred years old, six-tenths of an inch long, and four broad, which to the naked eye presents only a confused group; but, surveyed with a microscope, distinctly exhibits trees, a river, a boat, and sixteen or seventeen persons.

13. Now, whatever assists us in searching out the structure of a human body, equally helps us to find out the nature and properties of other animals. Hence in these likewise we have received great light from anatomical and microscopical observations. Those especially who have bestowed their whole time and thoughts on one kind of animals, (as Dr. Willoughby, on fishes, Dr. Swammerdam, of Amsterdam, on insects,) have illustrated, to a surprising degree, the subjects on which they wrote.

14. Many have diligently searched into the nature of plants; particularly Mr. Ray, who has not only ranged them in a new method, but also wrote an elaborate history of them. Others have described, with equal diligence, either plants in general, or those of a particular country. And others have shown the like industry in finding out and explaining the nature of stones, metals, minerals, and other fossils.

15. Nor is it strange that the moderns have penetrated farther into the recesses of nature than the ancients, considering the advantages they have received from the art of chemistry. Not that this is an invention of later ages: It was in some measure known long ago. But as this art has been cultivated in our age, with far greater accuracy than ever; so by this means many properties of natural bodies have been discovered; of fossils in particular.

16. But none of these have so much engaged the study of the learned, or so well deserved it, as the loadstone. Its attractive force was known to the ancients, and the origin

of that discovery is recorded by Pliny. But it does not appear that they knew of its pointing to the pole, or of the use of the compass. This (the compass) was invented by John Goia, in the year 1300. But it has since been observed, that the magnetic needle seldom points exactly to the pole; but varies from it some degrees to the east or west, in a fixed and regular order.

17. Nearly related to the nature of fossils is glass, which was well known to the ancients, being mentioned by Plutarch and Lucian among the Greeks, by Lucretius, Pliny, and others, among the Latins. Yet the art of making glass has been since their times abundantly improved. One branch of this is, the art of making burning-glasses, which are now brought to so great perfection, as either to melt or reduce to ashes the most solid bodies, in a few moments. If these were known to the ancients at all, (which may reasonably be doubted,) yet the art was wholly lost for many ages, and not recovered till of late years.

18. Later ages have likewise made many discoveries with regard to earth, water, fire, and air; the last of which, air, though it be of so fine a texture as to be wholly invisible, yet, producing such amazing effects, has excited the most diligent inquiries of the curious. Nor does any part of philosophy afford a wider field for experiments and discoveries. The weight of it we can ascertain by that curious instrument the barometer, invented by Torricellius; the degrees of heat and cold, by the thermometer. By the air-pump, (invented by Otto Guerick, Mayor of Magdeburgh,) the air is drawn out of any bodies, or more largely thrown into them; and hereby many effects are produced, which deserve our diligent consideration.

19. With regard to water, the discoveries of later times are numerous and important. Such are the diving-bell, invented by George Sinclair; the diving-machine of Alphonso Borelli, a kind of boat, which is so contrived as to be navigated under water; and the art of making salt-water fresh, which is now done with little expense, so far that the saltness is taken away, and it is fit for almost all uses.

20. The nature and properties of fire also have been accurately traced in late ages; for which new occasion was given by the invention of gunpowder, by Berthold Schwartz, in the fourteenth century. *Aurum fulminans*, a yet later

invention, goes off with a louder explosion than gunpowder. Other bodies there are which do not burn, yet emit light. Such is the Bononian stone, which, placed in the dark, diffuses light like a burning coal. It is well known that the preparation called phosphorus has the same property.

21. Various theories of the earth have lately appeared. But they are no more than ingenious conjectures. The same may be said of the systems of the universe, a few particulars excepted. The Ptolemaic system, which supposes the earth to be the centre of the universe, is now deservedly exploded; since Copernicus has revived that of Pythagoras, which was probably received by most of the ancients. Tycho Brahe's, which jumbles both together, is too complex and intricate, and contrary to that beautiful simplicity, conspicuous in all the works of nature.

22. The telescope (invented by Galileo) has discovered many stars unknown to the ancients, together with the nature and motion of the planets, both primary and secondary. By this also have been discovered the spots of the sun, the inequality of the surface of the moon, the nature of the galaxy, or milky way, and many other particulars relating to the heavens.

23. With regard to body in general, it is commonly supposed that our age has a vast advantage over antiquity, by having found out new principles and new hypotheses, whereby we can account for all the secrets of nature. But this will bear a dispute. For beside that the chief of our hypotheses are not new, but known long ago, the learned have hitherto very little profited by all their hypotheses. And, in truth, all their disquisitions touching the causes of natural bodies terminate in mere conjectures; one whereof is often more probable than another; but none admits of any solid proof.

24. What remains of natural philosophy is, the doctrine concerning God and spirits. But in the tracing of this we can neither depend upon reason nor experiment. Whatever men know or can know concerning them, must be drawn from the oracles of God. Here, therefore, we are to look for no new improvements; but to stand in the good old paths; to content ourselves with what God has been pleased to reveal; with "the faith once delivered to the saints."



# REMARKS

ON

## THE LIMITS OF HUMAN KNOWLEDGE.\*

---

PERHAPS a few observations on the littleness of human knowledge may not be unacceptable to the serious reader. I propose them barely as hints, which may be pursued at large by men of reflection and leisure.

To begin with the things which are at the greatest distance from us. How far does the universe extend, and where are the limits of it? Where did the Creator "stay his rapid wheels?" where "fix the golden compasses?" Certainly himself alone is without bounds; but all his works are finite. Therefore, He must have said, at some point of space,

"Be these thy bounds,  
This be thy just circumference, O world!"

But where, who can tell? Only the morning stars who then sang together; the sons of God, who then shouted for joy. All beyond the region of the fixed stars is utterly hid from the children of men.

And what do we know of the fixed stars? A great deal, one would imagine; since, like the Most High, we too tell their number, yea, and call them all by their names! those at least which appear to the naked eye, both in the northern and southern hemisphere. But what are these in comparison of those which our glasses discover, even in an inconsiderable part of the firmament? What are one or two and twenty hundred, to those which we discover in the milky way alone? How many are there, then, in the whole expanse, in the boundless field of ether? But to what end do they serve?

\* These remarks form the conclusion of Mr. Wesley's "Compendium of Natural Philosophy." Some of them occur in his sermon "On the Imperfection of Human Knowledge," Vol. VI., page 339; but they are here considerably enlarged.—EDIT.

to illuminate worlds? to impart light and heat to their several choirs of planets? or, as the ingenious Mr. Hutchinson supposes, to gild the extremities of the solar sphere, which according to him is the only inhabited part of the universe; and to minister, in some unknown way, to the perpetual circulation of light and spirit?

For our sakes only, that great man apprehends the comets also to run their amazing circuits! But what are comets? planets not fully formed? or planets destroyed by a conflagration? or bodies of an wholly different nature, of which therefore we can form no idea? How easy is it to form a thousand conjectures! How hard to determine anything concerning them! Can their huge revolutions be even tolerably accounted for by the principles of gravitation and projection? Has not Dr. Rogers overturned the very foundation of this fashionable hypothesis? What then brings them back, when they have travelled so immensely far beyond the sphere of the solar attraction? And what whirls them on, when, by the laws of gravitation, they would immediately drop into the solar fire?

What is the sun itself? It is undoubtedly the most glorious of all the inanimate creatures: And its use we know. God made it to rule the day. It is

*Of this great world both eye and soul.*

But who knows of what substance it is composed? or even whether it be fluid or solid? What are those spots on his surface that are continually changing? What are those that always appear in the same place? What is its real magnitude? Which shall we embrace amidst the immense variety of opinions? Mr. Whiston, indeed, says that eminent astronomers are nearly agreed upon this head: But they cannot agree concerning his magnitude, till they agree concerning his distance. And how far are they from this! The generality of them believe that he is near a hundred millions of miles from the earth; others suppose it to be twenty, some twelve, millions; and last comes Dr. Rogers, and brings a clear and full demonstration (so he terms it) that they are not three millions from each other. What an unbounded field for conjecture is here! But what foundation for real knowledge?

Just as much do we know of the feebly-shining bodies that

move regularly round the sun ; of Jupiter, Saturn, and other planets. Their revolutions we are acquainted with ; but who is able, to this day, regularly to demonstrate either their magnitude or their distance? unless he will prove, as is the usual way, the magnitude from the distance, and the distance from the magnitude. And what are Jupiter's belts? Can any man tell? What is Saturn's ring? The honest ploughman knows as well as the deepest philosopher. How many satellites, secondary planets, move round Jupiter or Saturn? Are we sure even of their number? how much less of their nature, size, motions, or distances from the primary! But what wonder we are so ignorant concerning Saturn's moons, when we know so little of our own? For although some men of genius have not only discovered

Rivers and mountains on her spotty globe,

but have travelled over the whole hemisphere which is obverted to us; (and why is the same hemisphere always obverted? What reason can be assigned, why we do not see the other hemisphere in its turn?) have marked out all her seas and continents with the utmost exactness; yea, and carried selenography to so great perfection, as to give us a complete map of the moon; yet do others (and not without reason) doubt whether she has any atmosphere: And if she has not any, she can have no rain or dews, nor, consequently, either seas or rivers. So that, after all, we have nothing more than mere conjectures concerning the nearest of all the heavenly bodies.

What is it that contains them all in their orbits? And what is the principle of their motions? By what created power, what outward or inward force, are they thrown forward to such a point, and then brought back again to a determinate distance from the central fire? Dr. Rogers has evidently demonstrated, that no conjunction of the centrifugal and centripetal force can possibly account for this, or ever cause any body to move in an ellipsis. Will light moving outward, and returning inward in the form of spirit, account for them? Nay, if they take away some, they plunge us into other difficulties, no less considerable: So that there is reason to fear that even the Newtonian, yea, and Hutchinsonian system, however plausible and ingenious, and whatever advantage they may have in several particulars, are yet no

more capable of solid, convincing proof, than the Ptolemaic or Cartesian.

But let us come to things that are nearer home, and see what knowledge we have of them. And how much do we know of that wonderful body that enables me to see and know all things around us? I mean light. How is it communicated to us? Does it flow in a lucid river, in a continued stream from the orb of the sun to the earth? Or does the sun impel those particles only which are contiguous to his orb, which impel others, so on and on, to the extremity of his system? Again: Are the particles of light naturally and essentially lucid? or only by accident, when they are collected, or when put into motion? Yet again: Does light gravitate or not? Does it attract other bodies, or repel them? Is it the strongest, or the only, repellent in nature? and what communicates that power to all repellents in nature? Is this power the same with electricity; or wherein does it differ therefrom? Is light subject to the general laws which obtain in all other matter; or is it a body *sui generis*,\* altogether different from all other bodies? Is it the same, or how does it differ from ether, Sir Isaac Newton's subtile matter? What is ether? Wherein does it differ from the electric fluid? Who can explain, and demonstrate the truth of his explanation, the phenomena of electricity? Why do some substances conduct the electric matter, and others arrest its course? Why does a globe of glass and another of sulphur just counteract each other? Why is the coated phial capable of being charged just to such a point, and no farther? *O crux philosophorum!*† superabundant proof of the shortness of human knowledge!

But let us consider what is not of so subtile a nature, nor therefore so liable to elude our inquiries. Surely we understand the air we breathe, and which encompasses us on every side. By its elasticity, it seems to be the grand mover and general spring of all sublunary nature. But is elasticity essential to air, and consequently inseparable from it? Not so: It has been lately proved, by numberless experiments, that it may be fixed, divested of its elasticity, and generated or restored to it anew. Therefore elasticity is not essential

\* Of a kind peculiar to itself.—EDIT.

† O tormenting source of vexation to philosophers!—EDIT.

to air, any more than fluidity is to water. Is it then elastic any otherwise than as it is joined to another body? As every particle of air is, in its ordinary state, attached to a particle of ether, or electric fire, does it not derive its whole elasticity from this, perhaps the only true, essential elastic in nature; and, consequently, when separated from this, lose all its elastic force? for want of which it is then effete, and will neither sustain flame, nor the life of animals.

By what powers do the dew, the rain, the other vapours rise and fall in the air? Can we account for all the phenomena of them upon the common principles? And can we demonstrate that this is the true, the most rational way of accounting for them? Or shall we say, with a late ingenious writer, that those principles are utterly insufficient; and that they cannot be accounted for at all, but upon the principles of electricity?

Do we thoroughly understand the nature and properties of the atmosphere that surrounds us? that immense congeries not only of air and vapours, whether of a watery or inflammable nature, but likewise of effluvia of every kind, which are continually steaming out from solid as well as fluid bodies, in all parts of the terraqueous globe? Do all our instruments, with all the improvements of them, suffice to give us a thorough knowledge of its constituent parts? Do they inform us of their innumerable combinations and changes, with the remote and immediate causes of them? Very far from it; and yet it is not a barely curious knowledge, but useful in the highest degree; seeing, for want of it, not only various diseases, but often death itself ensues.

Let us descend to what is of a still more firm and stable nature, and subject to the scrutiny of all our senses; namely, the earth we tread upon, and which God hath peculiarly given to the children of men. Do the children of men understand this? Of what parts then is it composed? I speak now of its internal parts, in comparison of which the surface is next to nothing. Many arguments induce us to believe that the earth is between seven and eight thousand miles in diameter. How much of this do we know? Perhaps some cavities, natural or artificial, which have been examined by men, descend one, or even two miles beneath its surface. But what lies beneath these? beneath the region of fossils, of stones, metals, and minerals? these being only a thin

exterior crust. Whereof consist the inner parts of the globe? Of a nucleus, (as an eminent man supposes, in order to account for the variation of the needle,) and a luminous medium interposed between that and the outer shell? Or is there a central fire, a grand reservoir, which supplies all the burning mountains, as well as ministers to the ripening of gems and metals, if not of vegetables also? Or is the great deep still contained in the bowels of the earth, a central abyss of waters? Who hath seen? Who can tell? Who can give any solid satisfaction to a rational inquirer?

But what wonder if we are ignorant of its internal nature? For how many parts are there on the surface of the globe, which, after all the discoveries of later ages, are still utterly unknown to us! How very little do we know of the polar regions, either in Europe or Asia; in Asia particularly, where all but the sea-coast is mere *terra incognita*! How little do we know of the inland parts either of Africa or America; either of the soil, the climate, the fruits, the animals, or the human inhabitants! So far are we from having any proper knowledge of these, that we can scarce form any rational conjecture about them.

And who knows what is contained in the broad sea; in the abyss that covers so large a part of the globe? Many indeed go down to the sea in ships, and occupy their business in the great waters: But what know they of what is contained therein; either of its animal inhabitants, its productions of the vegetable kind, or those of a mineral or metallic nature? Most of its chambers are inaccessible to man; so that how they are furnished, we know not. Leviathan may take his pastime therein; but they are not designed for the children of men.

But let us come nearer home. How little do we know even of the furniture of the dry land! Survey those things which fall directly under our notice, even the most simple stones, metals, minerals. How exceeding imperfectly are we acquainted with their nature and properties! What is there in the inward constitution of metals, which distinguishes them from all other fossils; from stones in particular? "Why, they are heavier." True; but what makes them heavier? I doubt whether Solomon himself was able to assign the reason. What is the original internal difference between gold and silver, or between tin and lead? It is all

mystery to the sons of men. And yet vain man would be wise!

“If all the men in the world,” says the great Mr. Boyle, “were to spend their whole lives in the search, they would not be able to find out all the properties of that single mineral, antimony.” And if all men could know so little of one thing, how little can one know of all!

Let us proceed to the higher parts of the creation. Observe the vegetable kingdom: And here also whatever displays the wisdom of the Creator, discovers the ignorance of his creature. Who can clearly determine even the fundamental question concerning the general nature of vegetables? Does the sap perform a regular circulation through their vessels, or not? How plausible arguments have been brought, both on the one side and the other! Who knows the several species of vegetables, from the cedar of Lebanon to the hyssop on the wall; or rather, if we would descend from the highest to the lowest, to the innumerable groves of plants which appear in the form of mouldiness; or those more innumerable (if the expression may be allowed) which do not appear to the naked eye at all? Who is able to discover the proper specific difference between any one kind of plant and another; or the peculiar internal conformation and disposition of their component particles? Yea, what man upon earth thoroughly understands the nature and properties of any one plant under heaven?

Ascend we higher still, from plants to animals. But here we are stopped in the midway. Under which of these shall we place the innumerable tribes of microscopic animals, so called? Are they real animals in the common sense of the word? Or are they animals in quite another sense? essentially different from all other species of animals in the universe; as neither requiring any food to sustain them, nor generating or being generated? Are they no animals at all, (according to the supposition of a late ingenious writer,) but merely inanimate particles of matter, in a state of fermentation? So much may be said for each of these opinions, that it is not easy to fix upon any of them.

If they are animals of a peculiar kind which neither generate, nor are generated, they spread a veil over one considerable branch of human ignorance. For how totally

ignorant are the most sagacious of men touching the whole affair of generation! I do not say, of the generation of insects and fishes;

the countless fry,  
That by unnumber'd millions multiply.

But let us come to that of the most perfect animals, yea, of man himself. In the book of the Creator, indeed, were all our members written; which day by day were fashioned, when as yet there were none of them. But by what rule were they fashioned? in what manner? by what degrees, from the moment of impregnation? Who can explain

How the dim speck of entity began  
To' extend its recent form, and swell to man?

By what means was the first motion communicated to the *punctum saliens*? When and how was the immortal spirit added to the mass of senseless clay? There is no need of descending to particulars: for it is mystery all; and, after all our researches, we can only say, "I am fearfully and wonderfully made!"

But is there any such thing as equivocal generation, whether of plants or animals? It is impossible anything can appear more absurd to the eye of reason! Was there ever an instance, since the world began, that a house grew of itself? nay, so much as a bed, a table, a chair, or the smallest piece of household furniture? And yet how trifling and inartificial is the construction of these to that of the meanest plant or animal! What is the workmanship of Whitehall or Westminster Abbey, to that of a tree or a fly? And yet, on the other hand, if we deny spontaneous generation, what difficulties surround us! If we can give a plausible account of the propagation of mistletoe on trees, and a few of the plants growing on the tops of houses, or on the walls of churches and towers, yet how many more confound all our sagacity! And how many animals are discovered in such places as no animal of that kind ever frequented!

With regard to the lowest class of animals, insects, almost innumerable are the discoveries which have been made within few years, particularly by the ingenious and indefatigable Mr. Reaumur! But how inconsiderable is all this



in comparison of that which still remains undiscovered! How many species, how many entire *genera* of these, are we totally unacquainted with! How many millions by their extreme minuteness elude our most careful inquiries! And the minuter parts of larger animals escape our utmost diligence: So that all we can attain to is an imperfect knowledge of what is obvious in their composition.

Have we a more perfect knowledge of fishes than of insects? How many of the inhabitants of the waters are entirely concealed from human view, by the element wherein they live! It is not permitted to the sons of men to walk through the paths of the sea, nor, consequently, to trace out their several kinds or species with any exactness. But it is highly probable these are far more numerous than the species of land-animals; as the distance between the smallest and the largest of sea-animals is so immensely greater: From the minnow, for instance, (though this is far from being the least,) to the Norwegian whale; to say nothing of Bishop Pontoppidan's cracken, and sea-serpent, which I doubt never existed but in his own imagination. And with regard to the species we are acquainted with, how little is it that we know! Only a few of their general properties; enough to satisfy our need, but not our curiosity.

We are something better acquainted with the inhabitants of the air; birds being more accessible to us: Yet upon the whole we are very far from being perfectly acquainted with them. Of many we know little more than the outward shape. We know a few of the obvious properties of others, but the inward, specific difference of very few; and we have a thorough, adequate knowledge of none.

“However, we have a more extensive knowledge of beasts, many of which are our domestic companions.” Certainly we have: And yet a thousand questions may be asked even concerning these, which we are in nowise able to answer. To touch only on two or three general heads. Do they reason, or do they not? Whence arise the different qualities and tempers, not only in different kinds and species, but even in the individuals of one species, as in dogs, cats, and horses? Are they mere machines? If we assert they are, it inevitably follows, that they neither see, nor hear, nor smell, nor feel. For of this mere machines are utterly incapable. Much less can they know or remember any-

thing, or move any otherwise than they are impelled. But all this, as numberless experiments show, is quite contrary to matter of fact. On the other hand, if they are not mere machines, if they have either sensation, or knowledge, or memory, or a principle of self-motion, then they are not mere matter; they have in them an immaterial principle. But of what kind? Will it die with the body or not? Is it mortal or immortal? Here again we are got into an unknown path. We cannot order our speech by reason of darkness.

But although we know so little either of the things that are above us, of those that are beneath us, or of those that surround us on every side, yet it is to be hoped we know ourselves; and of all, this is the most useful, the most necessary, knowledge. But do we truly know ourselves? Do we know the most excellent part of ourselves, our own soul? That it is a spirit, we know. But what is a spirit? Here again we are at a full stop. And where is the soul lodged? In the pineal gland? the whole brain? in the heart? the blood? in any single part of the body? Or, is it (if any one can understand those terms) all in all, and all in every part? How is it united to the body? What is the secret chain, what the bands, that couple them together? Can the wisest of men give a satisfactory answer even to these few, plain questions?

As to the body, we glory in having attained abundantly more knowledge than the ancients. By our glasses we have discovered very many things, which we suppose they were wholly unacquainted with. But have we discovered why we perspire three parts in four less when we sweat than when we do not? What a total mistake is it then to suppose sweat is only an increase of insensible perspiration! Have we discovered why one part of mankind have black skins, and the other white? It is not owing to the climate; for both black men and white are born in the same latitude. And have not Negroes the same flesh and blood with us? But what is flesh? that of the muscles in particular? Are the fibres out of which it is woven of a determinate size; so that when you have divided them into smaller and smaller, to a certain point, you come to those of the smallest kind? Or are they resolvable (at least in their own nature) into smaller and smaller *in infinitum*? How does a muscle act?

If you say, "By being inflated, and consequently shortened;" I ask again, But what is it inflated with? If with blood, how and whence comes that blood? And what becomes of that blood, whither does it go, the moment the muscle is relaxed? What is blood? Of how many sorts of particles does it essentially consist? Of red globules and serum? But in the famous instance, the man bled at the nose till what was discharged had no redness left. By what force is the circulation of the blood performed? Can any one suppose the force of the heart is sufficient to overcome the resistance of all the arteries? Are the nerves pervious or solid? How do they act? By vibration, or transmission of the animal spirits? What are the animal spirits? If they have any being, are they of the nature of blood or ether? What is sleep? Wherein does it consist? We do not inquire what are the effects of it, (cessation of voluntary motion, and so on,) but what is the thing itself, the cause of these effects? What is dreaming? By what criterion can we distinguish dreams from waking thoughts? I mean, by what means may a dreaming person then know that he is in a dream? What is (the *consanguineus somni*\*) death? When do we die? You say, "When the soul leaves the body." This cannot be denied. But my question is, When does the soul leave the body? When we cease to breathe, according to the maxim, *Nullus spiritus, nulla vita?* † This will not hold; for many have revived after respiration was utterly ceased. When the circulation of the blood stops? Nay, neither will this hold; for many have recovered after the pulse was quite gone. When the vital warmth ceases, and the juices lose their fluidity? Even this is not a certain mark; for some have revived after the body was quite cold and stiff; a case not uncommon in Sweden. By what token then can we surely know? It seems, none such can be found. God knows when the spirit returns to him; and the spirit itself; but none that dwells in a body.

What cause have we, then, to adore the wisdom of God who has so exactly proportioned our knowledge to our state! We may know whatever is needful for life or godliness, whatever is necessary either for our present or eternal happiness. But how little beside can the most penetrating genius know

\* Next akin to sleep.—EDIT.

† No breath, no life.—EDIT.

with any certainty! Such pains, so to speak, hath God taken to hide pride from man; and to bound his thought within that channel of knowledge wherein he already finds eternal life.

---



---

## CONVERSATION

WITH

THE BISHOP OF BRISTOL.\*

---

**BISHOP.** Why, Sir, our faith itself is a good work; it is a virtuous temper of mind.

**Mr. Wesley.** My Lord, whatever faith is, our Church asserts, we are justified by faith alone. But how it can be called a good work, I see not: It is the gift of God; and a gift that presupposes nothing in us, but sin and misery.

**B.** How, Sir? Then you make God a tyrannical Being, if he justifies some without any goodness in them preceding, and does not justify all. If these are not justified on account of some moral goodness in them, why are not those justified too?

**W.** Because, my Lord, they "resist his Spirit;" because "they will not come to Him that they may have life;" because they suffer Him not to "work in them both to will and to do." They cannot be saved, because they will not believe.

**B.** Sir, what do you mean by faith?

**W.** My Lord, by justifying faith I mean, a conviction wrought in a man by the Holy Ghost, that Christ hath loved him, and given himself for him; and that, through Christ, his sins are forgiven. †

\* This conversation appears to have taken place in the year 1739. It has been preserved in the hand-writing of Mr. Wesley. See his *Life* by Mr. Moore, vol. i., p. 463.—EDIT.

† This is, substantially, the definition in the Homily, but Mr. Wesley thought more correctly afterwards. See his *Sermon on the Scripture Way of Salvation*, Vol. VI., p. 47. It would appear from the Homily, that the faith by which justification is obtained, is a belief that we already possess it.—EDIT.

B. I believe some good men have this, but not all. But how do you prove this to be the justifying faith taught by our Church?

W. My Lord, from her Homily on Salvation, where she describes it thus: "A sure trust and confidence which a man hath in God, that through the merits of Christ his sins are forgiven, and he reconciled to the favour of God."

B. Why, Sir, this is quite another thing.

W. My Lord, I conceive it to be the very same.

B. Mr. Wesley, I will deal plainly with you. I once thought you and Mr. Whitefield well-meaning men: But I cannot think so now; for I have heard more of you; matters of fact, Sir. And Mr. Whitefield says in his Journal, "There are promises still to be fulfilled in me." Sir, the pretending to extraordinary revelations and gifts of the Holy Ghost is a horrid thing, a very horrid thing!

W. My Lord, for what Mr. Whitefield says, Mr. Whitefield, and not I, is accountable. I pretend to no extraordinary revelations or gifts of the Holy Ghost; none but what every Christian may receive, and ought to expect and pray for. But I do not wonder your Lordship has heard facts asserted, which, if true, would prove the contrary; nor do I wonder, that your Lordship, believing them true, should alter the opinion you once had of me. A quarter of an hour I spent with your Lordship before, and about an hour now; and perhaps you have never conversed one other hour with any who spake in my favour. But how many with those who spake on the other side! So that your Lordship could not but think as you do.—But pray, my Lord, what are those facts you have heard?

B. I hear, you administer the sacrament in your societies.

W. My Lord, I never did yet; and I believe never shall.

B. I hear too, that many people fall into fits in your societies, and that you pray over them.

W. I do so, my Lord, when any show, by strong cries and tears, that their soul is in deep anguish. I frequently pray to God to deliver them from it; and our prayer is often heard in that hour.

B. Very extraordinary indeed! Well, Sir, since you ask my advice, I will give it you very freely. You have no business here. You are not commissioned to preach in this diocese. Therefore, I advise you to go hence.

W. My Lord, my business on earth is, to do what good I can. Wherever, therefore, I think I can do most good, there must I stay, so long as I think so. At present I think I can do most good here; therefore, here I stay. As to my preaching here, a dispensation of the Gospel is committed to me; and woe is me, if I preach not the Gospel, wherever I am in the habitable world. Your Lordship knows, being ordained a Priest, by the commission I then received, I am a Priest of the Church universal; and being ordained as Fellow of a College, I was not limited to any particular cure, but have an indeterminate commission to preach the word of God, in any part of the Church of England. I do not therefore conceive, that, in preaching here by this commission, I break any human law. When I am convinced I do, then it will be time to ask, Shall I obey God or man? But if I should be convinced in the meanwhile, that I could advance the glory of God, and the salvation of souls, in any other place, more than in Bristol; in that hour, by God's help, I will go hence; which till then I may not do.

---

## AN ACCOUNT

OF THE

## DISTURBANCES IN MY FATHER'S HOUSE.

---

WHEN I was very young, I heard several letters read, wrote to my elder brother by my father, giving an account of strange disturbances which were in his house at Epworth, in Lincolnshire.

1. When I went down thither, in the year 1720, I carefully inquired into the particulars. I spoke to each of the persons who were then in the house, and took down what each could testify of his or her own knowledge: The sum of which was this:—

2. On December 2, 1716, while Robert Brown, my father's servant, was sitting with one of the maids, a little before ten at night, in the dining-room which opened into the garden,

they both heard one knocking at the door. Robert rose and opened it, but could see nobody. Quickly it knocked again, and groaned. "It is Mr. Turpin," said Robert; "he has the stone, and uses to groan so." He opened the door again twice or thrice, the knocking being twice or thrice repeated. But still seeing nothing, and being a little startled, they rose and went up to bed.

When Robert came to the top of the garret-stairs, he saw a hand-mill, which was at a little distance, whirled about very swiftly. When he related this, he said, "Nought vexed me, but that it was empty. I thought, if it had but been full of malt, he might have ground his heart out for me."

When he was in bed, he heard as it were the gobbling of a turkey-cock close to the bed-side; and soon after, the sound of one stumbling over his shoes and boots. But there were none there: He had left them below.

3. The next day, he and the maid related these things to the other maid, who laughed heartily, and said, "What a couple of fools are you! I defy anything to fright me." After churning in the evening, she put the butter in the tray, and had no sooner carried it into the dairy, than she heard a knocking on the shelf where several pancheons of milk stood, first above the shelf, then below. She took the candle, and searched both above and below; but, being able to find nothing, threw down butter, tray, and all, and ran away for life.

4. The next evening, between five and six o'clock, my sister Molly, then about twenty years of age, sitting in the dining-room, reading, heard as if it were the door that led into the hall open, and a person walking in that seemed to have on a silk night-gown, rustling and trailing along. It seemed to walk round her, then to the door, then round again; but she could see nothing. She thought, "It signifies nothing to run away; for whatever it is, it can run faster than me." So she rose, put her book under her arm, and walked slowly away.

5. After supper, she was sitting with my sister Suky (about a year older than her) in one of the chambers, and telling her what had happened. She quite made light of it; telling her, "I wonder you are so easily frightened; I would fain see what would fright me." Presently a knocking

began under the table. She took the candle and looked, but could find nothing. Then the iron casement began to clatter, and the lid of a warming-pan. Next the latch of the door moved up and down without ceasing. She started up, leaped into the bed without undressing, pulled the bed-clothes over her head, and never ventured to look up till next morning.

6. A night or two after, my sister Hetty, a year younger than my sister Molly, was waiting as usual, between nine and ten, to take away my father's candle, when she heard one coming down the garret-stairs, walking slowly by her; then going down the best stairs, then up the back-stairs, and up the garret-stairs: And at every step it seemed the house shook from top to bottom. Just then my father knocked. She went in, took his candle, and got to bed as fast as possible.

7. In the morning, she told this to my eldest sister; who told her, "You know I believe none of these things. Pray let me take away the candle to-night, and I will find out the trick." She accordingly took my sister Hetty's place, and had no sooner taken away the candle, than she heard a noise below. She hastened down stairs to the hall, where the noise was; but it was then in the kitchen. She ran into the kitchen, where it was drumming on the inside of the screen. When she went round, it was drumming on the outside, and so always on the side opposite to her. Then she heard a knocking at the back-kitchen door. She ran to it, unlocked it softly, and, when the knocking was repeated, suddenly opened it; but nothing was to be seen. As soon as she had shut it, the knocking began again. She opened it again, but could see nothing. When she went to shut the door, it was violently thrust against her. She let it fly open, but nothing appeared. She went again to shut it, and it was again thrust against her: But she set her knee and her shoulder to the door, forced it to, and turned the key. Then the knocking began again; but she let it go on, and went up to bed. However, from that time, she was thoroughly convinced that there was no imposture in the affair.

8. The next morning, my sister telling my mother what had happened, she said, "If I hear anything myself, I shall know how to judge."



Soon after, she begged her to come into the nursery. She did; and heard, in the corner of the room, as it were the violent rocking of a cradle: But no cradle had been there for some years. She was convinced it was preternatural, and earnestly prayed it might not disturb her in her own chamber, at the hours of retirement. And it never did.

She now thought it was proper to tell my father. But he was extremely angry, and said, "Suky, I am ashamed of you. These boys and girls fright one another; but you are a woman of sense, and should know better. Let me hear of it no more."

At six in the evening, he had family-prayers, as usual. When he began the prayer for the King, a knocking began all round the room; and a thundering knock attended the Amen. The same was heard from this time every morning and evening, while the prayer for the King was repeated.

As both my father and mother are now at rest, and incapable of being pained thereby, I think it my duty to furnish the serious reader with a key to this circumstance. The year before King William died, my father observed my mother did not say Amen to the prayer for the King. She said she could not; for she did not believe the Prince of Orange was King. He vowed he would never cohabit with her till she did. He then took his horse, and rode away; nor did she hear anything of him for a twelvemonth. He then came back, and lived with her as before. But I fear his vow was not forgotten before God.

9. Being informed that Mr. Hoole, the Vicar of Haxey, (an eminently pious and sensible man,) could give me some farther information, I walked over to him. He said, "Robert Brown came over to me, and told me your father desired my company. When I came, he gave me an account of all that had happened; particularly the knocking during family-prayer. But that evening (to my great satisfaction) we had no knocking at all: But between nine and ten, a servant came in, and said, 'Old Jeffries is coming;' (that was the name of one that died in the house;) 'for I hear the signal.' This, they informed me, was heard every night, about a quarter before ten. It was toward the top of the house, on the outside, at the north-east corner, resembling the loud creaking of a saw; or rather, that of a

windmill, when the body of it is turned about, in order to shift the sails to the wind. We then heard a knocking over our heads; and Mr. Wesley, catching up a caudle, said, 'Come, Sir; now you shall hear for yourself.' We went up stairs; he with much hope, and I (to say the truth) with much fear. When we came into the nursery, it was knocking in the next room; when we were there, it was knocking in the nursery. And there it continued to knock, though we came in; particularly at the head of the bed, (which was of wood,) in which Miss Hetty and two of her younger sisters lay. Mr. Wesley, observing that they were much affected, though asleep, sweating and trembling exceedingly, was very angry; and, pulling out a pistol, was going to fire at the place from whence the sound came. But I caught him by the arm, and said, 'Sir, you are convinced this is something preternatural. If so, you cannot hurt it; but you give it power to hurt you.' He then went close to the place, and said sternly, 'Thou deaf and dumb devil, why dost thou fright these children that cannot answer for themselves? Come to me in my study, that am a man.' Instantly it knocked his knock, (the particular knock which he always used at the gate,) as if it would shiver the board in pieces; and we heard nothing more that night."

10. Till this time my father had never heard the least disturbance in his study. But the next evening, as he attempted to go into his study, (of which none had any key but himself,) when he opened the door, it was thrust back with such violence as had like to have thrown him down. However, he thrust the door open, and went in. Presently there was knocking, first on one side, then on the other; and, after a time, in the next room, wherein my sister Nancy was. He went into that room, and (the noise continuing) adjured it to speak; but in vain. He then said, "These spirits love darkness: Put out the candle, and perhaps it will speak." She did so: And he repeated his adjuration: But still there was only knocking, and no articulate sound. Upon this he said, "Nancy, two Christians are an overmatch for the devil. Go all of you down stairs: It may be, when I am alone, he will have courage to speak." When she was gone, a thought came in, and he said, "If thou art the spirit of my son Samuel, I pray, knock three

knocks, and no more." Immediately all was silence; and there was no more knocking at all that night.

11. I asked my sister Nancy, (then about fifteen years old,) whether she was not afraid, when my father used that adjuration. She answered, she was sadly afraid it would speak, when she put out the candle; but she was not at all afraid in the day-time, when it walked after her, as she swept the chambers, as it constantly did, and seemed to sweep after her: Only, she thought he might have done it for her, and saved her the trouble.

12. By this time, all my sisters were so accustomed to these noises, that they gave them little disturbance. A gentle tapping at their bed-head usually began between nine and ten at night. They then commonly said to each other, "Jeffrey is coming: It is time to go to sleep." And if they heard a noise in the day, and said to my youngest sister, "Hark, Kezzy, Jeffrey is knocking above," she would run up stairs, and pursue it from room to room, saying she desired no better diversion.

13. A few nights after, my father and mother were just gone to bed, and the candle was not taken away, when they heard three blows, and a second and a third three, as it were with a large oaken staff, struck upon a chest which stood by the bedside. My father immediately arose, put on his night-gown, and, hearing great noises below, took the candle, and went down. My mother walked by his side. As they went down the broad stairs, they heard as if a vessel full of silver was poured upon my mother's breast, and ran jingling down to her feet. Quickly after, there was a sound, as if a large iron ball was thrown among many bottles under the stairs: But nothing was hurt. Soon after, our large mastiff dog came and ran to shelter himself between them. While the disturbances continued, he used to bark and leap, and snap on one side and the other; and that frequently before any person in the room heard any noise at all. But, after two or three days, he used to tremble and creep away before the noise began; and by this the family knew it was at hand: Nor did the observation ever fail.

A little before my father and mother came into the hall, it seemed as if a very large coal was violently thrown upon the floor, and dashed all in pieces: But nothing was seen.

My father then cried out, "Suky, do you not hear? All the pewter is thrown about the kitchen:" But when they looked, all the pewter stood in its place. There then was a loud knocking at the back-door. My father opened it, but saw nothing. It was then at the fore-door. He opened that; but it was still lost labour. After opening first the one, then the other, several times, he turned, and went up to bed. But the noises were so violent all over the house, that he could not sleep till four in the morning.

14. Several gentlemen and Clergymen now earnestly advised my father to quit the house; but he constantly answered, "No; let the devil flee from me: I will never flee from the devil." But he wrote to my eldest brother at London to come down. He was preparing so to do, when another letter came, informing him the disturbances were over; after they had continued (the latter part of the time, day and night) from the second of December to the end of January.

HILTON-PARK,  
March 26, 1784.

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## CALVINISTIC CONTROVERSY.

---

HAVING found for some time a strong desire to unite with Mr. Whitefield, as far as possible, to cut off needless dispute, I wrote down my sentiments, as plain as I could, in the following terms:—

There are three points in debate: 1. Unconditional election. 2. Irresistible grace. 3. Final perseverance.

With regard to the first, unconditional election, I believe,

That God, before the foundation of the world, did unconditionally elect certain persons to do certain works; as Paul to preach the Gospel.

That he has unconditionally elected some nations to receive peculiar privileges, the Jewish nation in particular.

That he has unconditionally elected some nations to hear

the Gospel ; as England and Scotland now, and many others in past ages.

That he has unconditionally elected some persons to many peculiar advantages, both with regard to temporal and spiritual things.

And I do not deny, (though I cannot prove it is so,)

That he has unconditionally elected some persons, thence eminently styled "the elect," to eternal glory.

But I cannot believe,

That all those who are not thus elected to glory, must perish everlastingly ; or

That there is one soul on earth who has not, nor ever had, a possibility of escaping eternal damnation.

With regard to the second, irresistible grace, I believe,

That the grace which brings faith, and thereby salvation, into the soul, is irresistible at that moment.

That most believers may remember some time when God did irresistibly convince them of sin.

That most believers do, at some other times, find God irresistibly acting upon their souls.

Yet I believe, that the grace of God, both before and after those moments, may be, and hath been, resisted ; and

That, in general, it does not act irresistibly, but we may comply therewith, or may not.

And I do not deny,

That in those eminently styled "the elect," (if such there be,) the grace of God is so far irresistible, that they cannot but believe, and be finally saved.

But I cannot believe,

That all those must be damned, in whom it does not thus irresistibly work ; or

That there is one soul on earth who has not, and never had, any other grace, than such as does, in fact, increase his damnation, and was designed of God so to do.

With regard to the third, final perseverance, I believe,

That there is a state attainable in this life, from which a man cannot finally fall.

That he has attained this who is, according to St. Paul's account, "a new creature;" that is, who can say, "Old things are passed away ; all things" in me "are become new."

And I do not deny,

That all those eminently styled "the elect" will infallibly persevere to the end.\*

---

QUERIES RESPECTING THE METHODISTS.†

---

**QUESTION 1.** Whether the number of the Methodists is considerable among the students and learned men.

**ANSWER.** The number of the Methodists is not considerable among the students and learned men.

**Q. 2.** Whether at Oxford, where the Methodists first sprung up, there be still many of them among the scholars.

**A.** There are very few of them now left among the scholars at Oxford.

**Q. 3.** Whether they are all of one mind, and whether they have the same principles. Especially,

**Q. 4.** Whether those Methodists that are still at Oxford approve of the sentiments and actions of Mr. Whitefield and Messrs. Wesley.

**A.** They are all of the same principles with the Church of England, as laid down in her Articles and Homilies; and, (4.) do accordingly approve of the sentiments of Mr. Whitefield and Mr. Wesley, and of their publishing them elsewhere, since they have been shut out of the churches.

**Q. 5.** How they came to revive those doctrines, hitherto neglected by the Clergy of the Church of England, of predestination, the new birth, and justification by faith alone. And,

\* Mr. Moore says, "Mr. Wesley told me, that, at the time he wrote this, he believed, with Macarius, that all who are perfected in love, 1 John iv., were thus elect. But he afterwards doubted of this."—*Life of Mr. Wesley*, vol. I., p. 503.

The entire document, which appears to have been written at an early period of Mr. Wesley's public life, shows, to great advantage, his logical acumen and love of peace; but "evidently leans too much towards Calvinism," as will appear on comparing it with his later writings, and especially with his "Predestination calmly considered."—**EDIT.**

† These Queries seem to have been addressed to Mr. Wesley by some person in Holland or Germany. The document bears the date of 1741; and appears to have been written before Mr. Whitefield's separation from him. See Mr. Moore's *Life of Mr. Wesley*, vol. I., p. 543.—**EDIT.**

**Q. 6.** Whether they have had the same from the Moravian Brethren.

**A.** Predestination is not a doctrine taught by the Methodists. But they do teach, that men must be born again, and that we are saved through faith: And, (6.) the latter of these they learned from some of the Moravian Brethren; the former, by reading the New Testament.

**Q. 7.** Whether they be orthodox in other doctrinal points, and whether they lead an unblamable Christian life.

**A.** They openly challenge all that hear them to answer those questions, "Which of you convinceth me of sin?" or of teaching any doctrine contrary to the Scripture? And the general accusation against them is, that they are "righteous overmuch."

**Q. 8.** Whether they strictly regulate themselves according to the rule and discipline of the Moravian Brethren; except that they still keep and observe the outward worship according to the Church of England.

**A.** They do not regulate themselves according to the discipline of the Moravians, but of the English Church.

**Q. 9.** Whether they do any real good among the common people.

**A.** Very many of the common people among whom they preach were profane swearers, and now fear an oath; were gluttons or drunkards, and are now temperate; were whoremongers, and are now chaste; were servants of the devil, and are now servants of God.

**Q. 10.** Why the Bishops do not effectually inhibit them, and hinder their field and street preaching.

**A.** The Bishops do not inhibit their field and street preaching, (1.) Because there is no law in England against it: (2.) Because God does not yet suffer them to do it without law.

**Q. 11.** Whether the Archbishop of Canterbury is satisfied with them, as we are told.

**A.** The Archbishop of Canterbury is not satisfied with them; especially since Mr. Molther, in the name of the Moravian Church, told his Grace their disapprobation of them, and, in particular, of their field-preaching.

**Q. 12.** Whether their private assemblies or societies are orderly and edifying.

A. Their private assemblies and societies are orderly, and many say they find them edifying.

Q. 13. What opinion the Presbyterians, and particularly Dr. Watts, has of them.

A. Most of the Presbyterians, and most of all other denominations, are of opinion, much religion hath made them mad.

Q. 14. Whether there are any Methodists among the Episcopal Clergy of the Church of England.

A. Mr. Whitefield, Hutchins, Robson, and the two Messrs. Wesley, and several others, are Priests of the Episcopal Church of England.

---

## NOTICES

CONCERNING

### DECEASED PREACHERS.\*

---

1778—QUESTION. What Preachers have died this year?

ANSWER. Thomas Hosking, a young man, just entering on the work; zealous, active, and of an unblamable behaviour. And Richard Burke, a man of faith and patience, made perfect through sufferings; one who joined the wisdom and calmness of age with the simplicity of childhood.

1779—Q. What Preachers have died this year?

A. George Shorter, an Israelite indeed; a lively, zealous, active man; a witness of full salvation, and an earnest exhorter of all believers to aspire after it. And James Gaffney, a young man of considerable abilities, wise above his years. He was snatched away by a galloping consumption; but was fully delivered from the fear of death, and was unspeakably happy, though in violent pain, till his spirit returned to God.

1780—Q. What Preachers have died this year?

A. Samuel Wells, a sensible, honest, upright man, who put forth all his strength in every part of his work. He

\* Extracted from the Minutes of the Annual Conferences.—EDIT.



was particularly zealous in observing discipline, and in exhorting believers to go on to perfection. And William Brammah, who, having had much weakness and pain, finished his course with joy.

1781—Q. What Preachers have died this year?

A. George Wawne, a young man zealous for God, and of an unblamable behaviour. And Robert Wilkinson, an Israelite indeed; a man of faith and prayer, who, having been a pattern of all good works, died in the full triumph of faith.

1782—Q. What Preachers have died this year?

A. John Norris, a lover and a witness of Christian perfection; who died, as he lived, full of faith and of the Holy Ghost. And John Morgan, a plain, rough man, who, after various trials, and a long painful illness, joyfully committed his soul, his wife, and his eight little children, to his merciful and faithful Creator.

1783—Q. What Preachers have died this year?

A. Richard Boardman, a pious, good-natured, sensible man, greatly beloved of all that knew him. He was one of the two first that freely offered themselves to the service of our brethren in America. He died of an apoplectic fit, and preached the night before his death. It seems he might have been eminently useful; but good is the will of the Lord.

Robert Swindells had been with us above forty years. He was an Israelite indeed. In all those years I never knew him to speak a word which he did not mean; and he always spoke the truth in love. I believe no one ever heard him speak an unkind word. He went through exquisite pain (by the stone) for many years; but he was not weary. He was still

Patient in bearing ill, and doing well.

One thing he had almost peculiar to himself: He had no enemy! So remarkably was that word fulfilled, "Blessed are the merciful; for they shall obtain mercy."

James Barry was for many years a faithful labourer in our Lord's vineyard. And as he laboured much, so he suffered much; but with unwearied patience. In his death he suffered nothing, stealing quietly away in a kind of lethargy.

Thomas Payne was a bold soldier of Jesus Christ. His temper was uncommonly vehement; but, before he went hence, all that vehemence was gone, and the lion was become a lamb. He went away in the full triumph of faith, praising God with his latest breath.

Robert Naylor, a zealous, active young man, was caught away by a fever in the strength of his years. But it was in a good hour; for he returned to Him whom his soul loved, in the full assurance of faith.

A fall from his horse, which was at first thought of little consequence, occasioned the death of John Livermore, a plain, honest man, much devoted to God, and determined to live and die in the best of services.

1784—Q. Who have died this year?

A. John Prickard, a man thoroughly devoted to God, and an eminent pattern of holiness. And Jacob Rowell, a faithful old soldier, fairly worn out in his Master's service.

1785—Q. Who have died this year?

A. Thomas Mitchell, an old soldier of Jesus Christ.

1786—Q. Who have died this year?

A. John Fletcher, a pattern of all holiness, scarce to be paralleled in a century. And C. Peacock, young in years, but old in grace; a pattern of all holiness, full of faith, and love, and zeal for God.

1787—Q. What Preachers have died this year?

A. Thomas Lee, a faithful brother, and a good old soldier of Jesus Christ. Henry Foster, an excellent young man, wholly devoted to God. John Cowmeadow, a pious young man, unblamable in spirit and conversation. John Fenwick, who died, I believe, in peace. Thomas Seaward, a pious, zealous, blameless, useful young man.

1788—Q. Who have died this year?

A. Jeremiah Robertshaw, who was a good soldier of Jesus Christ, fairly worn out in his Master's service. He was a pattern of patience for many years, labouring under sharp and almost continual pain, of meekness and gentleness to all men, and of simplicity and godly sincerity.

Joshua Keighley, who was a young man deeply devoted to God, and greatly beloved by all that knew him. He

was

About the marriage state to prove;  
But death had swifter wings than love.

Edward Burbeck, who from a child was eminent for uprightness, industry, and the fear of God. He was qualified for eminent service in his Lord's vineyard, but was taken just in the dawn of his usefulness.

John Roberts, who for many years was clearly convinced that God had called him to preach the Gospel. But he delayed from time to time, till at length conscience prevailed over all other considerations. It was almost too late; for, after labouring a few months, he fell into a lingering illness. For some weeks he was in utter darkness; then God scattered the clouds, and gave him to die in peace.

Mr. Charles Wesley, who, after spending fourscore years with much sorrow and pain, quietly retired into Abraham's bosom. He had no disease; but after a gradual decay of some months,

The weary wheels of life stood still at last.

His least praise was, his talent for poetry; although Dr. Watts did not scruple to say, that "that single poem, Wrestling Jacob, is worth all the verses which I have ever written."\*

John Mealy, worn out in the service of his Master. He suffered much in his last illness, and died triumphant in the Lord.

John Burnet, a very pious, devoted, useful young man. He continued through a long illness in a very triumphant state of mind, and departed this life in extraordinary triumph.

1789—Q. Who have died this year?

A. In Great Britain, Thomas Corbett, a plain, honest, pious, useful man. He endured much in his last illness, manifested great fortitude, and died in the full triumph of faith.

\* The late Mr. Robert Hopkins used to say, that in the early part of his life, he was once in company with Mr. Wesley and several other friends, when Mr. Wesley referred to the opinion which Dr. Watts had expressed concerning "Wrestling Jacob;" and added, apparently with great emotion, "O what would Dr. Watts have said, if he had lived to see my brother's two exquisite funeral hymns, beginning,

'How happy every child of grace,  
That knows his sins forgiven;

and,

'Come let us join our friends above,  
That have obtain'd the prize!'—EDIT.

In Ireland, Hugh Pugh, a zealous, pious young man, who suffered much in his illness, but died happy in God. Francis Frazier, a good young man, and a good preacher. And John Stephens, who, being little more than a child in years, was a man both in knowledge and piety, and went hence in the full triumph of faith.

1790—Q. Who have died this year?

A. James Gore. He was a young man of good understanding, great sweetness of temper, and eminent piety; and his end was glorious. He poured out his blood and his soul together.\* Jonathan Thomson, who died in Scotland, in the course of the last year; a young man full of faith and the Holy Ghost, an ornament and honour to our society in Scotland. His great zeal for God and the salvation of souls, united with the fervour and imprudence of youth, led him to excessive labour in the work of his great Master, which proved the cause of his death.

---

## DIRECTIONS

TO THE

### STEWARDS OF THE METHODIST SOCIETY IN LONDON.

[DRAWN UP IN THE YEAR 1747.]

---

1. You are to be men full of the Holy Ghost and of wisdom; that you may do all things in a manner acceptable to God. 2. You are to be present every Tuesday and Thursday morning in order to transact the temporal affairs of the society. 3. You are to begin and end every meeting with earnest prayer to God, for a blessing on all your undertakings. 4. You are to produce your accounts the first Tuesday in every month; that they may be transcribed into the ledger. 5. You are to take it in turn, month by month, to be Chairman. The Chairman is to see that all the rules be punctually observed, and immediately to check

\* He died vomiting blood. Digitized by Google

him who breaks any of them. 6. You are to do nothing without the consent of the Minister, either actually had, or reasonably presumed. 7. You are to consider, whenever you meet, "God is here." Therefore, be serious; utter no trifling word; speak as in His presence, and to the glory of His great name. 8. When anything is debated, let one at once stand up and speak, the rest giving attention; and let him speak just loud enough to be heard, in love and in the spirit of meekness. 9. You are continually to pray and endeavour that a holy harmony of soul may in all things subsist among you; that in every step you may keep the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace. 10. In all debates, you are to watch over your spirits; avoiding, as fire, all clamour and contention; being "swift to hear, slow to speak;" in honour every man preferring another before himself. 11. If you cannot relieve, do not grieve, the poor. Give them soft words, if nothing else. Abstain from either sour looks or harsh words. Let them be glad to come, even though they should go empty away. Put yourselves in the place of every poor man; and deal with him as you would God should deal with you.

These instructions, we whose names are underwritten, (being the present Stewards of the society in London,) do heartily receive, and earnestly desire to conform to. In witness whereof we have set our hands.

N.B. If any Steward shall break any of the preceding rules, after having been thrice admonished by the Chairman, (whereof notice is to be immediately given to the Minister,) he is no longer Steward.

---

## REMARKABLE PROVIDENCE.

[PRINTED IN THE YEAR 1778.]

---

THE following letter, written by my mother, gives an account of a very remarkable providence: But it is imperfect with regard to me. That part none but I myself can supply. Her account, wrote to a neighbouring Clergyman, begins:—

“EPWORTH, *August 24, 1709.*

“ON Wednesday night, February 9, between the hours of eleven and twelve, some sparks fell from the roof of our house, upon one of the children’s (Hetty’s) feet. She immediately ran to our chamber, and called us. Mr. Wesley, hearing a cry of fire in the street, started up, (as I was very ill, he lay in a separate room from me,) and, opening his door, found the fire was in his own house. He immediately came to my room, and bid me and my two eldest daughters rise quickly and shift for ourselves. Then he ran and burst open the nursery-door, and called to the maid to bring out the children. The two little ones lay in the bed with her; the three others in another bed. She snatched up the youngest, and bid the rest follow; which the three elder did. When we were got into the hall, and were surrounded with flames, Mr. Wesley found he had left the keys of the doors above stairs. He ran up, and recovered them, a minute before the staircase took fire. When we opened the street-door, the strong north-east wind drove the flames in with such violence, that none could stand against them. But some of our children got out through the windows, the rest through a little door into the garden. I was not in a condition to climb up to the windows; neither could I get to the garden-door. I endeavoured three times to force my passage through the street-door, but was as often beat back by the fury of the flames. In this distress, I besought our blessed Saviour for help, and then waded through the fire, naked as I was, which did me no farther harm than a little scorching my hands and my face.

“When Mr. Wesley had seen the other children safe, he heard the child in the nursery cry. He attempted to go up the stairs, but they were all on fire, and would not bear his weight. Finding it impossible to give any help, he kneeled down in the hall, and recommended the soul of the child to God.”

I believe, it was just at that time I waked; for I did not cry, as they imagined, unless it was afterwards. I remember all the circumstances as distinctly as though it were but yesterday. Seeing the room was very light, I called to the maid to take me up. But none answering, I put my head out of the curtains, and saw streaks of fire on the top

of the room. I got up and ran to the door, but could get no farther, all the floor beyond it being in a blaze. I then climbed up on a chest which stood near the window: One in the yard saw me, and proposed running to fetch a ladder. Another answered, "There will not be time; but I have thought of another expedient: Here, I will fix myself against the wall; lift a light man, and set him on my shoulders." They did so, and he took me out of the window. Just then the whole roof fell in; but it fell inward, or we had been all crushed at once. When they brought me into the house where my father was, he cried out, "Come, neighbours, let us kneel down! Let us give thanks to God! He has given me all my eight children: Let the house go; I am rich enough."

The next day, as he was walking in the garden, and surveying the ruins of the house, he picked up part of a leaf of his polyglott Bible, on which just those words were legible: *Vade; vende omnia quæ habes, et attollo crucem, et sequere me.* "Go, sell all that thou hast; and take up thy cross, and follow me."

---

## DIRECTIONS

CONCERNING

### PRONUNCIATION AND GESTURE.

---

#### SECTION I.

*How we may speak so as to be heard without Difficulty, and with Pleasure.*

1. BEFORE we enter upon particular rules, I would advise all who can, (1.) To study the art of speaking betimes, and to practise it as often as possible, before they have contracted any of the common imperfections or vices of speaking: For these may easily be avoided at first; but when they are once learned, it is extremely difficult to unlearn them. I advise all young persons, (2.) To be governed in speaking, as in all other things, by reason rather than example, and,

therefore, to have an especial care whom they imitate therein ; and to imitate only what is right in their manner of speaking, not their blemishes and imperfections.

2. The first business of a speaker is, so to speak, that he may be heard and understood with ease. In order to this, it is a great advantage to have a clear, strong voice ; such, at least, as will fill the place where you speak, so as to be heard by every person in it. To strengthen a weak voice, read or speak something aloud, for at least half an hour every morning ; but take care not to strain your voice at first : Begin low, and raise it by degrees to the height.

3. If you are apt to falter in your speech, read something in private daily, and pronounce every word and syllable so distinctly, that they may all have their full sound and proportion. If you are apt to stammer at such and such particular expressions, take particular care, first to pronounce them plainly. When you are once able to do this, you may learn to pronounce them more fluently at your leisure.

The chief faults of speaking are :—

(1.) The speaking too loud. This is disagreeable to the hearers, as well as inconvenient for the speaker. For they must impute it either to ignorance or affectation, which is never so inexcusable as in preaching.

Every man's voice should indeed fill the place where he speaks ; but if it exceeds its natural key, it will be neither sweet, nor soft, nor agreeable, were it only on this account, that he cannot then give every word its proper and distinguishing sound.

(2.) The speaking too low. This is, of the two, more disagreeable than the former. Take care, therefore, to keep between the extremes ; to preserve the key, the command of your voice ; and to adapt the loudness of it to the place where you are, or the number of persons to whom you speak.

In order to this, consider whether your voice be naturally loud or low : And if it incline to either extreme, correct this first in your ordinary conversation. If it be too low, converse with those that are deaf ; if too loud, with those who speak softly.

(3.) The speaking in a thick, cluttering manner. Some persons mumble, or swallow some words or syllables, and do not utter the rest articulately or distinctly. This is



sometimes owing to a natural defect; sometimes to a sudden flutter of spirits; but oftener to a bad habit.

To cure this, accustom yourself, both in conversation and reading, to pronounce every word distinctly. Observe how full a sound some give to every word, and labour to imitate them. If no other way avail, do as Demosthenes did; who cured himself of this natural defect, by repeating orations every day with pebbles in his mouth.

(4.) The speaking too fast. This is a common fault; but not a little one; particularly when we speak of the things of God. It may be cured by habituating yourself to attend to the weight, sense, and propriety of every word you speak.

(5.) The speaking too slow is not a common fault; and when we are once warned of it, it may be easily avoided.

(6.) The speaking with an irregular, desultory, and uneven voice, raised or depressed unnaturally or unseasonably. To cure this, you should take care not to begin your periods either too high or too low; for that would necessarily lead you to an unnatural and improper variation of the voice. And remember, never either to raise or sink your voice, without a particular reason, arising either from the length of the period, or the sense or spirit of what you speak.

(7.) But the greatest and most common fault of all is, the speaking with a tone: Some have a womanish, squeaking tone; some a singing or canting one; some an high, swelling, theatrical tone, laying too much emphasis on every sentence; some have an awful, solemn tone; others an odd, whimsical, whining one, not to be expressed in words.

To avoid all kinds of unnatural tones, the only rule is this,—Endeavour to speak in public just as you do in common conversation. Attend to your subject, and deliver it in the same manner as if you were talking of it to a friend. This, if carefully observed, will correct both this and almost all the other faults of a bad pronunciation.

For a good pronunciation is nothing but a natural, easy, and graceful variation of the voice, suitable to the nature and importance of the sentiments we deliver.

4. If you would be heard with pleasure, in order to make the deeper impression on your hearers, first study to render your voice as soft and sweet as possible; and the more, if

it be naturally harsh, hoarse, or obstreperous ; which may be cured by constant exercise. By carefully using this every morning, you may in a short time wear off these defects, and contract such a smooth and tuneful delivery, as will recommend whatever you speak.

5. Secondly, labour to avoid the odious custom of coughing and spitting while you are speaking. And if at some times you cannot wholly avoid it, yet take care you do not stop in the middle of a sentence, but only at such times as will least interrupt the sense of what you are delivering.

6. Above all, take care, thirdly, to vary your voice, according to the matter on which you speak. Nothing more grates the ear, than a voice still in the same key. And yet nothing is more common ; although this monotony is not only unpleasant to the ear, but destroys the effect of what is spoken.

7. The best way to learn how to vary the voice, is, to observe common discourse. Take notice how you speak yourself in ordinary conversation, and how others speak on various occasions. After the very same manner you are to vary your voice in public, allowing for the largeness of the place, and the distance of the hearers.

---

## SECTION II.

### *General Rules for the Variation of the Voice.*

1. THE voice may be varied three ways: First, as to height or lowness ; secondly, as to vehemence or softness ; thirdly, as to swiftness or slowness.

And, (1.) As to height, a medium between the extremes is carefully to be observed. You must neither strain your voice, by raising it always to the highest note it can reach ; nor sink it always to the lowest note, which would be to murmur rather than to speak.

(2.) As to vehemence, have a care how you force your voice to the last extremity. You cannot hold this long, without danger of its cracking, and failing you on a sudden. Nor yet ought you to speak in too faint and remiss a manner, which destroys all the force and energy of what is spoken.

(3.) As to swiftness, you ought to moderate the voice so as to avoid all precipitation ; otherwise you give the hearers no time to think, and so are not likely either to convince or to persuade them. Yet neither should you speak slower than men generally do in common conversation. It is a fault to draw out your words too slow, or to make needless breaks or pauses. Nay, to drawl is (of the two) worse than to hurry. The speech ought not to drop, but to flow along. But then it ought to flow like a gliding stream, not as a rapid torrent.

2. Yet let it be observed, that the medium I recommend does not consist in an indivisible point. It admits of a considerable latitude. As to the height or lowness of the voice, there are five or six notes whereby it may be varied, between the highest and the lowest ; so here is abundant room for variation, without falling into either extreme. There is also sufficient room between the extremes of violence and of softness, to pronounce either more vehemently or more mildly, as different subjects may require. And as to swiftness or slowness, though you avoid both extremes, you may nevertheless speak faster or slower, and that in several degrees, as best answers the subject and passions of your discourse.

3. But it should likewise be observed, that the voice ought not to be varied too hastily in any of these respects ; but the difference is to be made by degrees, and almost insensibly ; too sudden a change being unnatural and affected, and consequently disagreeable to the hearers.

---

### SECTION III.

#### *Particular Rules for varying the Voice.*

1. If you speak of natural things, merely to make the hearers understand them, there needs only a clear and distinct voice. But if you would display the wisdom and power of God therein, do it with a stronger and more solemn accent.

2. The good and honourable actions of men should be described with a full and lofty accent ; wicked and infamous

actions, with a strong and earnest voice, and such a tone as expresses horror and detestation.

3. In congratulating the happy events of life, we speak with a lively and cheerful accent; in relating misfortunes, (as in funeral orations,) with a slow and mournful one.

4. The voice should also be varied according to the greatness or importance of the subject; it being absurd, either to speak in a lofty manner, where the subject is of little concern, or to speak of great and important affairs with a low, unconcerned, and familiar voice.

5. On all occasions let the thing you are to speak be deeply imprinted on your own heart; and when you are sensibly touched yourself, you will easily touch others, by adjusting your voice to every passion which you feel.

6. Love is shown by a soft, smooth, and melting voice; hate, by a sharp and sullen one; joy, by a full and flowing one; grief, by a dull, languishing tone, sometimes interrupted by a sigh or groan; fear is expressed by a trembling and hesitating voice; boldness, by speaking loud and strong; anger is shown by a sharp and impetuous tone, taking the breath often, and speaking short; compassion requires a soft and submissive voice.

7. After the expression of any violent passion, you should gradually lower your voice again. Readiness in varying it on all kinds of subjects, as well as passions, is best acquired by frequently reading or repeating aloud either dialogues, select plays, or such discourses as come nearest to the dramatic style.

8. You should begin a discourse low, both as it expresses modesty, and as it is best for your voice and strength; and yet so as to be heard by all that are present. You may afterwards rise as the matter shall require. The audience likewise, being calm and unmoved at first, are best suited by a cool and dispassionate address.

9. Yet this rule admits of some exceptions; for on some extraordinary occasions you may begin a discourse abruptly and passionately, and consequently with a warm and passionate accent.

10. You may speak a little louder in laying down what you design to prove, and explaining it to your hearers. But you need not speak with any warmth or emotion yet; it is enough if you speak articulately and distinctly.

11. When you prove your point, and refute your adversary's objections, there is need of more earnestness and exertion of voice. And here chiefly it is that you are to vary your voice, according to the rules above recited.

12. A little pause may then precede the conclusion, in which you may gradually rise to the utmost strength of pronunciation; and finish all with a lively, cheerful voice, expressing joy and satisfaction.

13. An exclamation requires a loud and strong voice; and so does an oath or strong asseveration; as, "O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!" "I call God to record upon my soul."

14. In a prosopopœia, the voice should be varied according to the character of the persons introduced; in an apostrophe, according to the circumstances of the person or thing to which you address your speech; which, if directed either to God, or to inanimate things, ought to be louder than usual.

15. In reciting and answering objections, the voice should be varied as if two persons were speaking. And so in dialogues, or whenever several persons are introduced as disputing or talking together.

16. In a climax, the voice must be gradually raised to answer every step of the figure. In an aposiopesis, the voice, which was raised to introduce it, must be lowered considerably. In an antithesis, the points are to be distinguished, and the former to be pronounced with a stronger tone than the latter; but in an anadiplosis the word repeated is pronounced the second time louder and stronger than the first.

17. Take care never to make a pause in the middle of a word or sentence; but only where there is such a pause in the sense as requires, or, at least, allows of it. You may make a short pause after every period; and begin the next generally a little lower than you concluded the last; but on some occasions a little higher; which the nature of the subject will easily determine.

18. I would likewise advise every speaker to observe those who speak well, that he may not pronounce any word in an improper manner: And, in case of doubt, let him not be ashamed to ask how such a word is to be pronounced; as neither to desire others, that they would

inform him whenever they hear him pronounce any word improperly.

19. Lastly, take care not to sink your voice too much, at the conclusion of a period; but pronounce the very last words loud and distinct, especially if they have but a weak and dull sound of themselves.

---

## SECTION IV.

### *Of Gesture.*

1. THAT this silent language of your face and hands may move the affections of those that see and hear you, it must be well adjusted to the subject, as well as to the passion which you desire either to express or excite. It must likewise be free from all affectation, and such as appears to be the mere, natural result, both of the things you speak, and of the affection that moves you to speak them. And the whole is so to be managed, that there may be nothing in all the dispositions and motions of your body to offend the eyes of the spectators.

2. But it is more difficult to find out the faults of your own gesture, than those of your pronunciation. For a man may hear his own voice, but he cannot see his own face: Neither can he observe the several motions of his own body; at least, but imperfectly. To remedy this, you may use a large looking-glass, as Demosthenes did, and thereby observe and learn to avoid every disagreeable or unhand-some gesture.

3. There is but one way better than this; which is, to have some excellent pattern as often as may be before your eyes; and to desire some skilful and faithful friend to observe all your motions, and inform you which are proper, and which are not.

4. As to the motion of the body, it ought not to change its place or posture every moment; neither, on the other hand, to stand like a stock, in one fixed and immovable posture; but to move in a natural and graceful manner, as various circumstances may require.

5. The head ought not to be held up too high, nor clownishly thrust forward; neither to be cast down, and

hang, as it were, on the breast; nor to lean always on one or the other side; but to be kept modestly and decently upright, in its natural state and position. Farther, it ought neither to be kept immovable, as a statue; nor to be continually moving and throwing itself about. To avoid both extremes, it should be turned gently, as occasion is, sometimes one way, sometimes the other; and at other times remain, looking straight forward, to the middle of the auditory. Add to this, that it ought always to be turned on the same side with the hands and body: Only in refusing a thing; for this we do with the right hand, turning the head at the same time to the left.

6. But it is the face which gives the greatest life to action: Of this, therefore, you must take the greatest care, that nothing may appear disagreeable in it; since it is continually in the view of all but yourself. And there is nothing can prevent this, but the looking-glass, or a friend who will deal faithfully with you. You should adapt all its movements to the subject you treat of, the passions you would raise, and the persons to whom you speak. Let love or joy spread a cheerfulness over your face; hatred, sorrow, or fear, a gloominess. Look with gravity and authority on your inferiors; on your superiors, with boldness mixed with respect.

7. You should always be casting your eyes upon some or other of your auditors, and moving them from one side to the other, with an air of affection and regard; looking them decently in the face, one after another, as we do in familiar conversation. Your aspect should always be pleasant, and your looks direct, neither severe nor askew; unless you design to express contempt or scorn, which may require that particular aspect.

8. If you speak of heaven or things above, lift up your eyes; if of things beneath, cast them down; and so if you speak of things of disgrace; but raise them in calling God to witness, or speaking of things wherein you glory.

9. The mouth must never be turned awry; neither must you bite or lick your lips, or shrug up your shoulders, or lean upon your elbow; all which give just offence to the spectators.

10. We make use of the hand a thousand different ways; only very little at the beginning of a discourse. Concern-

ing this, you may observe the rules following: (1.) Never clap your hands, nor thump the pulpit. (2.) Use the right hand most; and when you use the left, let it be only to accompany the other. (3.) The right hand may be gently applied to the breast, when you speak of your own faculties, heart, or conscience. (4.) You must begin your action with your speech, and end it when you make an end of speaking. (5.) The hands should seldom be lifted higher than the eyes, nor let down lower than the breast. (6.) Your eyes should always have your hands in view, so that they you speak to may see your eyes, your mouth, and your hands, all moving in concert with each other, and expressing the same thing. (7.) Seldom stretch out your arms side-ways more than half a foot from the trunk of your body. (8.) Your hands are not to be in perpetual motion: This the ancients called the babbling of the hands.

11. There are many other things relating to action, as well as utterance, which cannot easily be expressed in writing. These you must learn by practice; by hearing a good speaker, and speaking often before him.

12. But remember, while you are actually speaking, you must not be studying any other motions, but use those that naturally arise from the subject of your discourse, from the place where you speak, and the characters of the persons whom you address.

13. I would advise you, lastly, to observe these rules, as far as things permit, even in your common conversation, till you have got a perfect habit of observing them, so that they are, as it were, natural to you. And whenever you hear an eminent speaker, observe with the utmost attention what conformity there is between his action and utterance, and these rules. You may afterwards imitate him at home, till you have made his graces your own. And when once, by such assistances as these, you have acquired a good habit of speaking, you will no more need any tedious reflections upon this art, but will speak as easily as gracefully.







